The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series
reveals the journey of the soul from the beginning of creation to its return to God

Volume 1 of 7: The Alpha and Omega of Creation
Chapter 1: In the Beginning
Chapter 2: Beings of Light
Chapter 3: Creation
Chapter 4: The Soul and Life of Adam
Chapter 5: Death Enters the World

Presented by
Samuel
The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series

The Alpha and Omega of Creation (Vol.1, 2 & 3)
The Alpha and Omega of Creation is the journey of the soul from the beginning of creation to its end where God the Father reveals, in great detail, His Divine plan of salvation that leads the soul back to God.

Pathway to the Holy Spirit – (Vol.4)
Jesus is speaking: “I will pour out on you all the gifts of My Spirit. I will prepare you for spiritual combat; I will prepare you for a time of evangelism that the world has never seen.” Ref: Divine Will to Luisa Piccarreta

The Spiritual Journey of the Soul – (Vol. 5)
Through the wisdom and guidance of the Holy Spirit we will see and understand more clearly the journey of the Soul. Our Lord has used His messengers: Maria Valtorta – The Poem of the Man-God, Bertha Dudde – “Inner Word”, and Gloria Polo testimony – “From Illusion to the Truth, to provide us with a deeper understanding about the existence of the soul, and its final journey home.

God Corrects Misguided Teachings – (Vol. 6)

The Lord’s end time Vineyard Workers – (Vol. 7)
God requires many laborers in the time before the end – Instructions for a teaching ministry are by God Himself – Certain sign of the end is the small flock of fighters for God – Special mission: fighting for truth – God’s language through the elements of nature – The servants’ mission on earth after the natural disaster – Battle of Faith. . .

Visit our website for free download of all books:
www.omegaOfCreation.com
The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series reveals the journey of the soul from the beginning of creation to its end where God the Father reveals, in great detail, His Divine plan of salvation that leads the soul back to God.

- **Volume 1**: reveals the mysteries of the Trinity, the wonders of the Angel world, the test of Angels, Adam and Eve, the creation of other human beings, the descendents of Adam, death enters the world
- **Volume 2**: the Messianic Cycle that begins with the Immaculate Conception of Mary, God enters the world in the visible image of Jesus, Jesus’ victory over death, the descent of the Holy Spirit, the Church of Christ, Satan’s attack on the Church, and Prophecies and warnings from the Blessed Mother.
- **Volume 3**: teaches about Warnings and Prophecies from the Prophets of our time that lead to the manifestation of the Antichrist, Earths Time, Knowledge, the Great Tribulation, the Mark of the Beast, the Reign of the Antichrist, the Fall of Babylon, the end of the Earth as we know it, and the New Heavens and the New Earth, the Souls final journey home.
- **Volume 4**: teaches us how to obtain the fullness of the Holy Spirit, how to prepare for spiritual combat and the time of evangelism that the world has never seen.
- **Volume 5**: teaches us about the existence of the Soul from the beginning of creation, purpose of life on earth, the Souls journey into the afterlife and its final return to God, the death experience of Gloria Polo
- **Volume 6**: exposes misguided teachings and doctrine that creates barriers which separates us from the light of truth that leads to God.
- **Volume 7**: The Lord’s end time vineyard workers

“All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear.”

Ref: MDM message Jan 24th, 2014
In Honor of the Holy Spirit

May the Holy Spirit descend upon you and fill you with love and wisdom, as you journey through space and time, to discover the wonders of creation as the Father reveals His Divine Plan for mankind. May the Magnificat of the Blessed Mother’s “yes” be your “yes” as you open your heart and mind to receive knowledge, truth, and understanding that only the Holy Spirit can give.

The Book of Life consists of three Chapters: Chapter I By God the Father – The Old Testament, Chapter 2 By Jesus Christ – The New Testament, Chapter 3 by the Holy Spirit – “Truth”. “When the Paraclete comes, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father – and whom I Myself will send from the Father – He will bear witness on My behalf. He will guide you to all truth.”

(John 15, 26-27; 16:13)

The Spirit of Truth
Prayer

Holy Spirit baptize me with the fire of your love. I have surrendered to you the best of my ability, and now I want to activate Your Spirit of Love within me. I need Your power in my life. Please fill me now. I believe that as I yield and ask, You will release Your strength, wisdom, healing, and love to meet the needs of the hour. Work in me in a powerful way. I want every purpose God has for my life to be fulfilled, and I need you, mighty Spirit of God, to bring that purpose to fulfillment. Release Your Spirit within me, Amen.
Become an Apostle of Truth

Truth only comes from God and before the world can come to an end, as we know it, the truth must be revealed. How will this be done? The Lord will accomplish this by using his prophets, the same way He used the prophets in the Old Testament which is also called the Book of the Prophets.

This work presents the teachings that were given, by the Lord, to the prophets of our time that are located throughout the world. When these teachings are brought together, they present a clear picture of the events that will lead us to the return of Jesus in Glory and the end of a period of salvation.

Jesus is speaking: “All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear.”

Ref: MDM message Jan 24, 2014

The ‘final picture’ has been assembled and presented in the seven volumes of the Alpha and Omega of Creation Series

Become an Apostle of truth by passing on the Lords teachings to family and friends.
About the Author: Samuel Ronci

I have been a Catholic all my life. I was eight years old, and living in Canada, when I made my First Communion and Confirmation. When my parents returned to the States, I entered Parochial school and was educated by the Sisters of Mercy through the 9th grade. During my younger years I had a very special devotion to the Blessed Mother. This Devotion was formed by frequently saying the Rosary with my Mother.

After completing my schooling, I entered the military, as an officer and pilot. In 1968, I was in Vietnam during the Tet Offensive, and flew over 1,000 combat hours as a Helicopter Pilot. I finished my military active duty as a test pilot for the US Army, and put in six additional years with the National Guard before resigning from the Military.

I was President and owner of my own medical company. The company designed and manufactured arthroscopic patient-positioning equipment for various Arthroscopic procedures. After a successful business venture, my business was sold.

In 1989, a life-changing experience took place when I went on a pilgrimage with Fr. McDonough CSSR, a healing priest, from Roxbury MA. The pilgrimage was to a small hamlet village in Yugoslavia/Croatia called Medjugorje. It was there where my life changed as I received many graces that would open my eyes with a new vision, and love for my Catholic faith that would change my life.

Upon my return home, the graces I received began to flow to the members of my family. We began saying a family rosary every night until our children started college and left home to enter the work place. A year after my return from Medjugorje my son was plucked right out of the church pew by our Pastor, Fr Lafavor, who escorted my son into the Sanctuary. Shortly after, Father and my son came marching out for mass. My son was the first alter boy in the parish. This event happened on the first Sunday of Advent (The Alpha). Two years later, under a new pastor, Fr Wright, my second son was also picked to be an alter boy and his first mass celebration was on the Solemnity of Christ the King of the Universe. This is the last Sunday of the Church year (The Omega). Both of my sons served as alter boys for over five years and assisted in every Saturday and Sunday Mass. They were the first and the last (The Alpha and Omega) alter servers this parish had for many years to follow.

I have often wondered if these events were a sign or prophesy that was hinting about the work I would do later in my life, regarding my book called: “The Alpha and Omega of Creation!”

I became a Lector and Extraordinary Minister of the Eucharist, and served on my parish Finance committee as Chairman. My wife and I were responsible for establishing a parish prayer group that eventually became the seed for a Eucharistic Adoration program. My wife and I also sponsored and directed several pilgrimages to the National Shrine of Divine Mercy in Stockbridge Massachusetts. We implemented several church programs, including: Keep Christ in Christmas, and The Passion of Christ through the Eyes of Mary. My wife and I spend many hours with Jesus in Adoration of the Blessed Sacrament. In 1990, I consecrated my life to the Blessed Mother, using the St. Louis De Montfort consecration, and have renewed that consecration every year since.

The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series took many years to produce. It is a testimony of my time with Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament. I am sharing with you the revelations that our Lord has made known to me through the teachings of the Catholic Church, Sacred Scripture, and The Fathers of the Church, Saints, Theologians and the Prophets of our times. When you combine their works, through the Wisdom of the Holy Spirit, the tapestry of Creation is revealed and you can see the fullness of God’s plan for mankind.

To understand the seriousness of the times in which we live, where mankind is heading, and how soon are we going to get there, one must understand the very beginning of time before Creation began. It is when you understand the beginning that the end can be seen more clearly. The Blessed Mother has told us: “Everything has been revealed to you, what you do with it, is up to you!” we should pray, fast, do penance, turn away from sin, reflect, go to confession at least once a month, and amend our lives to prepare for the coming of the Lord in Glory. He is coming in our lifetime!

This work was prepared for my children, family and special friends, to help them see the Light in a world that is being blanketed with darkness. Revelations of the Lord are given to strengthen our faith during periods of great tribulation. We must prepare ourselves spiritually and physically for the times that are heading our way. Stay awake and be not afraid.

A Servant of the Lord

Samuel Ronci
Acknowledgement

A very special thanks for the works of all those that were quoted in this book, and for the dedication and support of those that helped make this book possible.

In Matthew’s Gospel, Matthew starts out by defining the Genealogy of Jesus. It took 42 generations of people to prepare the way for the coming of the Lord. Some had a big part to play and others had a smaller part, all of which were necessary. It’s when you put all these works together that the tapestry of God’s plan for mankind can be seen more clearly. Are we in fact preparing the way for the return of Jesus in Glory?


Come, Holy Spirit, fill the hearts of Thy faithful and enkindle in them the fire of Thy love. Send forth Thy Spirit and they shall be created and Thou shall renew the face of the earth. O God, Who didst instruct the hearts of the faithful by the light of the Holy Spirit, grant us in the same Spirit to be truly wise, and ever to rejoice in His consolation through Christ our Lord. Amen.

The Holy Spirit is alive in everyone and He guides and directs us along our earthly journey. Pray to the Holy Spirit on a daily basis.
The Alpha and Omega of Creation

Volume 1:
Chapter 1: In the Beginning
Chapter 2: Beings of Light
Chapter 3: Creation
Chapter 4: The Soul and Life of Adam
Chapter 5: Death Enters the World

Volume 2:
Chapter 6: The Messianic Cycle Begins
Chapter 7: The Church of Christ
Chapter 8: Satan Attacks the Church
Chapter 9: Prophecy of the Blessed Mother

Volume 3:
Chapter 10: Warnings and Prophecies
Chapter 11: Earth’s Time
Chapter 12: Knowledge – Satan’s Century
Chapter 13: Signs of the Great Tribulation
Chapter 14: The Huge Red Dragon
Chapter 15: The Antichrist and the fall of Babylon
Chapter 16: Renewed banishment of the Soul
Chapter 17: The New Heaven and the New Earth

"Lord, I place my hands upon Your Word. I ask you to imprint Your Word upon my heart and give me the wisdom to understand it and the grace to live it. Take my life Lord this day and every day of my life. Lead me in the path of light and righteousness so that I may be with You now and forever, Amen."

Ref: Christina Gallagher Aug 2016
# Table of Contents

## IN HONOR OF THE HOLY SPIRIT ................................................................. 4
## BECOME AN APOSTLE OF TRUTH .......................................................... 5
## ABOUT THE AUTHOR: SAMUEL RONCI ............................................. 6
## ACKNOWLEDGEMENT ............................................................................ 7
## TABLE OF CONTENTS ........................................................................... 9
## YEAR OF FAITH OCT 2012 - 2013 ......................................................... 15
## HOW WELL DO YOU KNOW YOUR FAITH? .......................................... 16
## PROPHETS OF OUR TIMES ....................................................................... 21
## IMPRIMATURS ....................................................................................... 34
## INTRODUCTION ....................................................................................... 39
  - Love is the Pathway to Receiving Total Truth ....................................... 43
  - Catechism of the Catholic Church and Private Revelation ..................... 49
  - GOD COMES TO MEET MAN................................................................. 49
  - THE REVELATION OF GOD ............................................................... 49
  - III. Christ Jesus -- "Meditator and Fullness of All Revelation"............... 50
  - Questions: ........................................................................................ 51
  - God the Father Speaks about Private Revelation .................................... 52

## CHAPTER 1: IN THE BEGINNING ............................................................ 69
  - Fulfillment of Divine Promises - Truth ................................................ 71
  - Introduction to Spiritual Knowledge .................................................... 72
  - The Father's Voice ............................................................................. 73
  - The Significance of Realization ............................................................ 74
  - God is Inscrutable ............................................................................. 75
  - Inscrutability of the Deity .................................................................. 76
  - "I AM THE BEGINNING OF ALL THINGS." ........................................ 78
  - God's Nature is a Mystery .................................................................. 78
  - In the Beginning .............................................................................. 79
    - In the Beginning was the Word ....................................................... 80
    - 'And the Word was made flesh' ....................................................... 81
    - The Word of God ......................................................................... 83
    - The Word – the hidden Manna of the Apocalypse ......................... 84
  - Belief in God in Jesus ........................................................................ 85
    - The Trinity of Light ........................................................................ 86
  - When Does a Soul Have Life? ............................................................... 87
  - The Soul of Mary ............................................................................. 88
  - Mary is the Witness of God's Love for Man ........................................ 89
  - The Divinity of the Most Holy Mary ................................................... 90
  - Mary is Divine ................................................................................. 91
  - Profession of Faith ........................................................................... 92
  - The Father's Plan for Man .................................................................. 92
  - Summa Theologiae: Can Man See God .............................................. 93
  - The Foundation of Creation .............................................................. 93
  - The Revelation of God as Trinity ...................................................... 93
  - Trinity Problem - How can God be one and three Persons? .............. 94
  - God in Three Persons - History ....................................................... 95
    - Mystery of the Holy Trinity ........................................................... 99
    - God Reveals the Mystery of the Holy Trinity .................................... 99
    - God and Jesus are One ................................................................. 99
    - The Doctrine of the Trinity of God ................................................ 101
    - Misguided Teachings about the Trinity ........................................... 103

9
Jesus is speaking: “And when you, My living creations, reach highest perfection of your own free will so that you can work and create next to Me as My children, then you will indeed have penetrated the most profound wisdom, you will have light and strength at your own disposal which will make you tremendously happy.” BD No. 8275 of 09/17/1962 taken from book 87
Year of Faith Oct 2012 - 2013

The year of Faith for 2012 will proclaim Christ with joy to the World

“VATICAN CITY (EWTN News/CNA)—Pope Benedict XVI has declared a ‘Year of Faith,’ which will begin in October 2012, the 50th anniversary of the opening of the Second Vatican Council.

‘It will be a moment of grace and commitment to a more complete conversion to God, to strengthen our faith in him and proclaim him with joy to the people of our time,’ said the Pope, making his announcement during Sunday Mass at St. Peter’s Basilica.

The Year of Faith will run from Oct. 11, 2012, until Nov. 24, 2013, which is the Solemnity of Christ the King.

The Pope said in his Oct. 16 remarks that it will give ‘new impetus to the mission of the whole Church to lead men out of the desert in which they often find themselves, to the place of life, of friendship with Christ.’

The New Evangelization aims to revivify Catholicism in traditionally Christian countries, which have been particularly affected by secularization in recent decades.

This demonstrates, he said, the need for a new ‘theology of history’ as an ‘essential part’ of the New Evangelization ‘because’ the men of our time, after the disastrous season of totalitarian empires of the 20th century, need to find a comprehensive vision of the world and time’ more compatible with the vision of the Church.

In the second reading, taken from St. Paul’s First Letter to the Thessalonians, the Pope said new evangelizers are reminded that ‘it is the Lord who touches hearts by his Word and his Spirit by calling people to faith and communion in the Church.’

The fact that it is God and not the evangelist who touches hearts shows the importance of recognizing God as the prime mover in any apostolic activities, which ‘must always be preceded, accompanied and followed by prayer,’ he said.

Pope Benedict also highlighted the importance of having collaborators like St. Paul, who had Silvanus and Timothy as his companions in his work, and said today’s new evangelizers should also seek co-workers in spreading the Gospel.

He then turned to today’s Gospel and said that it provides the key message the new evangelizers must bring to the world. In it, Christ tells the Pharisees to ‘render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s and to God the things that are God’s.’ This is a reminder that the Church’s message is not primarily a political one, the Pope said.

‘The mission of the Church, like Christ,’ he said, ‘is essentially to speak of God, to commemorate his sovereignty, reminding everyone, especially Christians who have lost their identity, of God’s right over what belongs to him, which is our lives.’

Later in the morning, the Pope used his Sunday Angelus address to further explain his plans for the Year of Faith to more than 40,000 pilgrims gathered in St. Peter’s Square. He summed up the initiative as ‘proclaiming Christ to those who do not know him or have, in fact, reduced him to a mere historical character.’

He finished his address by placing all those involved in New Evangelization under the protection of the Virgin Mary, who ‘helps every Christian to be a valid witness to the Gospel.’”

Ref: BY DAVID KERR (EWTN NEWS/CNA)
How well do you know your faith?
(Answers are contained within Vol. 1, 2 & 3)

Chapter 1: In the Beginning
Can man prove that God Exist? Where was God before He created Heaven and Earth? How does God create? What is truth and how do we obtain this truth? What is the difference between spiritual knowledge and intellectual knowledge? How does man obtain spiritual knowledge? What is the difference between Begotten and Created? What does it mean that God is one? Can God’s Nature ever be personified; can it be limited to a form in line with human ideas? What are the three things that best describes the nature of God? Can you describe the Trinity of Light? Can man behold the Light of God? Can the fullness of God be contained in matter? Are there really three persons in one God and can they ever be separated from each other? What did Jesus mean when he said, “Whoever has seen me has sees the Father?” What is the deeper meaning of the words “the Word became flesh?” Who is the Word? When was God’s plan for mankind revealed? Can man see God? How does man know God? Can the senses of man perceive God?

Chapter 2: Beings of Light
What are Beings of Light, could they see God in Heaven? If the beings of light that were created by God, could not behold him, how did they know that God existed? Did the Angels have the power to create? Are there different statuses of angels? How did God test the Angels and why? How long did peace in heaven last before some of the angels turned against God? How was it possible for evil to start in Heaven? Why did so many Angels follow Lucifer? After the battle of Angels, how could the good Angels ever be at peace knowing they were vulnerable to sin? What did God reveal to the good Angels that would give them great comfort? Why were the fallen Angels sent to earth? Why didn’t God show mercy towards the fallen angels, or did he? Was the earth created or being created when the angels were sent to earth? What is the purpose and role of Guardian Angels before and after death? Where did evil come from and who created hell? Where did the name Satan come from and what does it mean? Why couldn’t God use an Angel to accomplish what His Son had to accomplish in order to redeem mankind? Can you describe the soul of Jesus and when was it created?

Chapter 3: Creation
God created the heavens and earth. What are the heavens? What is the purpose of creation? Did the creation process take seven days or did it take much longer? How did creation begin? Where did matter come from and how was it formed? Did creation of the visible world begin with a ‘Big Bang?’ What is the invisible energy holding the universe together? What came first the Earth or the Sun? Why is the sequence of creation so important? What do the Sun and the Eucharist have in common? Whose voice was it that said, “Let there be light,” and what was this light? What is the mystery of light? Are there in fact two lights, one for the body and one for the spirit? Is the mysterious light of creation the same light that was seen as the miracle of the Sun at Fatima? Why do the stars illuminate in the cosmos? Is there life on other planets? What did the Lord mean when he said, “In My Fathers house are many mansions?” Are the stars dwelling place’s for Souls? What is the World? Are there other worlds with life? Will man ever travel to
these worlds? Did the human being evolve or was he a new creation? In time, why will the earth have to come to an end?

Chapter 4: The Soul and Life of Adam
Can you explain the real relationship between the Body, Soul and Spirit? What is the difference between a soul and spirit? What is the Divine Spark that is attached to the Soul and do all Souls receive one. What is the purpose of the Divine Spark? What does the “rebirth of the Soul” mean? What did the Lord mean when He said “I knew you before you were conceived?” What is the Soul’s process of development before embodiment? Who are the Pre-Adamites? What purpose did they serve? Who are the pre-historic people that have been discovered by science? Who was embodied in Adam? Why was Eve created differently than Adam? Why didn’t God breathe life into Eve like He did to Adam? Was Cain the child of Eve? What was it like to live in the Garden of Eden before sin? Who did the “Tree of Life” represent in the Garden of Eden? Why was the other tree called the “Tree of Knowledge – good and evil?” Why not the Tree of Evil or the Tree of Sin? Is this event foretelling a future event about knowledge? Does the “Original Sin” of Adam justify a Redeemer, or is there something far more serious that took place before the creation of man that when combined with Adam’s sin, would now requires a Redeemer? What happened when God cursed the earth because of Adam’s sin? What prevented Adam and Eve from ever returning back to the Garden of Eden to eat from the Tree of Life? When did Adam realize the real consequences of their sin against God? What would have happened had Adam not failed? Where did Adam and Eve go at the moment of death? What is God’s plan for man?

Chapter 5: Death Enters the World
Was Adam the only human being created by God? How did God populate the earth? What was the Devils plan to destroy Humanity? When did Demons enter the earth, was it before or after Adam? Who was the “ancestor-prehuman-female?” What is the relationship of Adam’s children and the children of Abraham? What is the origin of the Nephilim man? Can you compare the knowledge of Adam and Eve to man of today? How do the Dinosaurs fit into creation? Where did they come from and why? Why is man’s life so short as compared to that of Adam and Eve? What happened to the descendents of Adam that would cause God to become so angry with man that He would destroy all mankind, all traces of civilization, and all life on the surface of the earth, with the exception of a small remnant (Noah and his family - 8 in all)? How could the earth experience such destruction with just forty days of rain? The ark of Noah managed to save a small remnant of man and animal where only the few just men saw the rainbow. Why did God save the animals, was there something special about them? In the present hour, what is the ark that will save the remnant of the elect? What does the rainbow represent, then and now?

Chapter 6: The Messianic Cycle
If we are all descendents of Adam and Eve, and born with original sin, then how is it possible for Mary, the mother of Jesus, to be conceived without the stain of original sin? Why did Mary enter the temple at the age of 3 years and stay until she was a woman? What was the sign from God, that Joseph, was to be the spouse of Mary? How did Mary remain a virgin before, during, and after the birth of Jesus? What or who was the ‘star of Bethlehem’? Could the star be seen by all? Where did the Spirit of Jesus go at the moment of His death on the cross? Who was He looking for? Why did the thief on the cross receive God’s mercy? On the third day, who was it that stepped out from under the shroud? Who saw Jesus first when He rose from the dead? What is meant by the eighth day of creation? Why didn’t the Ancient Church, which began with Judaism, accept Christianity? Why were Christians persecuted? Who was the first martyr for Christ? What was the vision of St Stephen? Is it correct when we say, “The Son of man sitting at the right hand of God?” What is the major difference between the Old Passover and the New
Passover? What is meant by the parable of the Last Supper? Do we truly understand the meaning of the words the Lord used at the Last supper. What did the Blessed Mother mean when she said to John, “Dear John, the hour of God’s embrace has come for Me?” In 1947, Jesus dictated to Maria Valtorta instructions about the upcoming Holy Year of 1950; these instructions were intended for Pope Pius XII which he generously complied with. What was that request which became a dogma of faith? What event brings closure to the Messianic Cycle and the beginning of the Church? Why did the Apostles receive the gift of tongues and what event in history did it fulfill?

Chapter 7: The Church of Christ
What is the church of Christ? What are the characteristics of Christ’s church? Is it an organization/institution? What were the turning points in the history of the Primitive Church? What event removed Original Sin was it the death of Jesus on the cross or is it the Sacrament of Baptism? If Baptism of water removes original sin, why did Jesus allow John to Baptize Him? What is the difference between the Baptism of water and the Baptism of the spirit? How does the battle of angels, that took place in heaven, relate to the final battle of the Church? Outside the church is there salvation? When did Jesus turn over His Church to man, or did He? What are the three categories of Salvation? Can only Catholics save themselves? Why does man desire to be on his own? Can a non-Christian obtain heaven? When would a non-Christian be allowed to enter heaven? Who are the lost flock? What do those, who are part of the Mystical Body of Christ, experience at the hour of death?

Chapter 8: Satan Attacks the Church
Heresies are the preparation phase that Satan uses before he makes his move to attack the Trinity. The first part of Satan’s three phase attack took place in the year 666 against God the Father by denying the Divinity of His Son, Jesus Christ. By whom and by what religion did Satan use to carry out this attack? The second attack of Satan began in 1332 against Christ by attacking His Church. What and who did Satan use to divide and shatter the Church of Christ and to contributed to the loss of the Royal-True Faith? The third phase of Satan’s attack begins in 1998 against the Holy Spirit and the Eucharist. What events will Satan use to crush to an extent never reached before, the Church, which will no longer be free to celebrate the perpetual Sacrifice, and the abomination of desolation that shall be lifted up on the Holy Place and on the holy places? Why was Vatican II called? What event will make way for the entrance of the Antichrist who will demand to be worshiped as a god while placing mankind into slavery? Why did Pope Benedict XVI step down as Bishop of Rome and separate himself from the Vatican? The false prophet that will deliver the church to the Antichrist has been revealed by the Lord, who is he?

Chapter 9: Prophecies of the Blessed Mother
What is the Lord, the Blessed Mother and the Prophets of our times warning us about? Do we truly understand the Fatima Prophecy, and the meaning of the miracle of the sun which occurred on Oct 13, 1917? Did the people actually see the sun coming towards the earth, or was it the mysterious light that was found in the beginning of creation? What is the mystery behind this miracle trying to tell us? Was Russia ever consecrated to the Blessed Mother? What are the five signs that the Blessed Mother is warning us about that will prepare us for the end of time, and the period of great mercy, because these are about to take place in our days? What does the end of time mean? Why has the Blessed Mother entered the “Valley of Tears?”

Chapter 10: Warning and Prophecies
Are we responding to God’s mercy? What is the clear sequence of historical periods that lead up to the end of the world? Are we now entering into the time of the great tribulation? Have we reached the apex of life? Is it possible that over two thirds of the human race already lives under the sign of the Beast? Is the Church going to be handed
over to the Antichrist? Who is going to be the last Pope? What does the prophecy of St Malachy, regarding the 112th pope, mean? Who is Peter the Roman that will lead the Church to Christ during the end times? What was the vision of Don Bosco in regards to the looming crises in the Church? What will the Church be like after the Antichrist? What is the hidden manna of the Apocalypse? What are the secrets of Akita Japan and why are they so relevant for the times we are living?

Chapter 11: Earth’s Time
In Matthew 36-44 the Lord mentions that the day and hour no one knows, neither the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone. Do you really think that the Lord would leave His people unprepared for the coming of a major chastisement? Why did Noah build the Ark, weren’t they fully informed by God on how to prepare for the flood? What did God say to Noah seven days before the flood came? When Satan went before God in Pope Leo XIII vision to try the church, what was the power and time that Satan was asking for? How much power and how much time? Is Man turning towards God’s Mercy or His Justice? What are the signs of the last days? What is significant about the year 2017? After what major event will the earth begin its crashing down? What does Our Lord mean when He talks about “the 3 years test of Faith?” What is the significance of the luminous appearances in the sky that will appear during the 3 year period? What is meant by the purification of the earth? What is the last judgment of the earth as we know it? How many times will the surface of the earth and all life be destroyed?

Chapter 12: Knowledge
Why is excessive knowledge so dangerous? Starting in the early 1900 man’s progress accelerated at such a fast pace that it almost seems inhuman. Why? Does this have any connection to The Tree of Knowledge? What happens to all earthly knowledge when you enter the kingdom beyond? Human science is vanity, why? What does our Lord say about Darwin’s theory of Evolution? What would happen if science entered regions of space that were not authorized by God? Will science experiments contribute to the destruction of earth? What are UFO’s? What role will UFO’s play in the end-times? What does Our Lord say about mans desire to travel through space?

Chapter 13: Signs of the Great Tribulation
What are the signs of the great tribulation? Do we understand what the final period of purification and the great tribulation that corresponds with a particular and powerful manifestation of the angels of the Lord really mean (Rev 14:6-12)? The world’s downward course to the end will not be as long as its upward course, it will be a crashing down in the end. Why? What does Jesus say about the financial collapse of the world?

Chapter 14: The Huge Red Dragon
Why is this period of time called the period of “great silence” that was prophesied to St Theresa of the Child Jesus? What does the announcement of the three angels’ refer to? Who are the two beasts’ that are mentioned in the Book of Revelation 13? Who is the Huge Red Dragon? What is the first target of the Red Dragon? What has to rake place before the Antichrist show’s himself as man? When will the world wide Jihad begin to take place? What will God use to draw mankind to his most merciful hart? What is the three phase attack against the Trinity? How will the battle of Nations come to an end? Has God the Father set a time when the period of Salvation will come to an end? What does our Lord mean when He said, “Life is both long and short at the same time”?

Chapter 15: The Antichrist and the fall of Babylon
How does Jericho prefigure the End of the World? In Revelation 13, what does the number 666 mean and where does it come from? What is Daniel’s prophecy about the satanic period? When does the conversion of Israel take place? What do the four beasts in Daniel 7, the He-goat, the Woman and the Dragon, and the Black Beast with ten horns
and ten crowns represent? What does the Illumination of Conscience represent? Do we understand the full meaning of the illumination of conscience that has been prophesied to take place before the Antichrist takes full power of the world? What are the two suns that man will see when the illumination takes place? Is Christ calling humanity into a world wide adoration of the Blessed Sacrament? What will man experience when he enters the light of Christ? Is this the last pass of Grace for man to decide if he is for Christ or against Him? What happens after this period of Grace? Does this mean that Christ will withdraw his mercy from the world? Has the sorting out of the reprobates begun? Who are the 144,000 sealed? What does Satan’s mark on the Forehead and on the Hand represent? What does Mary’s mark on the Forehead and on the Hand represent? What is the sign that marks those that belong to Christ? What is the TAU Cross represent? What does it mean when Our Lord refers to: “this is the time of Mary that rises?” Who are the forerunners of Christ in the second coming? When will the great abomination of the Blessed Sacrament begin? What do the angels with the seven bowls represent? What do the three days of darkness represent? Who is the Great Babylon that is mentioned in the Book of Revelation? What does the fall of Babylon mean and when will its destruction take place? Who are the two witnesses of the Apocalypse, have they already come? Why is Israel the last to be converted? Who are the overcomers of the Apocalypse? By what means does the Lord use to draw this time period to an end? How does man get from the old earth to the new earth? If there is a rapture for the elect, what happens to those that are left on earth? How will Christ reign when He comes for the second time? Will He ever walk on the earth again?

Chapter 16: Renewed Banishment of the Soul
What is a renewed banishment of the soul and why does it happen? What is the main reason for the world to come to an end? Does the end complete the cycle of salvation which began a long time ago? Will all demons from hell be released in order to place people in great danger? Why does a soul have to enter a new banishment? Is a new banishment painful and how long does it last? What will happen to each soul at the time of judgment? What is the fate of the Atheist’s when this period of time comes to an end? When Hell spews out every thing it has, does that mean all possibilities to advance further in the kingdom of the beyond are over?

Chapter 17: The New Heavens and the New Earth
When the Lord speaks about His Kingdom on Earth, what is He referring to? He will not reign physically on earth, so how will He reign? At what point in time will the prophesy of Fatima, Daniel, and Pope Leo XIII be fulfilled? What is the thousand year reign that is mentioned in the Book of Revelation? Does this mean that there are more than two comings of Christ? What will life be like during the thousand year period? What is the Kingdom of the Spirit that precedes the end of the world? What does the river of life giving water represent? What happens at the end of the thousand year period? How does man’s time on earth come to an end? How will the world be brought to and end, and by what means will evil be destroyed? What are the two Resurrections of Man? What happens to Earth after the final Judgment?

Spiritual Knowledge
Jesus is speaking: “All earthly attained knowledge will be of no use to you, for it will only adhere to you for as long as you live on earth. When you enter the kingdom of the beyond, you will lose all memory of it if you have not spiritually acquired a degree of maturity which makes you suitable for the kingdom of light.” Ref: BD No. 5331 of 03/07/1952 taken from book 59
“All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear.”

Ref: MDM message Jan 24th, 2014

Teachings
BD 1047 10.08.1939

God the father is speaking: “Listen to the Lord's will: The messages from above are given with specific regularity and succession and were therefore transmitted in a specific order. But you will only discover this succession when you have achieved complete knowledge because the messages of wisdom were given to people consecutively, apparently without any correlation to each other, thus all gifts from above are unique messages of wisdom in themselves and yet absolutely essential to make subsequent messages understandable. Everything just serves to stimulate the human being’s activity of thought and to become more aware of the spirit which surrounds you.

Therefore the teachings have to be offered in a way that the human being can gain insight into all subjects and reflect on them. The revelations also have to be comprehensible so that the recipient can understand everything of this nature and that the creation as well as the activity of spiritual beings in the beyond is, in a manner of speaking, figuratively portrayed to them. This happens in carefully prepared teachings, which in turn follow one another so that people can perceive in their thoughts an understanding of what is offered to them.

Therefore the messages are at times seemingly without connection, first one subject, then another is chosen for detailed consideration because the spiritual teachers always recognize the necessity of this and constantly supplement missing knowledge when it is required. Repetitions have to be offered time and again until the earthly child has completely understood and become aware of the significance and importance of the given spiritual principles. A single lesson and presentation could not lead to the kind of knowledge that is essential for the recipient to teach in turn, and likewise every spiritual question has to be answered with extreme clarity and certainty for the divine teaching to
be accepted by human beings, and that requires the greatest and most extensive knowledge.

For this reason you often receive revelations which you believe were given to you before. This is necessary so that anyone who wants an explanation of the divine Word can be clearly and plainly taught by you one day. Only the greatest attention and willingness to learn can result in a particular maturity within a short time, for this reason every message is wisely considered and given to you in accordance with the Lord’s will.”

**The Blessed Mother**

God the Father is speaking: “In His second and final coming, the Lamb of God, the Redeemer, the Saint of saints, will have as a precursor not the repentant of the wilderness, salted by the mortifications, and salting sinners in order to cure them of their heaviness and make them quick-moving in receiving the Lord, but He will have as a precursor our Angel, She who, though having flesh, was the Seraph, She in whom we have made our dwelling place, neither sweeter nor more worthy could we have had Her, the most beloved Ark of pure gold who still contains us just as She is contained by us, and who will fly across the heavens, radiating Her love in order to prepare a perfumed and regal road for the King of kings and to prepare – in order to generate and to give birth, in a last maternity – as many living seeds as there are who will want to be given birth to the Lord.” PMG Vol.5

Our Lady has been appearing all over the world during these last hundred years, calling mankind to repentance. There have been thousands of statues weeping real tears, some with tears of blood. Through her prophets, she has been warning mankind of pending chastisements and persecutions if her messages of repentance are not heeded. She has been calling mankind to consecrate themselves to Her Immaculate Heart during these times of great tribulation so they can be immersed in Her love and protection, as she prepares the world for the return of Jesus in glory.

**Pope Leo XIII**

On October 13, 1884 Pope Leo XIII was given a vision of Satan asking God for more power and time to destroy His church. God granted his request. What Leo apparently saw, as described later by those who talked to him at the time of his vision was a period of about 100 years when the power of Satan would reach its zenith. Exactly when this period would start was estimated to be the twentieth century. That was until our Lady revealed the exact date to Fr. Gobbi. We will cover more about this in this teaching.

**St. John Bosco**

Saint John Bosco (16 August 1815 – 31 January 1888), born Giovanni Melchiorre Bosco, also called Don Bosco, was an Italian Catholic priest and educator, who put into practice the dogma of his religion, employing teaching methods based on love rather than punishment. He placed his works under the protection of Francis de Sales, thus his followers called themselves the Salesian Society. Don Bosco succeeded in establishing a network of centers to carry on his work. In recognition of his work with disadvantaged youth, he was canonized by Pope Pius XI in 1934.
The famous dream of St. John Bosco (1815-1888) was about a Pope that will lead the Church to the two columns of salvation: the Eucharist and the Virgin Mary.

Most of the prophecies associated with St. Don Bosco came to him during dreams, but just as in Matthew’s Gospel where the process of Joseph being instructed by angels during dreams is described, it is clear that Don Bosco’s experiences were more than the sort of dreams most of us have when asleep. These dreams were not only for the times back then, but also, for the times now!

**Children of Fatima**

Our Lady of Fatima explained to the children that war is a punishment for sin and warned that God would further castigate the world for its disobedience to His Will by means of war, hunger, the persecution of the Church, the Holy Father, and the Catholic Faithful. God’s Mother prophesied that Russia would be God’s chosen "instrument of chastisement," spreading the "errors" of atheism and materialism across the earth, fomenting wars, annihilating nations and persecuting the Faithful everywhere. "If My requests are not granted, Russia will spread its errors throughout the world, rising up wars and persecutions against the Church. The good will be martyred, the Holy Father will suffer much, and various nations will be annihilated."

The heart of Our Lady’s Message to the world is contained in what has come to be called the "Secret" which She confided to the three child seers in July 1917. The Secret actually consists of three parts, the first two of which have been publicly revealed. The first part of the Secret was a horrifying vision of hell "where the souls of poor sinners go" and contained an urgent plea from Our Lady for acts of prayer and sacrifice to save souls. The second part of the Secret specifically prophesied the outbreak of World War II and contained the Mother of God’s solemn request for the Consecration of Russia, as a condition for world peace. It also predicted the inevitable triumph of Her Immaculate Heart following Russia’s consecration and the conversion "of that poor nation" to the Catholic Faith.

The last part of the secret (known as the "third” secret) was written down in a letter by Lucia Dos Santos, the last living Fatima seer, in 1944, with instructions not to read it until 1960, this was placed in the care of The Holy See. Most informed sources speculate that this portion of the Secret concerns chaos in the Catholic Church, predicting widespread apostasy and a loss of faith beginning in the seventh decade of the 20th Century. But it is now believed that it predicted the 1981 assassination attempt of Pope John Paul II.

The miracle of the sun, which took place at Fatima, is intended to point out to you that you are now entering into the times which will prepare you for the return of Jesus in glory.

**Saint Faustina**

Sister Mary Faustina, consumed by tuberculosis and by innumerable sufferings, which she accepted as a voluntary sacrifice for sinners, died in Krakow at the age of just thirty-three on October 5, 1938. Saint Faustina had a reputation for spiritual maturity and a mystical union with God. The reputation of the holiness of her life grew, as did the devotion to the Divine Mercy and the graces she obtained from God through her intercession. In
the years 1965-67, the investigative Process into her life and heroic virtues was undertaken in Krakow. In the year 1968, the Beatification Process was initiated in Rome. The latter came to an end in December 1992. On April 18, 1993 our Holy Father, John Paul II, raised Sister Faustina to the glory of the altars. Sister Faustina was declared a Saint on April 30, 2000. Mary Faustina’s remains rest at the Sanctuary of the Divine Mercy in Kraków-Łagiewniki. Her 33 year life was to prepare the world to receive God’s Divine Mercy, after this period, comes His Justice.

Maria Valtorta

Her activity as a writer reached intensity from 1943 to 1947, and continued, diminishing progressively, until 1953. Maria wrote in time of war and in very difficult conditions, including evacuation, whereby on the 24th of April 1944 she was obliged to move to St. Andrew of Compito (section of the borough of Capannori in the province of Lucca). She returned to her dear home at Viareggio on the 23rd of December that same year.

She used to write in an almost sitting position in bed, in ordinary school notebooks, which she supported with a piece of cardboard held on her bent knees. She would write at any time, by day or by night, even when she was exhausted by fatigue or tormenting pains. She wrote effortlessly, naturally, and without revision. If interrupted, she could leave off writing and then resume later on with ease. She did not consult books, except for the Bible; and the catechism of Pope Pius X.

During her continuous work, her living and constant prayer, her suffering embraced with the joy of the redeemers, Maria begged God not to concede her external signs of intense participation in Christ, Who used her as faithful "spokesman" and "pen" manifesting Himself in the richness of the "visions" and in the depth of the "dictations."

The notebooks written by Maria Valtorta include almost fifteen thousand pages. Little less than two-thirds of this astounding literary production concerns the monumental work on the Life of Jesus Christ (THE POEM OF THE MAN-GOD, five hardcover volumes in English, approximately 4,200 pages. The current new work in Italian, French, and Spanish is THE GOSPEL AS REVEALED TO ME, in ten smaller volumes). The minor works include extensive commentaries on biblical texts, doctrinal lessons, histories of the first Christians and martyrs, and pious compositions. This work was given to us out of love for those who love the Lord, and to provide us with a river of truth in a world saturated with heresies. Maria Valtorta (born on March 14, 1897, died Oct 12, 1961)

[Note: Bishop Roman Danylak, Bishop of Titula Nyssa, makes the following comment: Valtorta is one of the most outstanding manifestations of the prophetic charism in our own times. Many consider her to be one of the greatest mystics in the history of the Church. Ref: www.sacredheartofjesus.ca/MariaValtorta ]

Pope Pius XII

The Poem of the Man-God receives the Pontifical Imprimatur. This 5000 page ‘Life of Christ’ was written in Italian between 1944 and 1947. It is now being read by millions on all five continents. In 1947, shortly after being completed, a typewritten copy of it in 12 volumes was placed in the hand of Pope Pius XII. On Feb 26, 1948,
His Holiness declared to a private audience:

“Publish this work as it is. There is no need to give an opinion about its origin, whether it be extraordinary or less. Who reads it, will understand.”

This major work is the Life of Jesus, the narration of which extends from the birth and childhood of the Virgin Mary, to Her assumption into Heaven. It is the “gospel” which neither substitutes nor changes the Gospel, but rather narrates it, integrating and illuminating it, with the declared purpose of reviving in men’s hearts the love for Christ and his Mother.

This work was given to us by the Lord so that we may be better prepared to withstand the deluge of false teachings and heresies that will saturate the earth during our lifetime. Maria Valtorta is the only Mystic to receive a Pontifical Imprimatur.

**Azariah** (Azariah is the Guardian Angel of Maria Valtorta)

The Book of Azariah is mystical speech – that is, the inspired articulation of God’s being-in-Love with man and man’s being-in-Love with God – as mediated, in this instance, by an angel, and a guardian angel at that: the privileged witness to and participant in the enamored exchanges between spirit and spirit, Divine Person and human person.

Azariah gives a first hand account of the Battle that took place in Heaven when one-third of the angels were cast down to earth as demons. Understanding the beginning helps us to understand the end and why there is an end! He also expounds on the desire of man to be separated from the tree and the consequences for being as such.

In this burning language of mystical dialogue, words are brands which both wound and heal, revealing God to be at once supremely powerful and supremely tender, the consummate Romantic of eternal poetry.

*The Book of Azariah has thus been written for true “lovers,” present and future, and it is to be hoped that it will find its way into their hands – and into their hearts.*

**Fr. Stephano Gobbi**

THE TRIUMPH, THE SECOND COMING AND THE EUCHARISTIC REIGN

Brother Priests, we are priests chosen for the triumph of the Immaculate Heart of Mary. This is why Our Lady made the Marian Movement of Priests arise within the Church. She has chosen us priests to be part of this Movement, so that we may be instruments of the triumph of her Immaculate Heart in the world. But in order for us to become instruments for the triumph of her Immaculate Heart, Our Lady must triumph in our lives. To be able to triumph, she asks us to consecrate ourselves to her Immaculate Heart, so that she can enter into our priestly lives as our Mother, and work to transform us and to make of us, ever more, priests according to the Heart of Jesus. When Our Lady sees us similar to her Son Jesus, then her Immaculate Heart triumphs in us; Our Lady is preparing her priests for the final battle and the return of Her Son in Glory.
Vassula Ryden

Vassula Rydén, who is Greek, was born in Egypt and belongs to the Greek Orthodox Church. God approached her in 1985 while she lived in Bangladesh, in a most extraordinary way, to use her as His instrument and charge her with His messages for all mankind. In truth it is a reminder of His Word. In these messages for our times, God is calling us to repentance, reconciliation, peace, and unity.

Since 1988 Vassula has been invited to speak in more than 70 countries and has given over 900 presentations. Vassula receives in all of this work no personal royalties, fees; or benefit for her efforts. So far the books have been translated into more than 40 languages. They are written in such a clear and direct language that anyone of reading age can understand them. At the same time their content is so rich and profound that brilliant theologians have been inspired to write books about the spirituality of the messages. God himself has chosen to name these divine messages: True Life in God.

Christina Gallagher

In January of 1988, a series of extraordinary events occurred, which were to totally alter the lifestyle of Mrs. Christina Gallagher, a shy Irish housewife. In the period since then, these events have also affected the lives of a great many other people, not only in Ireland, but all over the world. Christina Gallagher’s name has become known throughout the world.

Her messages and prophesies over the last 20 years have been one hundred percent accurate. Her spiritual advisor, Fr. Gerard McGinnity, is an author and Parish Priest of Knockbridge, County Louth, Ireland, a parish of the Archdiocese of Armagh.

"It was in 1988 that Fr. McGinnity first heard of Christina... It was however, some time before I actually met Christina." Fr. McGinnity has been Christina Gallagher’s spiritual director for many years. He co-authored her biography, entitled Out of the Ecstasy and On to the Cross - Biography of Christina Gallagher published in 1996, in which he refers to Christina as "God’s prophet."

Our Lady Comes To Garabandal Spain 1961-1965

Situated in the Cantabrian Mountains of northwest Spain, San Sebastian de Garabandal is a small hamlet of some 80 dwellings. For centuries the people of this humble and remote village have gathered together daily for the recitation of the rosary and litanies of the Blessed Virgin Mary.

Garabandal is unique in the history of Marian apparitions, with Our Lady appearing over 2000 times from July 2, 1961 until November 13, 1965. Our Lady appeared to four simple, unsophisticated girls, Conchita Gonzalez, Mari Loli Mazon, Jacinta Gonzalez and Marie Cruz Gonzalez, aged between 11 and 12.

The messages of Garabandal have to do with our conversion of heart: We must ask for forgiveness for our sins and strive to lead good lives.

Prophecy - A world-wide warning from Almighty God: This warning, which will be experienced everywhere and by everyone on earth at the same time, is meant to give
mankind the chance to amend their lives, to correct the conscience of the world, and prepare us for the great Miracle and the second coming of the Lord. (More on this in chapter 13)

Medjugorje

Our Lady has been appearing so long in Medjugorje that to some it doesn’t even raise an eyebrow any longer. Is this something that should shake us to our very souls or is this just our Mother helping us a little and everything will be fine? One statement we have from Our Lady is so strong it should literally stun us. May 2, 1982 “I have come to call the world to conversion for the last time. Afterwards, I will not appear any more on this earth.”

Since the apparitions in Medjugorje are still going on (30+ years), the Church can not approve them until our Lady’s mission in Medjugorje comes to completion. At that time, the Church can then begin the investigation of the events that have taken place there. Our Lady has promised us that she would show to the world, without any doubt, that her presence in Medjugorje was in fact real.

Jesus speaks about this message: Ref. “Lessons on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans” by Maria Valtorta:44

“It is the time of Mary that rises: The utmost mercy that our Love has thought for you all. Great will be the length of Her walk. At the end of this time, She will pass by, and neither will the mud dirty the hem of Her dress. She will only descend, as swiftly as an archangel, to put Her seal upon the foreheads of the faithful, next to the mark of the Tau, of those saved for the eternal Kingdom. And strength and peace will enter into their spirits under the touch of Her hand, Mother of Life and Fountain of Salvation.”

It is believed that this event will take place just before the reign of the Antichrist, which will last 3 ½ years. Our lady has been appearing every day since the first apparition of June 25, 1981 (30 years+). Chances are, our Lady will be with us for a total of 33 years, to prepare us for the second coming of the Lord and to strengthen us to do battle with the Antichrist. (More on this subject later in this work)

Bertha Dudde

At the request of many friends Bertha Dudde wrote the following biography in 1953: I have been writing messages received through the inner Word since June 15, 1937. In answer to the many requests of my friends I will give you a picture of my earthly life, a short explanation of what I received spiritually, and my own feelings about all this.

I was born April 1, 1891, the second oldest daughter of an artist of Liegnitz in Silesia, today’s Poland. I had a normally peaceful childhood, with six sisters in our parent’s home. I learned the cares of life at an early age. The desire to make money to help my parents made me learn the trade of a seamstress. As the financial needs of my parents continued, so did the burden, and in this way I made myself useful.

My parents belonged to different denominations. Father was a Protestant - Mother a Catholic. We children were brought up in the Catholic faith but never
experienced pressure or force to follow the practices of the church so that each child in later years was able to pursue their own chosen course.

I myself was religious but could not accept the doctrine of the Catholic system although I respected the church. I could not represent something on the outside that my inner conscience had not accepted. So I did not continue to attend church, heard little preaching and had no knowledge of the Bible. I did not read any religious books or scientific literature and did not join any other group or religious sect.

Anyone knowing the Catholic teaching knows what a conscious struggle one finds himself in when he wants to release himself from it. I was not spared from this either. But the question as to what is the Truth and where it is to be found, remained.

Often when I prayed the Lord’s Prayer I would beseech the Lord to allow me to find His kingdom. This prayer was answered in June 15, 1937, as I prayed quietly and waited for the inner voice. In this attitude I persisted often, for a wonderful peace came over me and thoughts which came to my heart, not my head, gave me comfort and strength....

Jesus Christ says "I am the way, the truth and the life". The way we humans should take is the way of love which was exemplified by Jesus Christ and which leads to eternal life in His presence. The truth we should know is given to us through the Word of God where God Himself in Jesus Christ imparted to us through his disciples and through His present-day messengers. He says Himself 'I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh; and servants and handmaidens shall prophesy'.

One of these present-day servants and handmaidens is Bertha Dudde, through whom God 'pours out His Spirit', that is, through whom we receive His Word in its purest form in order to recognize the meaning and purpose of earthly life and His plan of Salvation. It is now our wish to share and distribute the "Word of God" received through Bertha Dudde. For this reason we are making the transcripts of the individual messages available to you for reading and to inform you where you can order copies of the texts.

These texts have been printed in book-format since 1993 with the help of many friends and were passed on to everyone who is interested. Over the years they have demonstrated that people following the way of Christ have found them particularly helpful. But it also becomes evident that it is not a feasible path without the Commandments of Love given to us by Jesus Christ. Why? Because we are only able to understand His language if we live a life of love; with the two volumes 'Return to God' we offer you a small overview of the complete works. After that, anyone who sincerely would like to take the path of return should let himself be guided by the messages in the books that were given to us by the Father through Bertha Dudde.

Note: In God’s grace people are led anew to the Gospel which emphatically points out the purpose of man's being; for the merciful love of God seeks to save all who still can be saved before the turning point comes, And it will come. The end-time which seers and prophets have proclaimed is now here. According to the revelations given to me, the Lord does not differentiate between His children. ‘Come ye all to Me’ sounds His call and blessed is he who hears His call and follows Him. God loves His children. He wants to make them all happy, even when they do not want to know Him.

Recorded November 22, 1953
Bertha Dudde
Luisa Piccarreta

Annibale Maria Di Francia - Founder of two religious congregations: The Rogacionist Fathers of the Heart of Jesus and of the Daughters of the Divine Zeal of the Heart of Jesus. He had the grace to deal intimately with Luisa Piccarreta during the last 17 years of her life, from 1910 to 1927 (Fr. Di Francia died on June 1st, 1927). Meeting Luisa Piccarreta was a transcendental event in his life and the manifestation of the Divine Will became the center of his life, of his spirituality, and of his only reason for existence. Many times, he would go to Luisa’s house and he was her extraordinary confessor. In his last years, he was appointed director over everything referring to the publication of her writings by the Archbishop of Trani. He was named ecclesiastical censor for the Archdiocese of Trani-Barletta-Bisceglie as well.

He was also the first to begin publishing Luisa’s writings, the first of which was «The Hours of the Passion of Our Lord Jesus Christ», which she wrote around the year 1913 or 1914. Saint Hannibal gave the title to this book and made four editions of it (1915, 1916, 1917 and 1921), all bearing the Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur. One of the best-remembered episodes, according to a number of witnesses was the time when Fr. Hannibal took the book, “The Hours of the Passion”, to the Holy Father, now Saint Pius X (who received him privately on a number of occasions, as did Popes Benedict XV and Pius XI as well). While showing it to him, he was reading a few pages when the pope interrupted him, saying, «Not while standing, Father; this book should be read kneeling. It is Jesus Christ who is speaking».

It was Fr. Hannibal’s intention to begin to publish all the volumes that Luisa Piccarreta had written up to that time (nineteen). For this reason, he obtained the promise of Imprimatur from the Archbishop of Trani, while getting ready to print them. Divine Providence first put the publishing on hold with the death of Fr. Hannibal and years later when Luisa’s Confessor faced the decree of the Holy See that put the three (3) books of Luisa, which had already been published on the Index of Forbidden Books, which still existed at that time.

St. Fr. Di Francia left us the following documents: Letters to Luisa, the Preface to «The Hours of the Passion» and a Preface, which was never published, that he wrote for the volumes that he did not get to print. These are some of the most beautiful and most sublime testimonies that he left for us.

Saint Fr. Hannibal wanted Luisa Piccarreta to live at the Orphanage of Saint Anthony, which he founded, so that Luisa could become teacher and model of imitation to the religious and orphans. His intention was to take Luisa to the Orphanage that he founded in Trani but Luisa said that the Lord had destined for Corato. During those days, St. Fr. Di Francia received a donation that allowed him to open a new Orphanage at Corato.

St. Fr. Hannibal’s desire was fulfilled a year after his death, when Luisa’s confessor, Don Benedetto Calvi, ordered Luisa to move to that institute.

Maria Divine Mercy

Maria Divine Mercy - the European visionary and seer has been receiving messages since 2010. Although Maria, who wishes to remain anonymous, had virtually no knowledge of the Bible, the messages are littered with numerous biblical references, codes and secrets including

The Maria Divine Mercy prophesies and messages are contained in The Book of Truth, foretold in the Book of Daniel.
God the Father, she explains, has given her ‘The Seal of the Living God’ Crusade Prayer (33) – a prayer of protection against the antichrist also foretold in the Bible in the Book of Revelation.

The Catholic Church will be taken over by the enemies of God from within and this will lead to the greatest apostasy of all time.

The Second Coming will herald the return of Christ to judge the living and the dead.

The world will witness the rise of Satanism and new age paganism.

140 Crusade Prayers were dictated to Maria Divine Mercy by God the Father, His beloved Son Jesus Christ and the Blessed Mother of God, the Virgin Mary who has asked the world that she be known as the Mother of Salvation through these messages.

Many people have accepted the messages as they are. Many don’t. An evaluation of the warning second coming website has been made by many people, and this has led to questions as to whether Maria Divine Mercy is true or false. Maria Divine Mercy’s real name is not being made public and she wishes to remain anonymous.

While theologians argue as to whether the Warning Second Coming website is a hoax or not the fact is that hundreds of Crusade Prayer Groups have been set up around the world on the back of this Mission. The messages have been translated into over 28 languages and without any help or assistance from this website.

In less than three and a half years three volumes of the messages which total 2,000 in all (most of which have been published) have been produced in book format in print and in eBook through Apple, Amazon Kindle, Kobo and Overdrive. People are not obliged to buy the books as the messages are free to download on this site. However, people have requested that the Book be published as well as the Crusade Prayer Book and they are available through this website through an independent publisher and re-sellers throughout Great Britain and other parts of the world.

Conchiglia – Movimento D’amore San Juan Giego

Foundation of the Name “Conchiglia”

Conchiglia received her first Message from the Holy Trinity on the 7th of April 2000 through intimate communications and it was the first Friday of the month dedicated to the Sacred Hearth of Jesus, few days before Easter, during the Great Jubilee of the Year 2000. Jesus really died on Friday 7th, April 1, Conchiglia, Began her walk after having seen Jesus at Marotta of Fano, Pesaro-Urbino, Italy, on the 14th of January 1968. After my “yes” to God, pronounced at the Holy Hour of Loreto – Ancona – Italy, the Project of God was irradiated and was shown to Humanity through me, Conchiglia.

The Most Holy Trinity on the 7th of April 2000 has chosen a New Name for me, “Conchiglia” as a conch, a seashell. According to Biblical Tradition, “the change of the name by God” is a sacred investiture by which the elect is constituted as founder of an institution of Divine Origin, destined to be perpetuated in History and elevated to cooperation in the History of the salvation for the multitudes.

I have the same blood group of Jesus: AB Rh+ as shown in the analysis performed on the Shroud of Turin and the Miracle of Lanciano, the only difference being that Jesus’ group is male and mine is female.

For the will of Jesus, I am the foundress of the Movimento d’Admore San Juan Diego (Saint Juan Diego Movement of Love) that belongs to Most Holy Mary, Our Lady of Guadalupe. The Movement of hearts onto which God’s children from all over the
World converges, because this is God’s Work. God is Love, hence Movement of Love is
the Movement of God and it is the Movement of God because it is the Unique Movement
That God now wants in the World. To the voice “movement” from the “Dictionary of the
Italian Language” by Nicola Zingararelli, Freeman Edition, Bologna, 2005 we can read:
act of moving – animation of a group – isometric view of a plan or in three-dimensional
space onto itself that you can superimpose the two figures corresponding to each other
– inspired by current cultural from innovative ideas – meeting, affairs love – movement
of the soul – change – origin.

Luz de María de Bonilla

The life of Luz de María has been one guided
by God from her birth in a small Central American
country: Costa Rica. At present she resides in
Argentina.

She comes from a family with deep Christian
roots in which, along with her siblings, she grows
up surrounded by an atmosphere of spirituality, with
the Eucharist as the center of her life. Her youth is
spent alongside the presence of her beloved
Guardian Angels and of the Blessed Mother who are
her companions and confidants. Since then they
share with her Heavenly. Manifestations, thus foreshadowing what would materialize
little by little years later.

Along with the development of her professional life, she forms a home which is
constituted today of 15 members, who accompany her as Divine Manifestations begin to
take place in her home: such as exudations from religious images, inexplicable aromas,
among others, in this way making her family and loved ones witnesses of Luz de
Maria’s spiritual experience.

During Holy Week of 1990, the definitive encounter takes place with the Blessed
Mother, who announces to her the physical recovery from an illness Luz de María was
suffering and receives her in a special way to prepare her for the encounter with Her
Divine Son. So begins a long path long which they begin to subtly clarify to Luz de
Maria the mission Heaven had designated for her.

Thus begins a new stage in her mystic experience, which would lead her to
experience profound ecstasy not only in the presence of her family, but also of people
close to her that would later gather to pray, so forming a Cenacle that accompanies her
to this day.

As the years pass, Jesus and the Blessed Mother form her so that she is a useful
instrument in the hands of the Divine Potter and so she abandons herself in the Will of
the Lord, bearing along with Christ the pain of the Cross that penetrates physically in her
body and in her soul.

After a long wait during which Christ and the Blessed Mother gradually prepare
her asking her discretion in that period, Heaven orders her to communicate the Divine
Word she has received, and continues to receive, to all of humanity. From that moment,
Christ opens the way for her and directs her steps wherever the Divine Will desires
Heaven’s Call to reach.

After they give her the Divine Order to make herself known, and under the
inspiration of the Holy Spirit, she begins to visit various countries, especially those of
Latin America, giving radio interviews and conferences open to the public. From there
have arisen brothers and sisters desirous of putting into practice the teachings of the Divine Word, forming Cenacles of prayer and praxis of the Gospel, remaining in a constant battle to reach a life full in the fulfillment of God's Will and the love of neighbor.

Luz de María begins to perceive that as time goes by, the Word of Christ and of the Blessed Mother takes on a different voice regarding its magnitude and intensity, due to the proximity of the events humanity will face.

In each Divine Call, however, prevails Love, Mercy and at the same time Divine Justice. And they announce and denounce the reality of the purification of the human race -- a purification that is a fruit of the disobedience of present-day man and of the mismanagement he has given to advances in all fields, with man thus transforming himself into his own scourge.

Christ makes known to her the persecution, injustice, defamation and slander which she will face from those who do not accept these Divine Calls and who will not tire of persecuting her so as to end this Work, but she accepts, knowing that as an instrument of Christ she must follow the same path Christ walked on Earth.

The Blessed Mother is her counselor, and hand-in-hand with the Mother, up to this day, she continues to be a faithful disciple of Christ, living various mystic experiences in which Christ shares His suffering on the Cross.

Beside her, Priests from several countries have remained who guide her, but as Christ himself tells her” “I am your true spiritual director,” for it is Christ who guides each one of her steps and all that she does. Father Jose Maria Fernandez Rojas, who from the beginning of the manifestations has been beside her as her confessor, has also accompanied her prayer group of which three women religious have been an inseparable part since the Cenacle was formed 24 years ago, with one of these women religious having a degree in theology, the most strict observance and analysis of the revealed word has been maintained.

The Mission of Luz de Maria, in total obedience to Christ, is to be an instrument of the Divine Truth in this instant and to announce and denounce what Our Lord Jesus Christ and Our Blessed Mother indicate to her so that the children of God continue to fight for their own conversion and that of all their brothers and sisters, recognizing and strongly battling the evil that surrounds them, and dedicated, continue on the path of Salvation in all aspects of life.

It is thus that the Divine Word that Luz de Maria receives invites humanity, as children of the same Father, to reach unity of all brothers and sisters, fulfilling the First Commandment and echo of the Call of Christ that calls His People to be one.

Reference:
Prior to the moment in which Christ shares His passion with her, Luz de María starts to perceive a particular state which makes her recognize in advance the Manifestation of this wonder, thereafter causing her to fall into a profound ecstasy, reflecting a dramatic scene for witnesses due to the suffering that is not only physical but spiritual; wounds in her hands, feet, side of the chest and the head became visible, on some occasions tears of blood manifest that emanate an intense perfume that floods the entire room. As the ecstasy, which can last from one to several hours, comes to an end, the wounds heal regenerating her flesh and skin, remaining only the blood that emanated from these wounds...
St. Elder Paisios - End Time Prophecy
Elder Paisios of the Holy Mount Athos
Orthodox Saints and Church Fathers, Spiritual Elders *(Taken from a Russian translation of the original Greek)*

Editor’s note: On a remote, narrow peninsula in the Aegean Sea lays the monastic republic of Mt. Athos, spiritual heart of the Orthodox Christian world. For centuries monks have lived and prayed here for the salvation of their souls and the world, and every devout Orthodox Christian male strives to make the pilgrimage to Mt. Athos at least once in his life. Elder Paisios (1924-1994) is considered by many to have been one of the Holy Mount’s greatest ascetics of the 20th Century. Over the course of his life the words of this humble Greek monk, who came to be honored by believers as an “holy elder” (geronta in Greek, starets in Russian), were recorded by the thousands who journeyed to seek his advice and prophecies. In the following quotes Paisios warns of the great cataclysms which await us in our Apocalyptic times. His counsel of spiritual preparedness and how to achieve it will be of use to all those who strive to do good while maintaining spiritual equilibrium in a world growing increasingly hostile to our salvation. Paisios seems to have foreseen everything: the ever more frequent and senseless wars and the growing totalitarianism of “Schengen Europe”, “Homeland Securitized” America and “Putinized” Russia, the downward slide of our modern, globalized world into licentiousness and madness, the approaching Last Judgment.

The Decree of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith repealing the Canons of canon Law in 1399 and 2318, was approved by His Holiness Paul VI October 14, 1966: was later published at the request of His Holiness himself, so it is no longer prohibited without disclosing the Imprimatur, text concerning new miraculous Apparitions, Revelations, Visions, Signs, prophecies and other Miracles. It is not intended in any way to prevent the judgment of the One, Holy, Roman Catholic and Apostolic Church.

Catechism of the Catholic Church: Through the prophets, God forms his people in the hope of salvation, in the expectation of a new and everlasting Covenant intended for all, to be written on their hearts. The prophet proclaims a radical redemption of the People of God, purification from all their infidelities, a salvation which will include all the nations. Above all, the poor and humble of the Lord will bear this hope. Such holy woman as Sarah, Rebecca, Rachel, Miriam, Deborah, Hannah, Judith and Esther kept alive the hope of Israel’s salvation. The purest figure among them is Mary.

These are just some of the prophets and seers mentioned in this work. The messages are serious just like the times in which we are living in. The Lord is trying to prepare us spiritually and mentally for His return so that when the period of great tribulation comes, our faith will not be shaken or lost.
Imprimaturs

Imprimatur: There is nothing contrary to faith or morals of the Catholic Church in this manuscript.

The NIHl OBSTAT and IMPRIMATUR are a declaration that a book or pamphlet is considered to be free from doctrinal or moral error. It is not implied that those who have granted the NIHl OBSTAT and IMPRIMATUR agree with the contents, opinions or statements expressed therein.

The spiritual references contained within this presentation are quoted from the following sources, all of which have valid Imprimaturs that are approved by the Catholic Church, and tested by various Bishops, to make certain that the revelations conform to the teachings of the Church in regards to faith and morals and are supported by Sacred Scripture:

Maria Valtorta  
Supreme Imprimatur & Bishop Imprimatur  
The Poem of the Man God series

Fr. Gabriel M. Roschini, O.S.M.  
The Virgin Mary in the Writings of Maria Valtorta

Don Stefano Gobbi  
To the Priests Our Lady’s Beloved Sons

St. Thomas Aquinas  
Summa Theologiae

St. Sister Faustina  
Divine Mercy in My Soul

Fr. John Laux, M.A.  
Church History

Vassula Ryden  
True Life in God

The Liturgy of the Hours  
According to the Roman Rite

St Joseph Catholic Bible and the Catechism of the Catholic Church
Jesus is speaking: “Rise, Come to My Gift. ‘Take and eat, Take and drink,’ I said to the apostles.

If you only knew the gift of God and who it is that is saying to you: ‘give me a drink’, you would have been the one to ask, and He would have given you living water, I said to the Samaritan woman.

I tell you these words. I offer you this food and drink of living water. My Word is Life. And I want you in the Life, with me. And I multiply My word to counterbalance the miasmata of Satan as they destroy the vital strength of the spirit.

Do not reject Me. I am anxious to give Myself to you, because I love you. And My anxiety is inextinguishable. I ardently wish to communicate Myself to you to make you ready for the banquet of the celestial nuptials. And you need Me in order not to languish, to dress yourselves with dresses adorned for the Wedding of the Lamb, for the great feast of God after overcoming the afflictions in this desert full of snares, of brambles and snakes, which is the Earth, to pass through flames without suffering damage, to tread on reptiles and have to take poisons without dying, as you have Me in you.

And I also say to you: ‘Take,’ do take this work and ‘do not seal it’ but read it and have it read ‘because the time is close’ and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: ‘Come, Lord Jesus.’

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me.”

Jesus

[Note: “This major work of Maria Valtorta, the Poem of the Man-God, is the Gospel expanded, with her other writings, is in perfect consonance with the canonical Gospels, with the tradition and magisterium of the Catholic Church.” Bishop Roman Danylak, S.T.L., J.U.D. Dated at Rome/Toronto, June 24, 2001]
Poem of the Man-God Supreme Imprimatur

Supreme Pontifical Imprimatur for this Work

This 5000 page ‘Life of Jesus’ was written in Italian between 1944 and 1947. It is now being read by millions on all five continents.

It was translated into quite a few languages, mainly: French, Spanish, German, and most recently, English.

In 1947, shortly after being completed, a typewritten copy of it in 12 volumes was given from hand to hand to Pope Pius XII. A few months later, on February 26, 1948. His Holiness received in private audience (which was announced in the Osservatore Romano, official newspaper of the Vatican) three priests, members of the Order of the Servites of Mary (O.S.M.): Fr. Corrado M. Berti, theologian and professor at “Marianum,” the Pontifical Faculty of Theology in Rome; Fr. Andrea M. Cecchin, Prior of the Servite International College in Rome; and Fr. Romualdo M. Migliorini, formerly Pontifical Prefect in Africa. Pope Pius XII declared in their presence:

“Publish this work as it is. There is no need to give an opinion about its origin, whether it be extraordinary or less. Who reads it, will understand.”

His Holiness then added: “One hears of many visions and revelations. I don’t mean to say that they are all real; but there are some of which it can be said that they are real.” (This last sentence obviously applies to the present work.)

Fr. Berti then asked His Holiness if the words “visions” and “dictations, (by Jesus)” should be eliminated. The Pope answered that nothing should be eliminated.

Thus it happened that unexpectedly and in quite an exceptional way, — should we add: providentially? — this work by Maria Valtorta got its Imprimatur directly from the Pope himself, which is strictly according to Canon Law of the Church (Cf. amongst others, canon 218 in Canon Law 1917 and also canon 331 in Canon Law 1983). That was in 1948.

Years passed. The work was first published in 1956-1959. From then on, whatever opposition cropped up, the number of its readers multiplied phenomenally among the Church laity as well as in the religious orders, the clergy and the hierarchy.

Among them all: saintly people, mystics, active organizers, specialists in many fields, scientists, and what have you.

Through their thousands of written testimonies, Pope Pius XII’s prediction proved true. Yet, for all their number, weight and force, there is little they could add to the supreme official declaration by the Sovereign Pontiff.

N.B. Since 1972, Maria Valtorta’s mortal remains rest in a Chapel of the Servite Cloister adjacent to the Santissima Basilica of Florence, Italy.

(This presentation was prepared at the C.R.M.V. [Center for Research on Maria Valtorta] founded in 1985 by Prof. Leo A. Brodeur Ph.D., D.Sc. Hum., of the University of Sherbrooke, Quebec, Canada.)

Available from:
The Blue Army (AMI Press)
P.O. Box 976
Washington, N.J.  07882
Poem of the Man-God Bishop Imprimatur

Bishop Roman Danylak
Titular Bishop of Nyssa
Toronto/Rome

AMOR CHRISTI

This testimonial has been several years in the making. My first was the canonical and theological defense of the Poem of the Man-God in 1991 in response to some of the canonical and theological problems raised by various authors with this principal work of Maria Valtorta. Subsequently, I have written several commendations for individual publications about the writings of Maria.

As a priest and bishop of the Catholic Church, I have learned to breathe with the ‘two lungs of Christianity’, east and west. I was born and baptized in the Byzantine Ukrainian Catholic Church, and raised in the traditions of the Church of the east. The daily prayer of the eastern fathers is my daily fare. My theological, philosophical, and canonical formation came from the schools of the west. Reading the texts of the Poem of the Man-God, or the Gospel as revealed to Maria Valtorta, again and again I experienced the literary richness of this Life of Christ by a master craftsman: the factual accuracy of her descriptions of the geography and the scenes of Israel and the events of the Gospel. She narrates a story that includes a cast of hundreds of apostles, disciples, friends and enemies of Christ. She weaves the masterful tapestry of the life and drama of our Divine Savior, and His Blessed Mother, against the background of the history and topography of Israel and Palestine of the first century of the Christian era, as a faithful and accurate chronicler of the divine drama of salvation history. We find many of these names recounted in the voluminous liturgical books of the Byzantine Church and the writings of the early Church Fathers.

- Who wishes to come to know Christ and His Blessed Mother, the sublime pedagogy of the Divine Teacher as He proclaims the gospel of salvation and forms this motley band of fishermen, a tax collector, and a converted zealot healed of leprosy, as He proclaims the sublime yet simple teachings of the Kingdom of God;
- Who wants to begin to understand the mystery of salvation and redemption of mankind through the passion and resurrection of Jesus Christ, God and Man;
- Who wants to come to know the face and the heart of the Father;
- Who wants to discover the truth of the Church of Jesus Christ;

Such a one will find an admirable guide and mentor in this monumental work of Maria Valtorta. St. John wrote in his gospel: “There is much else besides that Jesus did. If all of it were put in writing, I do not think the world itself would contain the books which would have to be written.” (Jn 21, 25) This major work of Maria Valtorta, the Poem of the Man-God, is the Gospel expanded, and with her other writings, is in perfect consonance with the canonical Gospels, with the traditions and the magisterium of the Catholic Church.

Dated at Rome/Toronto, June 24, 2001
The Feast of the Nativity of St. John the Baptist and Precursor

† Roman Danylak, S.T.L., J.U.D.
This is the Voice of the Teacher

“It roars and caresses. It roars when it is addressed to those who do not want to be converted. It caresses when it speaks to those who, though imperfect, have the ‘good will’ to find God and his Word and, having found them, to sanctify themselves. For these it becomes the caress of a Friend and the blessing of Jesus.” Ref: PMG V5:923

“Unfortunately, the world does not want to be saved. Only one in a thousand will be willing to know Me, and only one in ten thousand will really follow Me. And I will say even more. I will not be known even by My most intimate friends; To know means to love with loyalty and virtue.” Ref: PMG Vol.1-46

As we enter into the period of the great tribulation, we need to hear the word of the Lord proclaimed clearly and forcefully like a clear trumpet. If the bugle’s sound is uncertain, who will get ready for the battle? (1 Cor 14:8). Who will be able to listen and act? Who will be able to say with Samuel, ‘Speak, Lord, for your servant is listening?’ (1 Sam 3:9)

Harden not your heart and be open to the voice of the Holy Spirit prepare your soul now for the coming of the Lord

Samuel’s call from God

“Speak Lord, for your servant is listening”
Ref: 1Samuel 3:8

It is written in the prophets: “They shall all be taught by God.” Everyone who listens to my Father and learns from him comes to me.” John 6:41-51
Introduction

The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series reveals the journey of the soul from the beginning of creation to its end where God the Father reveals, in great detail, His Divine plan of salvation that leads the soul back to God.

Through the wisdom and guidance of the Holy Spirit we will see and understand more clearly the beginning of time and how it projects like reflecting mirrors into the future, that not only leads to the events in which we are living in, but also, the events that lead to the end of time as we know it. Are we in fact entering into the last days that precede the second coming of the Son of Man?

The Alpha and Omega of Creation is a compilation of teachings from: Sacred Scripture, the Catechism of the Catholic Church, Saints, Theologians, and the Prophets of our times. Once you combine these teachings, with the current events of the world, you can see more clearly what the Holy Spirit has been trying to tell mankind for so many years. Unfortunately, mankind is too busy with the issues of the world to listen to the spiritual inspirations from the Holy Spirit. The Lord has warned us about the times we are living in, for as it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man.

When Jesus asked the apostles, who do you say that I am? Only Simon could answer this question, and he said: You are the Messiah, the Son of the living God. Jesus said to him in reply: Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah. For flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but my heavenly Father. And so I say to you, you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of the nether world will not prevail against it. I will give you the keys to the kingdom of heaven. Whatever you bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven and whatever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

When Christ said to Simon, And I say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build my Church, he meant that through Christ, the rock, He would build the faith that Peter confesses, and on Peter’s words, You are the Christ, the Son of the living
God, I will build my Church. For you are Peter, and the name Peter comes from “petra,” the word for “rock,” and not vice versa. “Peter” comes, therefore, from petra, just as “Christian” comes from Christ.

Christ is petra the rock; he is the source of sacred tradition and teaching that the Church will proclaim to the world. The teachings of Christ will never change; these teachings are the same today as they were when Christ taught them. This is the rock; this is the foundation of our faith, the cornerstone. If you disagree or do not accept these teachings, you cannot be considered as a member of His Church, the Catholic Church. Peter has been chosen by God because of his faith, to bring these teachings, the good news, to the world.

Before the apostles could begin the process of building the Church they had to wait for the outpouring of the Holy Spirit, which is celebrated, by the Church, on Pentecost Sunday. The fact that it was the Church that received the keys of the kingdom of God is clear from what the Lord says elsewhere to all the apostles: Receive the Holy Spirit, adding immediately, whose sins you forgive, they are forgiven, and whose sins you retain, they are retained.

Because the apostles were hand picked by Christ and taught by him, these teachings are called public revelation. Public revelation would come to an end with the death of the last apostle, John, the beloved.

The Bible is the word of God and is known as public revelation. The Church has always taught and continues to proclaim that God’s revelation was brought to completion in Jesus Christ, who is the fullness of that revelation, and that ‘no new public revelation is to be expected before the glorious manifestation of our Lord.’ (Dei Verbum 4).

Jesus has given us his Church which teaches and protects the sacred tradition, and teachings of Christ. Even though Christ ascended into heaven, he stayed with us in the miracle of love, the Holy Eucharist. However, the body of the Church could not be established until the descent of the Holy Spirit. It is through the power of the Holy Spirit that the hearts and minds of the faithful are opened to the true meaning of the teachings of Christ. When the faithful come together, with the same spirit, and rest on the foundation, the rock of Christ, then we have the fullness of faith and the body of the Church. It is through the Holy Spirit that we grow in spirituality. This growth is essential, if we are to be prepared spiritually for the second coming of Christ.

God did not stop speaking to his people with the death of the last apostle, John, the beloved disciple. Public revelation was completed with John’s death, but God continues to speak to us today. How does he speak to his elect? Through his prophets, and when they speak, the message is called private revelation. Sometimes the message is very painful and frightening, just like it was to the apostles, but God wants his people to be aware of these events so when they begin to unravel, they will be prepared spiritually and mentally to remain strong in the faith until the end!

Private revelations are approved by the Church when they reveal truth and are supported by the gospel. If revelations do not meet the criteria of truth and are not supported by the gospel, then they are considered as a false teaching, and categorized as a heresy. Private revelation is the work of the Holy Spirit that increases both wisdom and knowledge, while increasing the spiritual growth of the faithful that leads to the fullness of faith in the Word of God.

The Church also teaches that one may or may not choose to believe or accept private revelations; some may say, they are not necessary to receive the fullness of faith. Public revelation must be accepted if one considers himself to be a Catholic.
However, if private revelation is the work of the Holy Spirit, which reveals truth and is supported by the Gospel, then it would be a great loss to one’s spiritual growth, if he stifles the workings of the Holy Spirit by not accepting His teachings.

Every day we are faced with the option of accepting or rejecting the inspirations of the Holy Spirit. We can say “Yes” or “No.” Remember, the Magnificat of the Blessed Mother when the angel Gabriel said to Mary, “Hail, favored one! The Lord is with you for you have found favor with God. You will conceive in your womb and bear a son, and you shall name him Jesus. But Mary said to the angel, ‘How can this be, since I have no relations with a man?’ The angel answered, ‘And the Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you.’ Mary answered, ‘May it be done to me according to your word.’ Then the angel departed,” (Ref: Luke 26-38) It is in our yes that the Holy Spirit will overshadow us and fill us with wisdom and truth.

The more we say “No” to the Holy Spirit, the narrower our spiritual vision becomes. Say “No” enough times and we can become spiritually blind. How are we to recognize the signs of the times when we are spiritually blind?

Unfortunately, such attitudes are real obstacles to hearing the Word of the Lord and Our Lady.

Especially in times of tribulation like ours, we need to hear the word of the Lord proclaimed clearly and forcefully like a clear trumpet. If the bugle’s sound is uncertain, who will get ready for the battle? (1 Cor 14:8). Who will be able to listen and act? Who will be able to say with Samuel, Speak, Lord, for your servant is listening? (1 Sam 3:9)

The foundation of the Catholic faith is truth which can only come from the Word of God. However, because we have blocked private revelation from being part of the deposit of faith, we have separated the Holy Spirit from the Church. The sacred scriptures are not meant to be understood by intellectual knowledge because every word of the scripture is spiritual and can only be understood by the power of the Holy Spirit.

If the Word of God cannot be protected from being changed because human will is free and translations were not always handled by spiritually awakened people, who thus were also able to err, you can understand that this is the reason for New revelations which time after time had to correct the distortions, so that the Word of God would be able to lay claim to the pure truth.

Our Lord will now speaks to priest about private revelation (Ref: VR 28) “When the Word was made flesh, the world did not know Him. Even when He went to His own people, they did not accept Him... In our times He has made Himself accessible to every human being but many have ignored His ways and sayings. There is no difference between the way the world was then and the way it is today; rejection and disbelief is what they carry in their hearts.

Our Lord asks His shepherds: ‘What have you done with Scriptures?’ Scriptures are a mirror that reflect Me; how is it, if you say you know the Scriptures, you do not recognize My speech? How is it you so easily contradict the truth? I tell you, if you do not recognize Me in My sayings now, it is simply that you do not know nor understand the Scriptures that are a key of the Holy Spirit. If some of you say: ‘we do not need this prophetic revelation, we are not obliged to listen to it or read it because Scriptures are enough for us and we can learn all knowledge from them;’ I ask you in your incredulity:

‘Do you know why you do not believe and do you know why you are so indifferent and determined to close your heart? Do you know why you do not seek anything beyond it?’ It is because you have not the Holy Spirit who could have raised you from darkness into His Light enlightening your soul to see the Son together with the Father manifesting themselves to you; the Holy Spirit would have breathed in you a resurrection breath invigorating you, giving you life in Me.
Can a soul who is dead understand Scriptures and put them into practice if he is not alive? If you would have understood the Scriptures that are as a mirror, reflecting My Image, you would not have said: ‘Scriptures are enough for me.’ No, My friend, Scriptures are not enough if you do not possess the Holy Spirit. It is through the Light of the Holy Spirit that Revelation can be understood and all that seemed then impenetrable mysteries in Scriptures, and sealed, would become knowable and clear because the key of knowledge would be given to you by the Spirit.’ (November 13, 2001)

Later on, in another call, Christ asks His shepherds: ‘When in your days I am speaking and the shepherds are not listening and do not believe I am intervening they are as Scriptures say: ‘our watchmen are blind, they notice nothing, they all go their own way, each after his own interest.’” (August 7, 2002)

It is their voice, then, we must recognize in this psalm. Their longing has never come to an end in the saints, nor does it end even now in “the Body of Christ, the Church” (Col 1,18)

Thus, it is through the power of the Holy Spirit that the children of God could understand the Scriptures and Parables that Jesus taught. (Ref: Matthew 13:10-17)

It is very dangerous when the Word of the Lord gets wrongly interpreted, when the meaning of the Word is misinterpreted and then used as a foundation again. For then the adversary of the Lord will have easy access by confusing people’s thoughts more than ever and distancing them ever further from the truth. No-one will ever be able to quote a Word from the Scriptures which prove that the Father will never speak to His children again because He has already declared His will in the Scriptures. There are no Words which could give people the right to deny new Words of love by God. There is no Word which would deny New Revelations by God. For God would never have spoken such a word, because only God knows that man requires His Word time and again in order to reach the objective of becoming children of God.

Do you think Almighty God and Father would not warn his children if, in fact, the world was about to come to an end? Did he not tell Noah to build an Ark because he was going to destroy all living things on earth! Jesus always told his apostles what was going to happen before it happened. Can you imagine what would have happened to the faith of the Apostles if Jesus did not tell them, in advance, about the events of Holy Thursday night? They may not have understood the meaning of what our Lord had revealed to them until his passion and death were over, but when they had a chance to collect themselves, they understood all that was revealed to them.

The Holy Spirit is telling mankind about the seriousness of the events that are taking place before our very eyes, and that the end of time as we know it is about to come to an end. Unfortunately, man continues to say “No” and live each day in spiritual blindness.

However, when you say “Yes” to the Holy Spirit, your eyes are opened and you see the fullness of truth. What is truth, especially in a world like ours? Jesus tells us, “I am the way, the truth, and the life.” If you cannot recognize the truth, how is one to tell you about the truth!

Jesus spoke to the Jews who had believed him, “If you abide in my word, you are truly my disciples, and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.” (Ref John 8:31-32) Free from what? Free from error. Errors are the barriers that separate us from the Truth.

By making a separation between public and private revelation means that the Church has separated itself from the Holy Spirit and refuses to accept the revelations given by the Spirit. Thus, all truth within the church is understood by using the intellect. The intellect is under the influence of the advisory of God and is always wrapped in pride
and arrogance. As a result, the Church has become a source of many misguided teachings and errors because of its separation from the Holy Spirit and his works.

The Lord has mentioned this problem in the scriptures as well as in prophesies when he said, “There are two events that have to be revealed before the world can come to an end. The first is contained in John 6: 41-45: God the Father will teach His children and lead them to His beloved Son. When the Father speaks, His Words are like reflecting mirrors that project into the future. This is the future! Why is God teaching and what is He teaching? He is teaching because the whole Truth has to be revealed before the end can take place, and because the church has separated itself from the Holy Spirit who has been revealing the truth for many, many years.

However, truth is very difficult to accept because it can shake the very foundation of one’s faith. The Lord points this out in the Book of Revelation 11:7-11: The voice that I had heard from heaven spoke to me again and said, “Go, take the scroll that lies open in the hand of the angel who is standing on the sea and the land.” So I went up to the angel and told him to give me the small scroll. He said to me, “Take and swallow it. It will turn your stomach sour, but in your mouth it will taste as sweet as honey.” I took the small scroll from the angel’s hand and swallowed it. In my mouth it was like sweet honey, but when I had eaten it, my stomach turned sour. Then someone said to me, “You must prophesy again about many peoples, nations, tongues, and kings.”

The scroll in this verse is the Word of God, which tastes like honey when you hear and study it, but when it begins to mix with misguided teachings and errors, it turns sour. That’s because truth and error cannot coexist together.

Let’s look at this a little deeper; the angel said to John, “When you eat this, it will turn your stomach sour.” How can this be when John was taught by Christ? It is not the person John that the angel is referring to, it’s who John represents – the Church. It’s the church that is harboring many errors.

However, error is a barrier that keeps us from accepting the truth that is being sent by God. As long as the church stays within the walls of the New Jericho (Vatican of Rome) and hold on to misguided teachings we cannot become enlightened. Satan does not want us to know the truth because he knows that pure truth cannot be received until one liberates himself from error.

The truth that is being revealed by God the Father will taste like honey but will quickly turn sour when it mixes with the misguided teachings that we have been holding on to for many years. God the Father is speaking (Ref: BD No. 2372): “However, the more willing a human being is to walk the right path, to live in accordance with divine will, the more certainly God will guide him towards spiritual knowledge and understanding, it just takes a long time to remove those obstructions which make it impossible to achieve pure truth.

And this elimination of wrong from right has to take place. Error has to be separated from truth otherwise people cannot find a correct concept of God, Whose essence is of such perfection that everything which testifies of Him also has to be perfect. However, false teachings will never reveal God’s essence but forever mirror a distorted image of God.”

Love is the Pathway to Receiving Total Truth

You must cling to the Truth always. God has revealed the Truth through His Prophets. Do not turn your backs on the Truth because if you do, you will embrace false doctrine and, mistakenly, believe that it will unlock the gates to your inheritance.
If God the Father is revealing the whole truth, does that mean that the whole truth is above the scriptures? No, it is the scriptures. The reason you cannot see this truth is because the truth you are holding on to is in fact error. But as long as you continue to cling to this error then it becomes very difficult for the Holy Spirit to reveal the absolute truth to you. Did the Apostles know the whole truth? Yes, they knew everything but were instructed by Christ to teach the two commandments of love.

First: Mark 12:30 The Greatest Commandment – You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength.

Second: John 14:31 The New Commandment – love one another. As I have loved you, so you also should love one another. This is how all will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.

The two commandments of love, understood properly, lead the soul to total truth. However, to this day many have not understood these commandments. You can always tell because most people say that the second commandment of love is the most difficult to do because there are so many people in the world that are not easy to love, and to make it more difficult, we are to love our enemies as well. What we don’t realize is that the second commandment of love is impossible to do unless you fully understand the first commandment of love.

Let’s begin: every person is made up of a body, soul, and spirit. The soul is a spirit when it was uniquely created by God and contains the full nature of God. Once the spirit enters the body, it becomes the soul which gives life to the body. The spirit that is attached to the soul is the spiritual spark of God that leads the soul, during its earthly life, back to God from where it originally came from.

Although the spiritual spark rest dormant in every person it must first be awakened to life, the relationship with the eternal Father-Spirit must be established, before it can express itself. And when this bond is established, the spiritual spark will come alive when the human being lives a life of love. In the early stages of human development the soul is preoccupied with the demands and needs of the body, for example, the need for food, water, shelter, clothing, and a means to support itself etc. During this phase the soul is without life because the spiritual spark has not been activated.

Matthew 17:20 "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible to you."

The mountain in this parable is you! And with the faith of a mustard seed you need to move the soul (you) from focusing on the needs of the body and turn to the light of God. The faith of the mustard seed represents your free will and your desire to be loved by God, your desire to turn away from sin, and your desire to know God. Does this sound familiar to you? This is the same faith the people had when they wanted to be baptized by John the Baptist. Unfortunately, the church put so much emphasis on the external celebration that they missed the real baptism. If the baptism of water removed original sin and all sins then it would have been a huge error if Jesus allowed Himself to be baptized. The only reason Jesus allowed baptism with water was to support the words of John, knowing, that it was only a symbol of the peoples commitment to surrender their will to God and would do no harm. The real baptism took place when Jesus came out of the water, it was then that the skies were opened and the voice of the Father said, “This is my beloved son in whom I am well pleased.” (Ref: Matt 3:17) The very moment those words were spoken, was the moment all were baptized because the word of God is the life giving water that gives life to the soul. They were all baptized by
the Holy Spirit and once the Holy Spirit entered the soul the spiritual Spark within each person was now activated.

Once activated, the spirit of God now begins the healing process of the soul from within and guides the soul in how to live according to God’s will. This is when the outward signs of baptism begin to take place. Baptism by water has had little or no external signs that show the workings of the Holy Spirit in a person’s life.

Once the soul begins to grow in God’s love, it has to make room to receive more love. In other words, it has to die to self by surrendering its hops and dreams, its faults and failures, what it has done and what it has failed to do, its nothingness and misery, all these things are the true you. God will accept your gift of self and will fill the void with his love.

Once the spiritual Spark within you has become active and you have God’s love within your heart, you begin the process of spiritualizing the flesh so that the body and the soul are working together to do God’s will. Now you can live the new commandment of love because the love that you offer your neighbor is the perfect and holy love of God.

God the Father is speaking - Love and Suffering Purify the Soul: “Love should be the driving force for all your deeds and failings, then you will always do My will, you will work with love and thereby also attain the strength needed by your soul for your path of earthly life. The soul is meant to mature fully, that is, it is meant to push away all impurities it is still burdened with, it is meant to become translucent so it is able to accept My love’s emanation of light which signifies strength and bliss for the soul. But My ray of love cannot penetrate it if the soul is still surrounded by dense layers, by impure longings and instincts, by all kinds of vices, by low characteristics such as pride, anger, vindictiveness, by any kind of unkindness.

The soul has to try to free itself from all these faults and longings, and the means for this are love and suffering. **The impurities dissolve through deeds of love, but the soul will also be released from them through suffering, and it can be ever more illuminated by My love and mature until it has become completely translucent, and then it need not fear death anymore, because then it can enter the kingdom of light, because its earthly progress has not been in vain since it has reached its goal on earth: the transformation of itself into love.** And therefore you will understand that My commandments of love are of utmost importance, that they have to be fulfilled, that your life on earth has to be a life of love if it is to be successful for you. You are only on earth for the maturity of your soul which, at the start of its incarnation as a human being, is still without love, although I have provided it with a spark of love which can ignite and change the soul’s still imperfect state until it is close to perfection. But the person also has to muster the will to live a life of love. He has to listen to his inner voice which constantly urges him to act with love. He has to perform deeds of love or his soul won’t change but will keep its lowly attributes and is then in danger of entering the kingdom of the beyond in a completely immature state, which means, that it will still have to go through torments of purification there in order to be able to enjoy happiness one day.

Only love will release it from all impure attributes, only love will crystallize it and it will push all impurities away from itself, or it will have to accept much suffering during its earthly life which can also mature the soul, because this calms it down and gradually also ignites the spark of love within itself, and then love and suffering work together and achieve the soul’s maturity. And the human being should always reject his selfish love and give love to his neighbor. Then he will change quickly, for only unselfish neighborly love is the true, divine love which I demand, which the soul has to change into by itself
during its earthly progress as a human being if it wants to attain eternal life. And therefore My divine commandments of love always have to be emphasized as the most important, for only love has the redeeming strength, only love will be able to achieve the soul’s transformation. Only through deeds of love will it mature and become bright and clear, so that My emanation of love will find no more obstacles, so that I can then make it blissfully happy as in the beginning, because through love it will find union with Me, which is its purpose and goal of earthly progress.” Ref: BD 8113 01.03.1962

The more you practice neighborly love, the greater will be your transformation into the Divine Will of God. As soon as you have separated yourself from the adversary of the Lord and seriously strive towards the love of God, His Word will also be heard within you, albeit very quietly at first as the voice of conscience, yet you will be able to hear it increasingly more distinctly if only you hand yourself over to the Lord, the louder His voice will sound in you, and the belief in His speaking to you can also enable you to consciously expect it.

You will hear the Lord speak to you. It entirely depends on your soul’s degree of maturity; it entirely depends on your degree of love, as to how you will hear the Lord and His Word. And since you, as belonging to the Lord, are constantly ascending, The Word of the Lord will not exclude you.

Once the Lord begins to speak to you, you must move the intellect aside in order to receive spiritual knowledge. This spiritual knowledge is the river of life giving water that gives life and nourishment to the soul. The more you allow the Word of God to influence your life and to grow in the love and wisdom of God, the more you can go to the table of the Lord and he will break bread with you. When you reach this point, you are living the Parable of the Last Supper that has been forgotten because so much emphasis is placed on external formalities.

Jesus will now explain the Parable of the Last Supper: (BD No. 0764 of 01/29/1939 taken from book 16 and BD No. 8568) Jesus is speaking: “I cannot enter into unity with you until you have shaped yourselves into love. Only love establishes the union with Me, and only then can I take supper with you, I can satisfy you with the bread of heaven, with My Word, with My flesh and My blood. My instituted Words 'This do in remembrance of Me' were a request that My disciples should give in the same way as I had given them, because what I gave them, bread and wine, they had received abundantly from Me, for I taught them and gave them knowledge. I had offered them My Word in all fullness and now they were meant to spread My Gospel throughout the world. They were to pass on My Word so that people would receive knowledge of Me, so that they would not forget about Me, because humanity had to be informed of Me and My act of Salvation as it could only attain beatitude through its faith in Me. Hence by way of these instituted Words 'This do in remembrance of Me' I gave My disciples the direct task of offering their fellow human beings My Word, the bread of life, the manna, which comes from heaven. And as a sign of the urgently required spiritual food by people I offered them earthly bread and earthly wine.

My disciples, however, understood Me because I often spoke in parables to them since My spirit enabled them to understand it. I handed the bread to them with the Words 'This is My flesh', and I let them drink the wine with the Words 'This is My blood.' and meant by this My Word with its strength, because I Myself Am the Word that became flesh for you humans.

The significance of taking supper with Me, of being nourished by Me Myself with My Word which alone is the right food for the soul, which helps the soul to come alive, has been completely misinterpreted by people who were satisfied by merely walking to the table of the Lord figuratively. With such external actions they can never induce Me
to unite with them if the first requirement, that the person shapes himself into love, has not been met. Secondly, the human being has to desire with all his heart to hear My Word, only then will he desire to be fed, and only then can he be offered nourishment for his soul. Then you 'eat My flesh and drink My blood'. The Word that became flesh gives itself to him, and then food for his soul will flow to him in abundance, because his hunger and thirst will then be satisfied at My table, he will be My guest, and I Myself will take supper with him, as I have promised.

When I descended to earth 'the Word Itself' came to earth. I brought to people what they urgently needed, and because I only lived on earth for a limited time I trained My disciples Myself by revealing Myself to them through the Word and giving them the office to convey My Word to people on My behalf. By living in accordance with My Word people would get into a position to enter into closest contact with Me and desire from Me the bread from heaven, flesh and blood are something alive, and only something alive can awaken your dead souls. Even My Word can be mere dead letters to you, and then it will not be able to bring you to life. Only when you enjoy My flesh and blood, only when you allow yourselves to be refreshed by Me at My table, will you feel the life and the strength of what I offer you Myself, and then you will eat My flesh and drink My blood, and you will recover and live eternally.

But the significance you humans have ascribed to My Words cannot satisfy any thoughtful person who is seriously striving for truth, for it causes confusion and darkness, it gives no light. The compliance with external formalities will not result in spiritual progress. But where heartfelt love for Me and other people has created the conditions, the connection with Me will be established and the process of communion need not be an empty formality any longer, because then I Myself will give nourishment to the soul, and because it will now be revitalized by My Word which will give it consciousness of life, because My flesh and My blood will be enjoyed in truth by the person with whom I can take true Communion."

Only when you fully understand the parable of the Last Supper – convert your heart to the Love of God, turn away from sin, and thirst for the word of God. Thus you will be in communion with God and He will break bread with you as He promised. Now you are ready to walk down the isle at mass and receive Him because the love for God in your heart is alive. Without this preparation, you are only receiving the Lord in your imagination, which is the main reason for so much lack of faith within the church.

God the Father is speaking: “You renounced all light, all realization. You don’t know anything about Me anymore, your God and Creator Who wants to be your Father; you don’t know anything about yourselves, what you were in the beginning, why you changed and for what purpose you live on earth. And this is an ignorant state which cannot be called divine. You, however, are of divine origin, you once were perfect and thus you also were illuminated, you knew of everything, of My overwhelming love which constantly permeated you and prevented the said darkness, so that you brightly and clearly understood all correlations and possessed the knowledge which only a divine being was able to possess. You voluntarily relinquished this knowledge, the light, the realization, and fell into the dark stat, your concepts became confused, and you were no longer able to understand anything, neither yourselves nor the purpose of your existence nor the relationship with Me, with the One from Whose strength of love you emerged. You plunged into darkness, and the darkness will keep you imprisoned until you voluntarily desire My illumination of love again, which will also grant you a light of realization once more.

Can you comprehend the depth of My love which wants to grant everything to you again which you once renounced of your own free will? Can you therefore recognize
the tremendous value of My Word as the greatest gift of grace on My part which I impart to people in order to make their retransformation into love easy and possible? I Am speaking to you directly, I Am bridging the vast gulf which still exists between us and I Am sending a flow of grace from the kingdom of light onto earth, which is intended to irrigate and revitalize the extensive spiritual drought on the dark earth. I want to change the miserable state people live in and present them with the help to find their way out of the state of darkness by sending them a beacon of light if only they are willing to accept it and allow it to illuminate their future path of earthly life, so that they will find their goal for sure, which will only ever be in the light and never in darkness. It is a greater than great act of compassion which I bestow upon humanity that I offer those who once rejected the light of love, the same light of love again, that I send it to earth despite the fact that people don’t express any desire for it apart from a few, whom I use as go-between bearers so that they will carry the light where darkness still prevails.” Ref: BD No. 8568

As you can see, the pathway of Love will lead you to ‘total truth’ and from this point on as you go forward in this work you will enter into this truth. In order to receive spiritual knowledge and understanding, you must have a heartfelt love for God and a passion for truth. But be prepared, because truth is very powerful and can shake the very foundation of your faith. Going forward now our Lord will guide you into a whole new world where you will discover who you really are and why human life is so important for the soul. You will also discover the enormous love of God and all that He has done in order to guide you back to where you originally came from. You will discover the most amazing revelations given to the world about creation and God’s master plan of salvation. God the Father promised to reveal the whole truth before the end could take place and the teachings that are contained in this work are the revelations that God promised to reveal. They are freely given, and it is up to you as to whether you choose to accept them or not.
Catechism of the Catholic Church and Private Revelation
Ref: www.vatican.va/archive

GOD COMES TO MEET MAN

50 By natural reason man can know God with certainty, on the basis of his works. But there is another order of knowledge, which man cannot possibly arrive at by his own powers: the order of divine Revelation. Through an utterly free decision, God has revealed himself and given himself to man. This he does by revealing the mystery, his plan of loving goodness, formed from all eternity in Christ, for the benefit of all men. God has fully revealed this plan by sending us his beloved Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit.

THE REVELATION OF GOD

I. God Reveals His "Plan of Loving Goodness"

51 "It pleased God, in his goodness and wisdom, to reveal himself and to make known the mystery of his will. His will was that men should have access to the Father, through Christ, the Word made flesh, in the Holy Spirit, and thus become sharers in the divine nature." 2

52 God, who "dwells in unapproachable light", wants to communicate his own divine life to the men he freely created, in order to adopt them as his sons in his only-begotten Son. By revealing himself God wishes to make them capable of responding to him, and of knowing him and of loving him far beyond their own natural capacity.

53 The divine plan of Revelation is realized simultaneously "by deeds and words which are intrinsically bound up with each other" and shed light on each other. It involves a specific divine pedagogy: God communicates himself to man gradually. He prepares him to welcome by stages the supernatural Revelation that is to culminate in the person and mission of the incarnate Word, Jesus Christ.

St. Irenaeus of Lyons repeatedly speaks of this divine pedagogy using the image of God and man becoming accustomed to one another: the Word of God dwelt in man and became the Son of man in order to accustom man to perceive God and to accustom God to dwell in man, according to the Father’s pleasure.

II. The Stages of Revelation

In the beginning God makes himself known

54 "God, who creates and conserves all things by his Word, provides men with constant evidence of himself in created realities. and furthermore, wishing to open up the way to heavenly salvation - he manifested himself to our first parents from the very beginning." 6 He invited them to intimate communion with himself and clothed them with resplendent grace and justice.

55 This revelation was not broken off by our first parents' sin. "After the fall, (God) buoyed them up with the hope of salvation, by promising redemption; and he has never ceased to show his solicitude for the human race. For he wishes to give eternal life to all those who seek salvation by patience in well-doing." 7

Even when he (Adam) disobeyed you and lost your friendship you did not abandon him to the power of death. . . Again and again you offered a covenant to man.

The covenant with Noah

56 After the unity of the human race was shattered by sin God at once sought to save humanity part by part. The covenant with Noah after the flood gives expression to the principle of the divine economy toward the "nations", in other words, towards men
grouped "in their lands, each with (its) own language, by their families, in their nations". 9

57 This state of division into many nations, each entrusted by divine providence to the guardianship of angels, is at once cosmic, social and religious. It is intended to limit the pride of fallen humanity 10 united only in its perverse ambition to forge its own unity as at Babel. 11 But, because of sin, both polytheism and the idolatry of the nation and of its rulers constantly threaten this provisional economy with the perversion of paganism. 12

58 The covenant with Noah remains in force during the times of the Gentiles, until the universal proclamation of the Gospel. 13 The Bible venerated several great figures among the Gentiles: Abel the just, the king-priest Melchisedek - a figure of Christ - and the upright "Noah, Daniel, and Job". 14 Scripture thus expresses the heights of sanctity that can be reached by those who live according to the covenant of Noah, waiting for Christ to "gather into one the children of God who are scattered abroad". 15

59 In order to gather together scattered humanity God calls Abram from his country, his kindred and his father’s house, 16 and makes him Abraham, that is, "the father of a multitude of nations". "In you all the nations of the earth shall be blessed." 17

60 The people descended from Abraham would be the trustee of the promise made to the patriarchs, the chosen people, called to prepare for that day when God would gather all his children into the unity of the Church. 18 They would be the root on to which the Gentiles would be grafted, once they came to believe. 19

61 The patriarchs, prophets and certain other Old Testament figures have been and always will be honored as saints in all the Church’s liturgical traditions.

**God forms his people Israel**

62 After the patriarchs, God formed Israel as his people by freeing them from slavery in Egypt. He established with them the covenant of Mount Sinai and, through Moses, gave them his law so that they would recognize him and serve him as the one living and true God, the provident Father and just judge, and so that they would look for the promised Saviour. 20

63 Israel is the priestly people of God, "called by the name of the LORD", and "the first to hear the word of God". 21 The people of "elder brethren" in the faith of Abraham.

64 Through the prophets, God forms his people in the hope of salvation, in the expectation of a new and everlasting Covenant intended for all, to be written on their hearts. 22 The prophets proclaim a radical redemption of the People of God, purification from all their infidelities, a salvation which will include all the nations. 23 Above all, the poor and humble of the Lord will bear this hope. Such holy women as Sarah, Rebecca, Rachel, Miriam, Deborah, Hannah, Judith and Esther kept alive the hope of Israel's salvation. The purest figure among them is Mary. 24

**III. Christ Jesus -- "Mediator and Fullness of All Revelation"** 25

**God has said everything in his Word**

65 "In many and various ways God spoke of old to our fathers by the prophets, but in these last days he has spoken to us by a Son." 26 Christ, the Son of God made man, is the Father’s one, perfect and unsurpassable Word. In him he has said everything; there will be no other word than this one. St. John of the Cross, among others, commented strikingly on Hebrews 1:1-2:
In giving us his Son, his only Word (for he possesses no other), he spoke everything to us at once in this sole Word - and he has no more to say. . . because what he spoke before to the prophets in parts, he has now spoken all at once by giving us the All Who is His Son. Any person questioning God or desiring some vision or revelation would be guilty not only of foolish behavior but also of offending him, by not fixing his eyes entirely upon Christ and by living with the desire for some other novelty.27

There will be no further Revelation

66 "The Christian economy, therefore, since it is the new and definitive Covenant, will never pass away; and no new public revelation is to be expected before the glorious manifestation of our Lord Jesus Christ."28 Yet even if Revelation is already complete, it has not been made completely explicit; it remains for Christian faith gradually to grasp its full significance over the course of the centuries.

67 Throughout the ages, there have been so-called "private" revelations, some of which have been recognized by the authority of the Church. They do not belong, however, to the deposit of faith. It is not their role to improve or complete Christ’s definitive Revelation, but to help live more fully by it in a certain period of history. Guided by the Magisterium of the Church, the sensus fidelium knows how to discern and welcome in these revelations whatever constitutes an authentic call of Christ or his saints to the Church.

Christian faith cannot accept "revelations" that claim to surpass or correct the Revelation of which Christ is the fulfillment, as is the case in certain non-Christian religions and also in certain recent sects which base themselves on such "revelations".

Questions:

Can we deny the pleasure of God to restore the picture of His Divine Charity in the century in which Mankind is hurling itself towards the Abyss of darkness and horror; can we forbid God from doing this? Can we perhaps say we do not need God’s Divine Charity of light, voices, and invitations from Above? Where does it say in the Bible that the Father will never speak to His children again because He has already declared His will in Scripture? Where in Scripture are the words which would deny new Words of love by God? How do we separate truth from error and even the Scriptures without the workings of the Holy Spirit who speaks to us? Would a loving Father stay quiet when his children desire to hear from Him? Who are we to impose restrictions on God or deny Him to speak when and to whom He wants? How do you intend to interpret God’s promises, if you deny every “New Revelation?” By denying “New Revelations,” are we calling God a liar when He announces His ‘comforter’ who will guide us into truth? How can we be ‘children’ of God if we cannot recognize the Word’s of the Father when it is conveyed to us through His messengers? If the Word of God cannot be protected from changes because human will is free and translations were not always handled by spiritually awakened people, who thus were able to error, you can understand that this is the reason for “New Revelations” which time after time had to correct the distortions, so that the Word of God would be able to lay claim to the pure truth.

Jesus said, “The Truth will set you free”. Free from what exactly? From error, error is what blocks us from the Truth. God the Father will now answer these questions:
God the Father Speaks about Private Revelation

* MV Vol 5:951 * “If you object that the revelation was closed with the last Apostle, and there was nothing further to add, because the same Apostle says in Revelation: ‘If anyone adds anything to them, God will add to him every plague mentioned in the book’ (22:18) and that can be understood for all the Revelation, the last completion of which is the Revelation by John, I reply to you that with this work no addition was made to Revelation, but only the gaps, brought about by natural causes, and by supernatural will, were filled in. And if I wanted to take pleasure in restoring the picture of My Divine Charity, as a restorer of mosaics does replacing the tesserae (damaged or missing tiles), reinstating the mosaic in its complete beauty, and I have decided to do it in this century in which Mankind is hurling itself towards the Abyss of darkness and horror, can you forbid Me from doing so?

Can you perhaps say that you do not need it, you whose spirits are dull, weak, deaf to the lights, voices, and invitations from Above?

You ought really to bless Me for increasing with new lights the light that you have and that is no longer sufficient for you ‘to see’ your Saviour, To see the Way, the Truth, and the Life, and feel that spiritual emotion of the just of My time rise in you, attaining through this knowledge a renewal of your spirits in love, that would be your salvation, because it is an ascent towards perfection.

I do not say that you are ‘dead,’ but sleeping, drowsy: Like plants during their winter sleep. The divine Sun gives you its refulgence. Awake and bless the Sun that gives itself, receive it with joy so that It may warm you, from the surface to deep inside you, it may rouse you and cover you with flowers and fruits.

Rise. Come to My Gift. ‘Take and eat. Take and drink’ I said to the apostles.

If you only knew the gift of God and who it is that is saying to you: ‘give me drink,’ you would have been the one to ask, and he would have given you living water, I said to the Samaritan woman.”

**New Revelations** - BD No. 6038: “It is very dangerous when My Word gets wrongly interpreted, when the meaning of My Word becomes distorted and this misinterpretation is then used as a foundation again. For then My adversary will have easy access by confusing people’s thoughts more than ever and distance them ever further from the truth. No-one will ever be able to quote a Word from the Scriptures which prove that the Father will never speak to His children again because He has already declared His will in the Scriptures. There is no Word which could give people the right to deny new Words of love by God. There is no Word which would support the opponents of My New Revelations. For I would never have spoken such a word, because only I know that My living creations on earth will require My Word time and again in order to reach the objective of becoming My children.

I speak to people in different ways indeed, and therefore not every human being needs to hear My voice directly; yet if I didn’t speak to people time and again only few would, in fact, reach their goal. For without the working of My spirit people would be unable to think correctly, to separate truth from error and even to understand the Scriptures correctly. Thus I also address people when I teach them to think correctly and
establish the right goal for their feelings, but whatever a person thinks who is guided by My spirit he will also be able to voice it, and this communication through a human mouth is then likewise a revelation from Me, for then it is My Word which was imparted to the human being by My spirit. For I want to speak to people, and if someone willingly places himself at My disposal by wanting to proclaim My Word to people, then My Word will be voiced through this person’s mouth. Every true messenger of My Word offers Me the opportunity of revealing Myself anew.

And likewise, I can voice My Word when someone is willing to listen to Me, when a person attentively listens within himself and desires to be addressed by Me. Would a loving Father stay quiet when His child desires to hear Him? Does My love limit itself? Am I not a Lord of infinite riches which I Am constantly willing to bestow? Do you humans want to impose restrictions on Me or deny Me to speak when and to whom I want?

If you believe that I can be present with you, then you also have to believe that I will reveal Myself when I Am with you, and yet you want to argue that I speak to people who want to hear Me. But I have promised you My presence with the Words 'Whenever two or three of you come together in My name I Am there with you.' And what will you talk about then? Will you discuss worldly affairs?

No, you will make Me the subject of your conversation, you will speak righteously, and you will say what I put into your mouth, for I Myself will speak through you so that you recognize My presence. And thus I Myself will be wherever people unite to hear My Word, wherever I Am allowed to speak, wherever My spirit can work, and you humans will always receive the same Word since it is your desire to hear Me.

I know how much people need My Word, and therefore I will never stop conveying My Word to you, and I will enlighten people about error and misinterpretation of the Scriptures; I will impart My pure Gospel Myself to those who open themselves to Me, thereby wanting to be of service to Me and their fellow human beings. For I will bless every good will and every desire for truth, and My blessing consists of speaking to them Myself just as I once spoke to My disciples, and I will give all those who are able to hear Me the task to spread My pure Gospel, for I speak through them to everyone who wants to hear Me.

**New Revelations** - BD No. 6038: “It is very dangerous when My Word gets wrongly interpreted, when the meaning of My Word becomes distorted and this misinterpretation is then used as a foundation again. For then My adversary will have easy access by confusing people’s thoughts more than ever and distance them ever further from the truth. No-one will ever be able to quote a Word from the Scriptures which prove that the Father will never speak to His children again because He has already declared His will in the Scriptures. There is no Word which could give people the right to deny new Words of love by God. There is no Word which would support the opponents of My New Revelations. For I would never have spoken such a word, because only I know that My living creations on earth will require My Word time and again in order to reach the objective of becoming My children.

Then you would also comprehend the Bible words, the promises, which I Myself gave to you and which point out that I will reveal Myself to those who keep My commandments. So how do you intend to interpret My promises, if you deny every ‘New Revelation’? Do you want to call Me a liar when I announce My ‘comforter’ to you who will 'guide you into every truth.' How do you understand these Words which have to come to pass, because every promise I gave to people during My life on earth fulfills itself. And why do you not want to believe? Because your spirit is arrogant, because you lack inner life, spiritual awakening, and thus you believe that you are able to determine
and limit Me and My activity as it suits you. But you are mistaken, even if you believe
that you have acquired knowledge through your studies which entitles you to reject My
Word from above; you are spiritually arrogant and therefore you can never receive a
revelation from Me yourselves, because I only bestow My grace to the humble, and you
are lacking this humility. And thus you still walk in darkness, and you will not be able to
penetrate it since you avoid the light which could give you insight if you wanted to step
into its radiance.

My love for My living beings will never end, and hence I will never fail to speak to
you humans wherever the conditions to do so are met. And My Word will always sound
in those who are of good will, to whom the Father can speak to as His children and who
have a living faith in Me. And to them I will give evidence of myself, and My Own will
recognize My voice because I can be present with them. I can reveal myself to them as I
have promised.”

Reason for Profound Knowledge - BD No. 7023: “The deeper I guide you into
My eternal plan of Salvation the more valuable work you can accomplish, for you will
only be capable of serving your fellow human beings as a teacher if you possess much
knowledge yourselves. I educated My first disciples Myself and will also teach My last
disciples such that they will be able stand up for Me and My kingdom when it is
demanded of them, so that they then will be able to step forward when the faith in
teachings which cannot be verified has to be defended. For the time will come when
every religious doctrine will become under attack; the time will come when war will be
declared on all spirituality, when no existing spiritual movement will be spared being
attacked and slandered. And neither will it be difficult for My opponents to destroy the
foundation, for many are only built on sand, that is, their teachings cannot stand up to
contradictions, they can be pulled to pieces, and their adherents themselves will start to
doubt and very easily let go of them, unless they fanatically hold on to their school of
thought but without being able to endorse it with inner conviction. And then the truth,
too, will be fought against and action will also be taken against those of you who were
chosen and taught by Me as representatives of the truth which is conveyed to you by
Myself. You will also be drawn into this battle but your opponents will find it difficult to
bring you down because you will be able to defend the truth in line with your realization
and refute every objection, since you will be able to logically substantiate the more
profound correlations. This is why I guide you into My eternal plan of Salvation and thus
grant you the knowledge that entitles you to pit yourselves against your enemies. And
then you shall fight with the sword of your tongue.

Do you now understand why I keep transmitting the information from above to
you, why I let you have an insight into spiritual knowledge which is not denied to anyone
providing he only shapes himself such that he can be enlightened by My spirit? People’s
thinking has truly become confused; they are ensnared by a net of errors and lies and
can’t find their way through because they don’t have the will to do so. And precisely
this darkness will demonstrate itself when they seriously have to state their position in
regards to their faith, to their relationship to Me and to the act of Salvation. Then
everything will collapse like a house of cards, for the adversary will relentlessly pick
every single teaching to pieces or mock and ridicule everything which had been sacred to
people so far. My disciples, however, will not be afraid, they will courageously enter the
battle by giving full explanations, and this truly with substantial authority, because then
they will not be speaking, instead I Myself will speak. But these true fighters of Mine
must nevertheless have been educated by Me Myself, they must speak of their own
accord and use their own Words so as not to force people to believe. But even from the
adversary’s ranks they will be joined by fighters too who are impressed by their words
and unable to deny their validity. And thus one day the time will come when you will be able to use all your knowledge, and for this time I Am educating you and supply you with teaching material which not everyone can show and which, since it originates from Me, will not remain ineffective either. For I still want to help many people. However, whether they will accept this is up to their own free will, since I certainly allow unusual things to happen but always in a way that it will not compel them to believe. I will still pour out many blessings yet they must voluntarily be used."

God’s Word will be Eternally - BD No. 8522: “I have promised to stay with you until the end of the world. And My Word will be heard by you, My living creation, as a sign of My presence. The connection between your God and Creator of eternity and you, His beings having emerged from Him, will remain forever. My love for you will eternally express Itself by speaking to you, because since the beginning It found greatest pleasure in being able to be in touch with Its living creations through the Word, and because the happiness of all beings will also eternally consist of constantly receiving My strength of love, and this transmission of strength is expressing Itself through My directly imparted Word. I reveal Myself through the Word, I transfer My thoughts onto you and find My happiness by stimulating you to respond in kind, so that the dialogue between Father and child can take place, which in itself provides supreme beatitude.

The more perfect the being is, the more clearly it can hear My voice within its heart, which has to be spiritually understood insofar as that the being is moving within brightest realization, within the same will and the same thoughts as Mine, with Whom it is intimately united due to its perfection. Yet even a being with a lesser degree of maturity can still hear Me if, in awareness of itself, it establishes contact with Me. Nevertheless, the degree of happiness will be higher or lower respectively, for once it is united with Me again, the being will have come alive.... the state of death will have been overcome, which alone excludes the hearing of My Word. But only very few people know that their God and Creator would like to speak to them and that they could indeed hear Him if they lived a way of life in accordance with His will. Only few people experience the happiness of a direct communication and enter into a heartfelt relationship with Him. And if fellow human beings are given the knowledge of it they find it incredible and only laugh at those who tell them so.

Yet 'Heaven and earth shall pass away: but My Word shall not pass away.' And this promise of Mine, too, is usually interpreted differently in as much as you believe that the 'written Word' will be preserved unchanged. Yet even for this it is necessary that My Word be repeatedly conveyed to earth because human will does not retain anything unaltered and the purity of the once spoken Word will not remain guaranteed. But this promise of Mine has an even more profound significance still, 'My Word shall not pass away.' My Word will always and forever be heard by the spiritually tangible beings, My Word will always and forever give evidence of the bond of all created beings with Me, My living creations may always and forever be able to hear Me, for their happiness rests in the fact that they will be spoken to by Me directly, that they will always know of My will and harbor the same will within themselves, that they may associate with their God and Creator like children with their Father, that profound realization, supreme wisdom and truthful knowledge will permeate them and make them infinitely happy.

And all this is only the result of the dialogue with Me through the Word. If My Word could not be heard within all spiritual beings there could not be true life either, for only My Word is the life, the strength and also the happiness, or I would forever be a distant, inaccessible God for My living creations, with Whom there would be no reason to make contact and no effect could be recognized either. 'I will be with you until the end.' You will not be without Me and My presence anymore, unless you still belong to
My adversary into whose domain I will not intrude, instead you have to turn to Me voluntarily. But as soon as you have separated yourselves from him and seriously strive towards Me, My Word will also be heard within you, albeit very quietly at first as the voice of conscience, yet you will be able to hear it increasingly more distinctly if only you hand yourselves over to Me so that you are inwardly urged to speak to Me in thought. Then you will also receive an answer, only that you will not recognize it as such at first but regard it as your own thoughts. However, the more you withdraw from the world and look for Me, the louder My voice will sound in you, and the belief in My speaking to you can also enable you to consciously expect it.

And you will hear Me. It entirely depends on your soul’s degree of maturity, it entirely depends on your degree of love, how you will hear Me and My Word. And since you, as belonging to Me, are constantly ascending, My Word will not exclude you either. I will be and remain with you and always and forever speak to you, and you will become increasingly happier as a result of the constant dialogue with Me through My Word.

God Himself Conveys the Truth to People - BD No. 8599: “With immense happiness I convey the truth to you humans; with immense happiness I inform you of the true purpose of your existence, about the cause and ultimate goal of your life on this earth; for only if you are enlightened about it will you begin to live consciously and also strive towards the goal. Before that you are spiritually dead and every day is lost to you although it could, with the right will, lead you towards the goal. But you humans don’t want to believe that your God and Creator, your Father of eternity, is speaking to you Himself and that you therefore may also accept that the information is true. Nor do you consider that I Am a God of love and that love wants to give you everything you need in order to reach your goal on earth. And your goal is your final return to Me, from Whom you once emerged and voluntarily distanced yourselves. And therefore you also ought to know the circumstances relating to your earthly existence, furthermore, you ought to know how you should live your earthly life so that you can achieve success; for the whole of your earthly progress can also be to no avail and I want to prevent that. I Am the Light of eternity.

The light is brightly radiating. You yourselves are still walking in dark regions for you are completely ignorant and unaware. For this reason I want to let My light shine into this darkness and, truly, it will make you happy to receive the knowledge which corresponds to the truth; for you can also be wrongly educated by your fellow human beings who don’t have the right information themselves. But in that case the darkness surrounding you will not be penetrated because they are deceptive lights which don’t radiate brightness and only confuse your thinking. I instruct you gladly and you can receive an explanation about everything providing you meet My condition that you are serious about wanting to know the pure truth. You only have to muster this will and then entrust yourselves to Me Who, being Truth Himself, can also guide you into the truth. And truly, you will be taught and receive knowledge in abundance which will make you very happy. Everything will be comprehensible to you, every question will be answered and the light of day will be within you, you will have stepped out of the spiritual night and enjoy the light which illuminates your spirit. But you will only request the pure truth if love has been kindled in you. For love, light and truth belong together; one without the other is unthinkable. A heartless person will not ask for the truth from Me and will never ever ask for a light.

However, anyone who lives a life of love also wants to escape the darkness, and the fire of love emanates the light of wisdom, everyone who is lovingly active will become knowledgeable, for I Am Love Myself, and a person who consciously allows for it will be educated by Me through the spirit. And the more illuminating knowledge I can
bestow upon you, the more I delight in the spiritual state of people who have escaped the night and thereby also the prince of darkness, who would like to keep all people in spiritual darkness so that they will be unable to recognize Me, their God and Creator. But since I Am Love, since you all emerged from My love, I only ever want to make you happy. Yet this necessitates your unity with Me, it necessitates your will to draw close to Me again, and then you will also accept My gifts of grace, you will allow yourselves to be taught by Me and fulfill My will, which I proclaim to you through these instructions. Thus you voluntarily take the path which leads you back to Me, from Whom you once originated, because you already have a light within yourselves which illuminates the right path for you, since due to My instructions you have gained realization and know about the meaning and purpose of your earthly life. And the truth from Me will please you, you will request Me to speak to you if only you believe that I Am addressing you. And this belief will come alive in you through love. Thus you only need to live a life of selfless neighborly love and you will thereby intimately unite with Me, so that I can speak to you and guide you into the truth, as I have promised you.”

“He that hath My Commandments” - BD No. 7375 , John 14,21: “If you keep My commandments you will love Me and I will reveal Myself to you. And I will always reveal Myself to those who want to hear Me, I will never stay silent or leave you, because I love you and wish for nothing more dearly but to speak to you, to communicate with you and thereby reveal Myself to you as a loving Father Who has longed for His child ever since it deserted Me and fell away. My love for what has fallen has not diminished; hence I will do anything in order to call it back to Me. As soon as it hears My voice, as soon as it recognizes it as My voice and thus requests to be addressed by Me it will have already started on the path of return, it is already close to the Father’s heart, it only has to consciously try to establish contact with Me in order to definitely enter into union with Me and thereby regain the joys which it felt in the beginning.

Hence you, My beloved on earth, need only keep My commandments, that is, comply with My will, and you can at all times also be assured of hearing My Words, and then an abundance of grace will be at your disposal, for My speaking to you also signifies an influx of blessings which will help you to become perfect, to become blissfully happy, which will make it easy for you to travel the path of return to Me and reach the goal. But how few people believe that I would like to speak to them Myself, that they can hear Me if they wanted to, and that they only need to fulfill the conditions in order to hear My voice within themselves. And how few people recognize the voice of the Father Who speaks to them when My Word is conveyed to them through My messengers. And yet, they all want to be My 'children' but the voice of the 'Father' cannot be recognized by them because they are still distant from Me, because they deem My commandments difficult to fulfill and thus they have not yet attained the ability to hear My gentle voice within their hearts.

Nevertheless, I speak to people, and everyone can hear Me if only he believes in Me, fulfills My commandments of love for God and his neighbor and then quietly and devoutly listens within to what I want to say to him. And he will be able to hear Me and feel blissfully happy when the Father speaks to His child.”

Only God can Convey the Truth to a Person - BD No. 8757: “Let Me speak to you and accept My teachings. Believe that purest truth is imparted to you and therefore also pass it on with conviction, then you are true laborers in My vineyard, for humanity’s spiritual adversity requires the pure truth to be passed on to it. As long as people don’t recognize Me correctly, as long as they don’t have the right information about their God and Creator and His nature they will not strive towards Me either, for they will not
consider Me worth striving for as long as they don’t know that My nature is love, that I only ever give love and want to receive love. Nevertheless, in order to give love My nature has to be recognized as profoundly perfect, and a person also has to be able to feel My love which, in turn, is only possible if My living creations, you humans, open themselves and voluntarily hand themselves over to Me, so that My love can illuminate them and make them happy. And therefore you also ought to know that you are My living creations, which My greater than great love brought forth, you ought to know that you are the products of My will of love and My strength of love and that your basic nature is love too. But such knowledge can only be given to you by Me, Who knows everything. Hence you should let yourselves be taught by Me and also impart the same information to those who are not in contact with Me themselves. For all human beings shall know what they fundamentally are, and they all shall endeavor to reach their original starting point again, because then they will become infinitely happy.

Only when I Am recognized as the most perfect Being in infinity will love for Me ignite in people’s hearts, for then they will also know that I Am Love Myself, and love will press on towards love. But as long as people are not given the right explanation about My nature, as long as I Am presented as a condemning and wrathful God, they will not trustingly approach Me like children and therefore cannot learn anything about My love either. And even less will they give their love to Me, instead they will only ever fear Me and never establish the relationship of a child towards its Father. This, however, is what I require from you in order to be able to make you extremely happy with My love. Yet through My adversary’s influence My image is being distorted, and through My adversary’s influence the truth is also being undermined, combined with error or withheld from you, since people, who voluntarily belong to My adversary, will fight against the truth and thus advocate in the world supposed spiritual knowledge as truth which in reality should not be able to lay any such claim to it. And these are the people you should counteract, since you are trying to fulfill My will and want to be of service to Me in My vineyard. For you have received the pure truth from Me as the right seeds and you shall sow them into hearts which willingly open themselves, for the truth cannot be forcibly imparted to any person, it has to be lovingly offered and voluntarily accepted. But then it will also result in many blessings, insofar that people, who previously moved within dark regions because no light was as yet shining for them, will then be enlightened. I Am providing you humans with an ample amount of seeds which you should use to cultivate the fields so as to bring forth good fruit. Yet only I can grant you this precious knowledge. Only I can convey it to you, I alone Am the source from which the font of life arises, you can only get the correct nourishment from Me. But you, who are willing, can also give this sustenance to your fellow human beings, who just as urgently need good nourishment and a refreshing drink in order to continue their pilgrim’s journey on earth.

For you have to travel your earthly path for the purpose of maturing your souls. In earthly life you shall look for and find your God and Creator, and as Father of My children, the living creations having proceeded from Me. I will also allow Myself to be found by anyone who is sincerely striving towards Me. And once you have found Me, My love will constantly provide for you, you will be endowed with earthly and spiritual possessions, the spiritual possessions, however, entail knowledge about all spiritual occurrences which preceded your existence as a human being, and about My loving effort to guide you into supreme perfection. The spiritual possessions consist of a high level of realization, a light will be kindled in you which will shine far and wide and give you an insight again into regions which can only be made accessible to you in a spiritual way. And anyone who has the immense grace of receiving such extensive knowledge
shall also show his gratitude by passing on My gifts of grace, he shall only ever consider his fellow human beings' spiritual adversity who still live in complete ignorance because they are completely without love, and they should first of all encourage them into kind-hearted activity, so that they will become open-minded to the spiritual gifts you bring to them. This is why your main task consists of repeatedly reminding people of My commandments of love, for a person only gains the pure truth through a life of love, only through a life of love do you acquire the understanding for deeper knowledge, and only love lets a person realize the reason and purpose of his earthly life, which he will then also genuinely try to reach."

**Why is God Speaking to People** - BD No. 8568: "Consider, you humans, what it means when your God and Creator draws close to you in order to speak to you Himself, for thereby He must be pursuing a goal which you are unable to grasp in its full depth. I bend down to you Myself in order to speak to you, thus it must be very important that you hear My Word, that you receive certain knowledge from Me because I deem the latter necessary. I don't just pass on admonitions or warning to you but try to raise your degree of realization and provide you with instructions of how the latter can be accomplished. First I want to remove the darkness in which you live, and thus I also want to tell you what is causing this darkness and how you can resolve it, I want to enlighten you because the darkness is a wretched state for you given that in darkness you cannot find the right path to the light of day.

You renounced all light, all realization. You don’t know anything about Me anymore, your God and Creator Who wants to be your Father; you don’t know anything about yourselves, what you were in the beginning, why you changed and for what purpose you live on earth. And this is an ignorant state which cannot be called divine. You, however, are of divine origin, you once were perfect and thus you also were illuminated, you knew of everything, of My overwhelming love which constantly permeated you and prevented the said darkness, so that you brightly and clearly understood all correlations and possessed the knowledge which only a divine being was able to possess. You voluntarily relinquished this knowledge, the light, the realization, and fell into the dark stat, your concepts became confused, and you were no longer able to understand anything, neither yourselves and the purpose of your existence nor the relationship with Me, with the One from Whose strength of love you emerged. You plunged into darkness, and the darkness will keep you imprisoned until you voluntarily desire My illumination of love again, which will also grant you a light of realization once more.

And into this darkness My Word rings out from above. Can you comprehend the depth of My love which wants to grant everything to you again which you once renounced of your own free will? Can you therefore recognize the tremendous value of My Word as the greatest gift of grace on My part which I impart to people in order to make their retransformation into love easy and possible? I Am speaking to you directly, I Am bridging the vast gulf which still exists between us and I Am sending a flow of grace from the kingdom of light onto earth, which is intended to irrigate and revitalize the extensive spiritual drought on the dark earth. I want to change the miserable state people live in and present them with the help to find their way out of the state of darkness by sending them a beacon of light if only they are willing to accept it and allow it to illuminate their future path of earthly life, so that they will find their goal for sure, which will only ever be in the light and never in darkness. It is a greater than great act of compassion which I bestow upon humanity that I offer those who once rejected the light of love, the same light of love again, that I send it to earth despite the fact that people
don’t express any desire for it apart from a few, whom I use as go-between bearers so that they will carry the light where darkness still prevails.

Yet all people may partake in it, I don’t want to withhold My gift of grace from any human being, I want to guide every single person into My sphere of light and try to illuminate him, so that he will begin to sense the correlations, think about them and then be able to be guided by the world of light, which only ever waits for a person to become accessible to their loving care. And I will keep radiating light down to earth; for the darkness will continue to intensify before the end, but the light will shine for anyone who desires it. He will enter the state of realization again because I Myself will initiate him into profound knowledge, which cannot be given to him from external sources unless he accepts it from one of My messengers whom I have guided into this knowledge Myself. I will still offer My gifts of grace to many people, and even if someone just asks for a small light, it will shine for him and guide him into truthful knowledge which will also make him happy. For I will still pour out an abundance of My gifts of love before the end, and anyone of good will can still change his unsatisfactory state until the end, he can accept light and increase it himself through a life of love, and he will not have to fear the end once he knows the purpose and goal of his earthly life and then also consciously strives towards this goal.... For then his will shall have made the right decision, he will want to return to Me and thus will also safely reach his goal.”

God’s Word Intends to Attract People’s Love - BD No. 8917: “You, who continuously receive the gifts of My grace and thereby constantly enjoy the evidence of My presence, possess an abundance of wealth which cannot be taken away from you again. You are guided into extraordinary knowledge which no one can refute, for such knowledge can only be given to you by the One Who knows everything, but Who wants to impart it to every person who sincerely desires it and appeals to Me for it. And the fact that I know far more than you are capable of comprehending shall only encourage you to become ever more mature in soul, for you will be immeasurably happy the deeper you penetrate My eternal plan of Salvation, the more information is given to you about My reign and activity. And all the possessions of the world will not be able to tempt you anymore once you have penetrated the secrets of creation and can understand all happenings. For then you will have attained the state of realization again, then you will be enlightened and approach the original state again, in which you were profusely happy. Then your existence as a human being will soon come to an end, you will be able to discard your physical shell and return into My kingdom which is your true home. Therefore strive to increase your maturity of soul, don’t tire in your endeavors but believe that unimaginable splendors are waiting for you in My kingdom which is not of this world. Your endeavor shall be to join Me forever more, not to exclude Me from your thoughts any longer, I want to be with you and be able to illuminate you with My love again, with the result that you will become enlightened and able to hear My voice clearly and distinctly, so that you will no longer doubt that I Am speaking to you and teaching you.

The fact that My love always and forever applies to you ought to be recognized by you in My seeking to attract your love. I followed you into the abyss and helped you to ascend from the depth until you were able to embody yourselves as human beings. And even now My love will not cease, it grants you blessings in abundance and is always ready to help, it appeals for your love by speaking to you and giving you strength, which you only need to use correctly in order to continue your ascent to the pinnacle, in order to finally be able to enter My kingdom. For My love wants to welcome you as My children, it wants to grant you supreme blissfulness, which you cannot possibly imagine. And by speaking to you I intend for you to become convinced of My
presence so that you will then also respond to My love, that you will open your heart and let the ray of My love enter it, so that the unity with Me can take place in love, which is an integral part of bliss. And you will eternally glorify Me, you will sing My praises and give thanks to Me forever, for then you will have become perfect again, as you were in the beginning, as your Father in Heaven is perfect."

**Revelations are God’s Help towards Ascent** - BD No. 8268: “My loving care has applied to you for eternity, for you have been distant from Me for eternity already and therefore unhappy. During your earthly life you are oblivious to the infinitely long time before your embodiment as a human being because it lies behind you and thus it has been surmounted. And now you are taking the path across earth as a human being, unaware of the fate you are approaching, unaware, until you voluntarily take the path to Me. And since all My love applies to you I constantly exert My influence in order to motivate you to hand yourselves over to the Power which brought you into being. For it only requires your free will during your earthly progress. It can lead you back to supreme happiness but it can also result in your renewed downfall, for only your free will decides your fate in eternity.

As long as this will was constrained, as long as your soul had to go through the creations of earth in a state of compulsion there was no risk of a descent, for My adversary had lost all authority over you and My love constantly pulled you higher. But now, as a human being, you are free, and My adversary therefore also has the right to influence you again, and thus you voluntarily have to resist him, you voluntarily have to take the path to Me, and then you will have passed your final test of earthly life and can be liberated from every external shell. Since My love called you into being, and since this love has never diminished nor will it ever diminish, I will also always help you, I will fight for your will just like My adversary does. And I shall let all happenings approach you such that your thoughts will be directed towards Me, for as soon as I achieve that you recognize Me as a Being of supreme perfection Which loves you and only wants your happiness I will also have won you over for Myself.

Thus I also have to reveal Myself to you, I must try to achieve that you are informed of a Power Which gave you life, and I have to enlighten you about the nature of this Power. I have to provide you with the information about this Being’s reign and activity and your relationship with It. Since you are blessed with intelligence, with the faculty of thought, I also constantly stimulate you to think, and I enter your thoughts Myself. I direct your earthly fate in such a way that you will be able to think of Me. Hence I try to influence your will in every way so that it will turn to Me and hand itself over to Me. For I Am motivated to do so by My great love for you which would like to unite itself with you again and this requires your free will. After your long development before your embodiment as a human being you are now in a state of maturity which only requires you to make use of the blessings of being human in order to achieve your goal. For every day will also offer you the opportunities to attain knowledge about your God and Creator, since every day will give you the opportunity to practice love, when you are able to carry out deeds of love, which will also guarantee you correct thinking and grant you the recognition that you have to fulfill a task on earth. And considerable information about the reason for your earthly existence can be made accessible to you, and through this knowledge you can also be pushed towards Me, Who is imparting the information to you Himself, because you must learn to recognize Me in order to then also strive consciously towards Me.

My love will do anything so that you will bring the course of development to fruition, which shall return you to Me for good. But one thing even My infinite love cannot do: it cannot force you to return to Me against your will. You have to take the
path of earthly life in absolute freedom, but you will be and remain infinitely happy if your will makes a free decision for Me. You will no longer need to fear regression; for once I have won you for Myself I will hold on to you and never ever leave you to My adversary. But in earthly life he is likewise struggling for your souls, and you should know this so that you can make a conscious choice, so that you will offer him resistance and take your path to Me in order to help you, so that you will lay claim to the blessings of Jesus Christ’s act of Salvation, in Whom I Myself came to earth in order to pay the purchase price for your souls. For you belonged to My adversary as well, since you had followed him of your own free will. And you should know that it is possible to be released from his control if you take the path to the cross and thereby show that your will has freely chosen Me. And for that reason I constantly reveal Myself to humanity and inform them of the reason for their earthly progress and the opportunity to find final deliverance through Jesus Christ, in Whom I Myself brought you redemption from sin and death.”

**Why Constantly New Revelations?** - BD No. 9002: “If the Word of God cannot be protected from being changed because human will is free and translations were not always handled by spiritually awakened people, who thus were also able to err, you can understand that this is the reason for New Revelations which time after time had to correct the distortions, so that the Word of God would be able to lay claim to the pure truth. Exposing such misguided teachings would have been impossible without such New Revelations, especially if people relied on the fact that I Myself protect My Word from all changes. However, it must also be understandable to you that the human being’s free will makes this impossible for Me since I will never inhibit it, even if it concerns the pure truth, for I also gave the human being the assurance that he is guaranteed to live in truth if he desires it himself.

And thus you can never rely on the fact that you will receive unchanged spiritual knowledge if the ‘Word of God’ is preached to you, but you have the assurance that you will receive the truth if only you desire it. Then the preacher, even if he is spiritually unawakened, will be guided in his sermon, so that he often will not say what he had intended to say but that his words will be given to him by Me, precisely because a person seriously requests to be instructed in the truth. If the wish only to learn the truth arose in many people then the preachers soon would also recognize the error and they would try to listen more to their inner voice which is instructing them otherwise. Yet all people have the option to recognize what is wrong in My ‘supposed Word’, for love enlightens their spirit and only ever accepts the correct and unadulterated information. The person will no longer be able to think wrongly once he is illuminated by the inner light of love. And only then will he notice where error has crept in, where the adversary was able to take effect because people were lacking the light of love. Then he will also know that the human being cannot solve problems with his intellect alone if the spirit within him is not supporting him. Then he will know why the necessity for corrections arises time and again, which I constantly send to humanity again in the form of New Revelations.

And I will continue to reveal Myself to people who love Me and keep My commandments, as I have promised. For one misguided thought results in many more, until finally just a distorted image remains of Me, which reflects everything but a good and exceedingly loving God, Who wants to be a Father to you all. And since you have already accepted so many misguided spiritual values, a God of Love is strange to you, you are still distant from Him, and you do not recognize Him as your Father and therefore do not strive towards Him either. And whatever you hear from Him is likely to separate yourselves from Him even more. I, however, want to gain your love and
therefore make use of every opportunity to speak to you, if not directly then through people who allow My spirit to work in them, who either convey My direct Word to you or who think correctly and are also able to instruct you truthfully. For it is extremely important that you can be guided into correct thinking, that you know what you can accept and what you ought to reject. But don’t believe that your correct thinking is guaranteed if you gather your knowledge from the Book of Books, since I do not coerce the human being’s will I cannot prevent him from interpreting the spiritual information from this book according to either his own preferences or to his imperfect understanding. For every Word I have spoken conceals a spiritual meaning, and only the human being’s spirit is able to recognize it, which will be awakened to life through love but then will also guide the human being into every truth, as I have promised.”

The Human Being’s Duty – scrutinize spiritual information - BD No. 8364:

“The fact that you had been wrongly instructed cannot be used by you as an excuse; for you have been placed by Me into the position of using your intellect and therefore it is also your duty to scrutinize what you are being taught. As soon as you receive the information of a God and Creator Who created and sustains everything that you can see around you, and also you yourselves, you only need to turn to this Creator in thought and, truly, I will also guide your thinking such that you will be able to understand, if only you want to understand. And you will always be sent such thoughts from the spiritual kingdom which relate to Me and to yourselves, which make you question what kind of relationship you have in regards to Me, your God and Creator. And such thoughts ought to be picked-up by you and reflected upon.

You should at all times be conscious of the fact that every person who only uses his intellect can be mistaken. Thus you must also ask yourselves whether the people who are instructing you, who present you with knowledge which they, in turn, receive from other people or which they have academically acquired, are free from error. For doubts will certainly arise in you and then you do well to contemplate them, but in that case it only depends on your own will whether you yourselves desire the truth, since only this will shall determine that pure truth will be imparted to you. If you, however, accept everything that is presented to you without thinking about it, you will never find the path to Me, for then you will only possess pure intellectual knowledge which will never be able to touch your heart and will not benefit your soul in the slightest, since it will neither lead to the correct realization nor motivate you to seriously improve yourselves. It is and will remain mere worldly knowledge, even if it concerns spiritual problems. For only your intellect is affected and this is not being used to think about the information so that it can deal with it, and subsequently it won’t be able to recognize what it was offered.

And if you are prevented by law to reflect on it, then you should also recognize the foolishness of such law and become wary and on account of this alone start to doubt the truth of the teachings imparted to you. Not everything needs to be wrong, yet you should obtain clarity by starting to think about it and turn to the One Who is your God and Creator and Who alone can grant you clarification. Hence you ought to try to attain living knowledge and not content yourselves with dead knowledge, which remains dead as long as it doesn’t influence the human being’s soul by stimulating it into improving itself eagerly, which first and foremost consists of kind-hearted activity. For as soon as a person lives a life of love his thinking will also be enlightened, and then he will no longer be satisfied with teachings which do not completely correspond to the truth. The light of love within himself will no longer let him unreservedly accept everything he is offered but will cause him to scrutinize it, because love is a divine principle and can never tolerate error or untruth beside itself.
Hence, at that moment an active desire for truth will set in and the truth will subsequently be imparted to the person, no matter in which way. For anyone who desires the truth will receive it. Anyone who desires the truth will also ask for Me, Who is the Eternal Truth and I will also reveal Myself to him, that is, I will convey the truth to him in some form or other, which he then will accept and make use of without hesitation.

Every person has to aspire towards his own perfection, and he also has the ability to do so, for truly, it only requires the connection with Me and a prayer in spirit and in truth for My help to successfully travel his earthly path. And this prayer will be granted to him, he will constantly be inwardly urged to do deeds of love and he will also gain the light which will let him recognize the right path that leads to perfection.

**Constant Contact with God – ensures success** - BD No. 5785: “Request My support in everything you undertake. Don’t start anything without Me, take no path without Me, always let Me lead the way, then I will be your goal which you will safely reach. And thus you shall also come to Me with all spiritual concerns and you will always receive the correct advice, for then you will be guided by My spirit, you cannot do anything but think and behave correctly and successfully work for Me and My kingdom. And it will always appear as if you speak and proceed of your own will. For I don’t manifest Myself so obviously that you would feel compelled to comply with My will, and yet it is My will which is now expressing itself through you. If you first commend all works, thoughts and spoken words to Me, you may also rest assured of My influence, yet this very first contact with Me is essential in order to feel My will in you and to think, speak and act accordingly. And therefore you need not worry that you won’t be able to carry out the work for Me and My kingdom as long as you don’t regard it as an occupation but only ever want to be of service to Me, and thus, as My servants, remain in constant contact with Me in order to receive My instructions. For the latter occurs through your heart into which My spirit will place feelings which will cause you to act in accordance with My will. And then all your beginnings will be blessed.”

**“Test all Things and Keep what is good”** - BD No. 6676: “Test all things and keep what is good. I say this to those who are inclined to doubt, who don’t possess the ability to make correct judgments and are apprehensive about accepting spiritual knowledge which is offered to them in an unusual way. Accept it with a completely open mind, and then ask Me for enlightenment of spirit and reflect on what you have received. And, for the time being, ignore what seems unacceptable to you because you are at present unable to understand it, and enjoy what, after serious examination, is credible to you, I don’t expect you to have blind faith, I expect you to test the spiritual knowledge which is made accessible to you; you are meant to think about it, and it is better you reject what seems incomprehensible to you than accept everything unreservedly, for if you have not formed an opinion about such mental concepts they will not be of benefit to you. But if you are serious and want the pure truth, then you will also clearly recognize the truth if My messengers offer you spiritual knowledge which has originated from Me. For this Word contains the strength to give life, providing, however, that life is being aspired to.

Test all things and keep what is good. Do these Words not contradict the imposition of believing something without thinking about it? After all, I Myself leave it up to you what to believe when I ask you to keep ‘what is good,’ I leave it up to you because I don’t demand blind faith from you humans. But why do you, who demand that ‘thinking about religious doctrines’ must be avoided, stop people from examining. Are you not acting against My will? And are you also aware of the consequences such compulsion of faith will have on people? Time and again I emphasize freedom of will,
time and again I bring the individual person’s responsibility for his decision of will to the fore, time and again I caution against spiritual compulsion and explain to you what really matters in earthly life.

And the Scripture, too, provides you with the evidence with these Words 'Test all things and keep what is good,' which should make every person, who genuinely wants to fulfill My will, suspicious that they don’t coincide with the ecclesiastical laws and make him think. After all, who’s Word, whose teachings are more credible? And you cannot imply any other meaning to these My Words but that you should form an opinion about every religious dogma. You are supposed to form an opinion of it, regardless of who presents spiritual knowledge to you, for even the pure truth coming from Me, which is conveyed to you directly from above, may be scrutinized by you, and I will not condemn you if you think that you cannot accept everything without hesitation. You should only always seek advice from Me and I will give you the understanding of what you need for the maturity of your souls. And if you still have a low degree of maturity, you will not be able to understand everything, but you yourselves determine what you are prepared to accept. Test all things and keep what is good. For by doing so you prove the sincerity of your attitude and your desire for truth. But anyone who accepts something without checking it demonstrates his indifference, and he will never move within the truth either, because it is irrelevant to him. Yet this kind of attitude should never be promoted by a responsible person, people should be encouraged and not stopped to reflect on spiritual knowledge, for only then will it be beneficial and help the human being attain maturity of soul, since free will is being employed and its decision alone is important.”

Pure Truth – The Word from Above - BD No. 7521:“You should only ever keep to My Word, and if you are given spiritual information from external sources then check whether it concurs with My directly imparted Word to you and reject what contradicts it. For what the spirit from Me has proclaimed to you is pure truth, which you can also endorse as pure truth at all times. You need not fear spreading error as long as you keep to what I convey to you from above. For since it is My will that the truth shall be spread amongst people I will also take care that you receive it, and I will only ever express Myself through the spirit where the guarantee is given that it will be received and also passed on without being altered. And I know if and when this is possible, and this is where My spirit will flow. I want you humans to live in truth. But I also know how much My adversary is affecting you, who will always try to infiltrate the truth with error. I know who desires the truth and where My adversary has little influence. And thus I also know when the request for truth gives Me the opportunity to convey it to earth and in turn to pass it on to other people if only they have the will to serve the truth. I Myself proclaimed the Gospel to people when I lived on earth and they only received pure truth from Me, irrespective of what I taught them.

Likewise purest truth is coming forth from Me again, and it merely requires a desiring and open heart in order to be received and evaluated as truth. But then it will also spread light, and the characteristic of truth is that the human being will subsequently grow in realization, that he will gain the kind of knowledge which will illuminate him, which only truth is able to achieve. Every error, however, causes confused thinking; it darkens the spirit and can never have pleasing effects. Anyone who desires the truth will also feel the blessing of the light, anyone who lives in error is not aware of it but he lives in the darkness of spirit. However, no person will be able to say that the truth is unattainable, that it can never be accessible to people. Everyone who seriously wants the truth and enters into contact with Me will be able to receive it. And it is now clearly imparted to you through My Word from above and you can always
scrutinize it as to what extent the spiritual knowledge given to you by external sources corresponds to the latter in order to then also know whether you have the truth. For what I convey to you Myself cannot be anything else but the truth which you should keep in high esteem and never relinquish again, for it is an incredibly significant gift of grace which intends to resolve people’s spiritual adversity, which intends to place you into a state of light and strength and help your soul to mature, and which is offered to you by My great love so that you will not keep living in spiritual darkness.

My spirit descends upon you, it pours itself into an open vessel and time and again fills it anew. My spirit gives you the truth that can only originate from Me and thus the spiritual information can also be confidently upheld as truth towards other people, because no untrue spiritual information can come forth from Me. And that it comes forth from Me is repeatedly proven to you again by the fact that My human manifestation and My act of Salvation are constantly mentioned, that I Myself, your God and Father, Jesus Christ, your Redeemer, draw close to you in order to bear witness to Myself. You can detect extraordinary activity and can therefore conclude that a spiritual power is at work. And it will also be easy for you to acknowledge that this spiritual power is divine, since you are constantly only instructed to love and made aware of the fact that Jesus Christ ought to be your only and most important goal. And therefore you can also believe what is conveyed to you through My spirit, for the Eternal Truth Itself draws close to you and instructs you, because It wants you to live in truth.”

**Gift of Grace before the End** - BD No. 8494: “I will pour out an abundance of grace in the last days before the end, for people are in need of it; they require much support in order to still be able to cover the last stretch of their earthly path successfully. And many people will even have to be guided onto the right path first and they, too, will require help for this, for they are still on the path into the abyss and have to be called back and guided correctly. Every means used by Me before the end is a means of grace, for people themselves do nothing to prevent it, they travel their earthly path indifferently and therefore don’t deserve any help, since they still rather resist than accept help. Yet I love all My living creations and don’t want even one of them to go astray. I don’t want them to languish in a wretched state for an infinitely long time again. And this is why I will temper justice with mercy. I will leave no stone unturned to save them before the end. And I also know what will help every individual person; I know what is suitable to guide him onto the right path. And this is what I will use without, however, compelling the human being’s will, for he has to make a free decision. But it will be made easy for him, for the means of grace will be brought to him so visibly that he will also be able to recognize them as such.

Time and again the human being’s attention is pointed to the spiritual kingdom. Time and again he is approached by death in some form or other, he experiences it in his surroundings by having to let go of people who are very dear to him, and he hears of various kinds of death. He will always be reminded of his own fleeting nature and can then reflect on thoughts about what comes after death. His thoughts will be directed towards the spiritual kingdom, since they often also follow the deceased and thus give rise to such questions as: Where are they now? Have they completely ceased to be? Or is there a prospect of meeting again? And then time and again spirit guides, to whose protection people are entrusted, will intervene by trying to influence them and giving them an explanation. They make it possible for such people to receive knowledge of My Word, which is directly transmitted to earth, or they let them come across books which will offer them clarification, they do everything to direct their thoughts to the kingdom which is their true home and which they will enter when they pass away from this world. And the departed, too, exert an influence from the beyond by constantly entering
their thoughts which, to a certain extent, will establish a connection from the spiritual to the physical world. My measure of grace is inexhaustible and everyone would be able to take advantage of it, if only they were willing to do so.

That is why I let My Word be heard, for whoever hears and accepts it will truly make use of the greatest gift of grace which certainly will also bring him the right result, which will help his soul to mature and let him reach his goal while he is still on earth, so that he will find Me and enter into union with Me, which then will also assure his perfection. For it is important that the human being establishes his bond with Me before his soul leaves the body, before the hour of departure from this earth has come. As soon as he has recognized and acknowledged Me he will not get lost, for then he will take the path to the cross, to the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ, he will recognize Me in Him and thus will also have taken the path to Me. And then he will have been saved from the adversary for good, for Jesus Christ will deliver him from his bondage; Jesus has taken his guilt upon Himself and opened for him the path to the Father. Jesus and I are one. To realize this is the guarantee of return for the once fallen spirits to Me, and for that reason I will always provide people with the information through My Word, that is why My Word is the greatest and most effective gift of grace which I can still offer humanity before the end, and blessed is he who accepts it, for he will truly not go astray anymore. There is not much time left, and the battle for the souls is fiercely waged on part of the darkness. But I, too, Am fighting for you, My living creations, and I will help you, so that you, who will settle this battle, will make the right decision, so that you will take the path to Jesus Christ, in Whom I became a human being Myself in order to redeem you. Make use of this immensely merciful act of Redemption through Jesus Christ and, truly, you will be victorious and delivered from the one who wants to destroy you.”

As soon as he has recognized and acknowledged Me he will not get lost, for then he will take the path to the cross, to the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ, he will recognize Me in Him and thus will also have taken the path to Me.
Chapter 1: In the Beginning

Fulfillment of Divine Promises – Introduction to Spiritual Knowledge – God is Inscrutable – Inscrutability of the Deity – God’s Nature is a Mystery – In the Beginning was the Word – The Fathers Voice – The Word of God – Holy Communion and the Word – Belief in God in Jesus – The Hidden Mystery of the Trinity – God and Jesus are One – The Doctrine of the Trinity of God – Misguided Teachings about the Trinity – The Right Concept of God – Master Show us the Father – When does a Soul have Life – Mary is Divine – Where is Heaven – Who is to be the Christ? – Doubting God’s Existence – God’s message to Rationalist. . .
Fulfillment of Divine Promises -Truth

God the Father is speaking: “You are guided into truth by My spirit. Since I spoke these Words to you humans Myself it must therefore be possible for you to live in truth and thus you cannot say: No one knows what and where the truth is. You just have to seriously think about the problem of how you can arrive at the truth. A truth exists which is irrefutable, which comes forth from Me as the ‘Eternal Truth Itself’ and which will never change. And you have to approach this primary source of truth yourselves by wanting to get hold of the truth from its origin, from Me Myself. I know everything, I know all correlations, nothing is concealed from Me, and I also want you, as My living creations, to know everything. I want you to become as illuminated as I Am. I want you to know where you came from and the goal you ought to reach. Your fellow human beings, however, are unable to inform you of this unless they have received this knowledge from Me.

However, many people claim to be knowledgeable and also try to convince their fellow human beings of what they have acquired through intellectual study. But their intellectual conclusions do not correspond to the truth as long as they have not approached Me directly for enlightenment of their thoughts, as long as they have only applied their intellect. And then the justifiable objection can be raised: No human being knows what and where the truth is. But God knows and therefore also the person to whom God imparts the truth. And I have told you that My spirit will guide you into truth, and My Word is and will remain truth.

But far too little attention is paid to this Word of Mine, the great promise I thereby gave to humanity is not being recognized. For they have no interest whatsoever to be instructed in the ‘truth’ but unreservedly accept everything as truth that is presented to them by their fellow human beings, or they reject all credibility of it. And that signifies a major spiritual decline. Every person must possess spiritual knowledge, and therefore everyone should want to have the right spiritual knowledge. This determination alone will take him closer to the truth, for I will not let a person live in darkness if he desires to become enlightened. I will intervene Myself and direct his thoughts such that he will start to search and take the path to the right source. I Myself will offer the truth to him,
if not directly then through My messengers, which he then will also recognize as My messengers, for I only require the desire for truth in order to be able to distribute it, because I want people to live in the truth, because I want them to be instructed through My spirit, if only they are of good will. But then a person will no longer doubt the truth of what is imparted to him by My spirit, and he will also remember My Words 'But the comforter, which is the holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.'

Hence you also have a criterion insofar as that you will hear the same Words from Me through the spirit which I spoke to people when I lived on earth. And thereby you can recognize who speaks to you and then also believe with conviction that it is I Myself Who makes His promise come true, Who instructs you through His spirit. And it will remind you of many a Word I spoke to people Myself. And then you should also seriously consider every one of My Words because they are God’s Words which will never pass away, even if heaven and earth shall pass away. And if you thus believe these Words of Mine unreservedly then you will penetrate the truth ever deeper, for then you will live accordingly, and you will experience the effect that you are not just hearers but doers of My Word. You will experience the effect of love which is preached to you through My Word time after time and which will grant you enlightenment, so that you will grow in realization, so that you will attain the knowledge again which you had lost, so that you will completely live in truth again because you have entered into association with the Eternal Truth Itself, Which guided you into the right knowledge, as I promised you.”

**Introduction to Spiritual Knowledge**

BD No. 8341 of 11/28/1962 taken from book 88

God the Father is speaking; “I want to give people an easily comprehensible instruction; I want to enlighten them in the simplest possible way if they are still entirely without knowledge but willing to accept a correct explanation: You humans can imagine that I did not create you as you are, for you can detect many shortcomings in people, and if you spend some thought on it, it will seem doubtful to you that the most perfect Being, Which you call 'God', should have created such an imperfect human race. But since you, as well as all visible works of creation surrounding you, could not have been able to create yourselves there must have been a Power at work, in which you are expected to believe. A God has to exist, a Creator of everything you can perceive, including yourselves. Thus this Creator is supremely perfect, and you can procure numerous evidence of this in earthly life. He created you humans too, but not in the state you find yourselves in at present, rather, you emerged from Him in a supremely perfect state, you are products of the absolutely perfect Creative Power, Which is an intelligent Entity, just like you but of highest perfection, therefore you were perfectly created but did not remain perfect because you possessed free will which was able to evolve in any direction and therefore was also able to relinquish all perfection and change into the opposite. And this is what you have done.

You left the Father’s house, you distanced yourselves from your God and Creator, you rejected His Fatherly love and became unhappy creatures, because it requires God’s unlimited love in order to be happy. My love, however, is infinite and also follows you into the abyss, to which you aspired of your own free will. My love wants to achieve your return to Me one day and therefore won’t leave you in your wretched state but will help you to ascend from the abyss again, it will help you to return from the realm of
darkness into the kingdom of light again and regain your former state of bliss, because love always wants to please, and so My love will not lessen until you have completed the path of return to Me. And your existence as human beings on this earth is a very short stage on the path of return to Me. You have the gift of reason, you possess free will and intellect, you are able to think, feel and want and therefore can also conduct yourselves accordingly. And if you think and want correctly then your thoughts and intentions will always be based on love, love will determine your thinking and wanting because a correctly directed will allows itself to be determined by Me Myself into activities of love and because the activity of love is the same as approaching Me, Who is Eternal Love Itself, because it is the same as transforming your imperfect nature into the original being which had once came forth from Me in utter perfection. Thus you humans on earth only have the one task of living a life of love. In doing so you fulfill the purpose of your earthly life which connects you with the Eternal Love again and thereby enables the Eternal Love to make you abundantly happy and you will become blissful again as you were in the beginning.

This is the only goal you should endeavor towards reaching on earth, and in order for you to do so you will be taught by Me Myself through the voice of conscience, through the voice of the spirit, the spark which glows within every human heart and only needs to be kindled through kind-hearted activity in order to tell you humans what you should or should not do, and which will stimulate you into more and more loving actions. Love is the fundamental substance of your nature, and if you want to be and remain perfect you also have to be completely permeated by love. If, however, you neglect love you will remain imperfect beings, and then you will belong to the generation which you can presently recognize all over the world: heartless, selfish people who only ever think of themselves and never take care of their neighbor who is suffering in adversity next to them. But a lack of love also means a lack of happiness, it means spiritual darkness, ignorance, weaknesses and a lack of freedom, for then the human being will not recognize his God and Creator either, and he will not take the path to Him. Yet only through a union with Me can the being regain beatitude. And for the sake of this union with Me you are living on earth. You ought to achieve your perfection again which you once renounced of your own free will, you ought to change yourselves into love again which had been your fundamental substance, and with this change you will also establish unification with Me. You will be allowed to give love and receive unlimited love yourselves, you will be able to enter into a true life which lasts forever, and you will be perfect and therefore also infinitely happy.”

The Father’s Voice
BD No. 5564 of 12/25/1952 taken from book 61

God the Father is speaking: “You should recognize the Father’s voice in every Word that is sent to you from above. It is My spirit which speaks to you, it is My strength which flows to you, it is light from My light which shines upon you, it is the Word which My infinite love forms for you so that you can understand Me, so that you shall fulfill My will, so that you shall be comforted in times of need and be instructed in all truthfulness. Only I can impart this truth to you, your God and Father of eternity, Who instructs you so that you learn to know and love Him. For I want your love. This is why I speak to you, who are unable to see Me and therefore don’t strive towards Me either if you have no knowledge you can believe in. But it is My will that you should believe in Me and therefore I do whatever it takes in order to help you attain this belief, I reveal Myself to you, You humans are unable to judge the full significance of this gift of grace, the Lord of infinity, the eternal God and Creator Who brought everything into being
which is visible to your eyes and Who created an infinite number of works which are invisible for you. He lovingly draws near to you. He speaks to the individual person but through them also to all people. He reveals Himself to you. And only a few people recognize My voice.

But these few are spiritually enlightened, for anyone who is able to hear Me, who recognizes Me Myself in the Word I convey to earth is also permeated by the strength of My spirit and therefore looks at all happenings, at everything around him and his experiences with completely different eyes. My spirit illuminates his thinking and also provides him with clarification about all correlations; he is no longer able to doubt, precisely because he recognizes Me Myself if I address him through My Word. Where My spirit is working, knowledge can be found and knowledge is light which penetrates the darkness. But where on earth can you humans still find light? People live in darkness, they are spiritually unenlightened, they don’t stop to think, and were they to think they would not come to any reliable result. The darkness which exists on earth can only be dispelled by light from above. However, I Am always willing to kindle a light in you, I Am always willing to permeate you with the strength of My spirit if only you were willing to accept the Words of My love, if only you opened your hearts to Me in order to let the flow of My love pour in, if only you humans desired to hear Me. It is My wish that you should learn to love Me, therefore you must listen to Me, you must accept My revelations and you will become enlightened, then you will penetrate the mysteries of My eternal love, My eternal plan of Salvation, you will recognize yourselves and your earthly task, you will recognize Me and grant Me your love, and you will yearn to hear the sound of My voice forever.”

The Significance of Realization

BD No. 8034 of 11/06/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: “I will talk to you time and again, My children, for I know that you require My Word which shall give you the strength for your path of earthly life. You should always know that I Am present with you if just one thought from you is touching Me, if you wish to be in contact with Me. And when I Am present with you My strength also has to flow into you. Your soul needs this strength in order to mature fully, and this is why you will always achieve progress if you let Me speak to you, the light permeating you has to become increasingly brighter, and that also means ever more profound realization, it means progressive knowledge, it means clarity of thought and a correctly directed will. My speaking to you will guarantee this, for the strength flowing from Me to you has to take effect and thus bear witness of itself in the form of increased wisdom. And all you humans should desire light, you should all try to escape from the spiritual darkness and request more spiritual information. For in what ignorant state did you enter life on earth? And although your intellect begins to become active, can you penetrate spiritual spheres with it? Dense darkness remains in you, and all spiritual concepts remain unresolved and indistinct as long as you don’t feel the desire to receive an explanation. And until you do, the purpose of your earthly life will also remain unknown to you and you will be dead in spirit, despite the fact that you live physically. And can you be satisfied if you have no knowledge at all about the reason and purpose of your earthly life? Are you content with your lightless existence on this earth with only earthly goals to strive for?

This state of darkness is not a happy state, and you should recognize it as unsatisfactory yourselves and try to receive an inner light, for only then will the unsatisfactory state change, and you will experience inner happiness when you receive
the knowledge which explains to you the purpose of your earthly life. You should request such enlightenment and therefore also pay attention to My Words which are given to you by My messengers, if you are not yet able to hear Me directly. You should endeavor to enlarge your spiritual knowledge, for this knowledge is the light which was lacking in you at the beginning of your embodiment but which can be kindled and then shine brightly within your hearts. For the light is emanated by My spirit, the tiny spark of love which, as part of Me, rests within you and has to be ignited by yourselves through love. Thus love irrefutably has to result in wisdom, the result of a life of love irrefutably has to make profound knowledge accessible to you, for the 'fire of love' emanates the 'light of wisdom.' Your spiritual state will have to become bright, the spiritual darkness will have to disappear, you will have to become able to recognize all correlations, you will have to learn to understand Myself and My reign and activity, and you will have to be able to offer explanations yourself, because then I can be active in you Myself and thus you will only think, act and speak in accordance with My will.

The degree of realization is decisive for the degree of maturity of soul, for I do not speak of dead knowledge which is academically passed on to you, but I speak of living knowledge which is the only meaning of 'realization'. I speak about the 'Wisdom of God', which can only be gained through love, which can only come to earth through the 'working of the spirit' and is received by a heart which allows rays of bright light to enter it because it is full of love. It is only given by love and only love will receive it, whereas the same knowledge remains dead knowledge for the person who still lacks love. And you all should endeavor for the light of realization to illuminate you, for only then will you approach the state of the brightest light again, which made you happy in the beginning and which you all have to reach in order to be happy again."

God is Inscrutable

God the Father is speaking: “You, My living creations, will never be able to fathom Me, even when you, as My supremely perfect children, are able to work and be active next to Me. You are the product of My eternal creative power. I, however, Am the source of strength Itself, Which is inexhaustible, Which knows no limit, Which constantly pours Its flow into infinity. But I Am also a Being, i.e., I Am a thinking Spirit of most profound wisdom Who works according to His will with inconceivable love and makes everything He creates infinitely happy. I Am a thinking Entity Who constantly lets new creations arise, since the strength flowing forth from Me cannot remain inactive because it is life and constantly creates life. And when you, My living creations, reach highest perfection of your own free will so that you can work and create next to Me as My children, then you will indeed have penetrated the most profound wisdom, you will have light and strength at your own disposal which will make you tremendously happy and of which you can make infinite use in order to be creatively active for your own happiness, and this strength will constantly flow to you from the Primary Source of eternity.

He Himself, however, will be and remain inscrutable for you, yet the awareness that you will always be nourished by Him is utmost bliss, and your love for Me will continually increase, you will yearn for Me and forever sense My presence, you will be able to behold Me in Jesus Christ, and yet, I will remain an enigma for you, since it is not possible for a created being to totally ascertain the Entity which is and will remain from everlasting to everlasting, because the created being is but a tiny spark that was externalized by My love’s sea of flames. But the fact that this created being knows that
it is forever nourished by My strength of love, that the being is aware that it is united with Me, that it can constantly associate with Me like a child with its Father, that it can speak to Me and be active with Me in absolute blissful togetherness, is continually increasing its bliss and lets its love become ever more profound. And love is bliss, love is light, love is strength, love is the divine which makes every being become a god in its own right, because love always grants ever greater perfection. Yet the fact that there is no limit, that is the unimaginable beatitude which I bestow upon My living creations time and again and which can only be understood in the state of perfection, when the being which I emanated as a living creation has deified itself and become My child.

Then it knows that I Am forever inscrutable, and yet it adamantly keeps striving towards Me, it feels the bliss of approaching Me and finds its happiness in My reciprocated love, of which you humans lack all understanding as yet because you are still imperfect. But you are only intended to receive a concept of eternity which will be comprehensible to you one day, and therefore you shall also know that this supremely perfect Being will certainly reach His goal of being able to make everything that was created by Him infinitely happy. And it shall only be an incentive for you to keep striving towards your perfection, for it will bring you beatitudes in abundance. Yet it is and will remain incomprehensible for you that I draw close to you, My living creations, and speak to you, that I Am and eternally will remain unattainable for you and nevertheless embrace every single living creation with deepest love and draw it close to Me, that I try to make Myself and My Nature explicable to you in order to win your love, because I can only merge with love and this unification is needed in order to make you infinitely happy one day. The most perfect Being, the greatest Spirit in infinity, the Eternal Source of strength and light, is seeking the union with you, His living creations, and therefore He is speaking to you. He bends down to the smallest being in order to aid its ascent. And His love will never diminish, because love knows no limit and tries to make everything blissfully happy that once had emerged from this love.”

Inscrutability of the Deity

BD No. 8622 of 09/21/1963 taken from book 90

God the Father is speaking: ‘You should believe that you humans will eternally be unable to fathom My fundamental nature. It is not possible to make you understand what I Am in essence, for your thinking is still limited, and thus you are incapable of comprehending the infinite. Infinite, however, is the spirit for Whom you created the term ’God’. And what this spirit is in itself again cannot be explained to you either, because He has no form and you always imagine everything in existence as a form, especially when it is of substance, thus when it possesses a thinking will. I, however, certainly exist but Am not conceivable in any shape. I Am unlimited strength Which works without limitation. And thus this strength permeates the entire universe; it permeates every physical and spiritual creation. And it always and forever works in lawful order. For a thinking will directs this spiritual strength according to a plan in love and wisdom. This 'thinking will' entitles you to imagine a Being, you just may not give this Being a form but have to regard everything that is visible to you and all spiritual creations as imbued by My strength of love, by My spirit, with Which, however, you are able to make mental contact, because I Myself Am a thinking Being.

My fundamental nature, My spirit, My love, My strength, everything is the same. The all-pervading strength is God, love in itself is God. The spirit is God. And yet God is a Being, for a thinking will determines how the love, the strength, the spirit expresses itself; it determines My every reign and activity. And though the strength of love
dispersed itself into countless tiny sparks, each tiny spark is again the same as I Myself: a spirit with the same characteristics as I Myself, only extremely small, and yet powerful, for it is a carrier of the eternal Deity Itself again or it could not continue to exist if it were not permeated by My strength of love. And thus the human being can indeed liken himself to Me Myself, because you all are images of Me. Nevertheless you are finite beings, you are a part of Me which has to be looked upon as finite as long as you are still imperfect. Once you become perfect again, as you were in the beginning, then the fusion with Me will take place again too, and then it will be easier for you to form a concept of the Deity, albeit I Am and will remain inscrutable to you in My innermost nature. But then you will no longer apply limited standards as you do as human beings and which is the reason for your frequently misguided reasoning.

I Am a spirit, that is, I Am a Being Which is not perceptible to your human senses but Which nevertheless exists. Which, however, is a Being because you can recognize meaning and purpose in everything I brought into existence and thus arrive at the logical conclusion of a Might capable of thought and will. Therefore you should contact this Might Which cannot be denied by you. For only this connection, the union makes you realize that you are the same in your fundamental nature. And when this Might speaks to you, then it does not address your external shell, the body, but what is inside of this shell, which characterizes you as a divine image: your spirit, which thus emerged from Me (was given to you) and is part of Me, which you once rejected and which was given to you again as a tiny spark for your existence as a human being, in other words: I speak to the eternally immortal part in you, I speak to what belongs to Me Myself, which emanated from Me Myself as a minute spark and shelters in your human cover, which is only evidence again that I Myself wanted to find Myself again in you, My living creations, and thus you will also stay inseparably connected to Me, because My spirit is undividable. Because My strength of love assures your existence, because you can never again cease to exist, for you are My emanated strength which, according to eternal law, has to return to the source of strength again.
You will only understand all this in the state of perfection, your thinking will no longer be limited but you will also know that I Am a Being to Whom all your love belongs, you will know that I Am love Myself, and you will understand why you were unable to grasp all this as a human being. For as long as I Myself, My spirit, My love, cannot take full possession of you because you are still imperfect I cannot permeate you such that you are radiantly enlightened either. Yet I Am active in you, as far as this is possible, as far as your degree of maturity permits it, bestowing ever more light upon you, so that one day you will reach perfection."

"I Am the beginning of all things."

God the Father is speaking: ‘I Am the beginning of all things. Take this to heart when you are moved by the slightest doubt about the creation of everything you see around and above yourselves. If My power is thus sufficient to call every life form into being, what kind of strength would then be necessary to oppose this creative will? An equally destructive will perhaps? In that case a second Deity would have to be at work next to Me, whose expression of strength would run contrary to My own activity. Anyone who imagines the Deity as an imperfect Being can truly place many such gods next to this One, yet he will not have the right kind of concept about the one true Deity, Which has created everything and controls all. Anyone who wants to recognize Me must believe, and subordinate himself as a creation to the Creator. And he will become enlightened, and in this light he will see Me as the Ruler of the universe. He will realize that no opposing force is able to counteract Me by working destructively where I Am creating.

Only the physical transformation of the earth’s surface has been left to the human being’s free will, so that people’s creative urge, which I likewise have placed into their hearts, can occupy itself. Thus they can more or less act at their own discretion but they nevertheless will always have to recognize their own inadequacy and always be dependent on the omnipotence of the Creator and the activity of natural forces and cannot oppose them arbitrarily. Thus nothing is more understandable than wanting to ascertain the almighty Creator and yet nothing is more impossible. Human intellect is not sufficient by far to fathom Me in My full elementary power, and it will be even less possible to categories Me, that is, to put My Being and Becoming into any kind of form which seems acceptable to the human mind. This is a hopeless undertaking which could never produce a satisfactory result, for I was, I Am, and I forever will be an inscrutable Spirit Who harbors within Himself everything that can be found in the entire universe, to Whom creation is subordinate because it originated from Him, and Who is the beginning and the end of all things, the Spirit of Love from eternity to eternity.”

God’s Nature is a Mystery

God the Father is speaking: “My nature is and remains a great mystery for you, for while you live on earth your thinking is limited and incapable of penetrating spiritual depths. But even for the fully enlightened spirit I Am and remain inscrutable although it has already penetrated profound spiritual knowledge and shaped itself into its original nature again, which once originated from Me in My image. But a constant striving towards Me, a constant drawing nearer to Me is part of the beatitude which lasts forever. And yet I Am unattainable. On the other hand, I Myself illuminate the being and it is filled with inconceivable bliss, so that in union with Me the being is also conscious
of My presence. However, were I attainable then the beatitude would reach its limit one day, but this can never happen, for there is no end to My happiness; the being will always strive towards Me and always find new fulfillment and yet it will never be able to fathom Me. I Am and remain an eternal mystery for all that which came forth from Me, but I do not keep away from it because My love is infinite. And because this love of Mine can never stop, My children’s happiness can never stop either, because there is no limitation in perfection, there can never be an end. The being will keep rising towards the light and the light will always shine towards it, yet the light will be and remain unattainable. For I Am the primary source of light and bliss which is inexhaustible, to whom all spiritual beings strive and find never-ending bliss to be nourished by this primary source. My nature is and remains unfathomable. And thus it is also understandable that this nature cannot be personified, that it cannot be visualized as something limited. And so you will also understand why this Being, the primary source of light, can not be visible to the created being. For the original fullness of the light would have consumed everything. It was certainly able to give itself in all fullness, yet the being was meant to remain an independent entity, it was to lead an independent life as a spark of light, to which I wanted to give constant happiness. And constant longing and constant fulfillment is part of happiness. Once the being has reached enlightened heights it will be filled by ever more ardent love which strives towards Eternal Love. And I return this love again and thus make the being incredibly happy. Yet that does not signify satisfied yearning, it merely intensifies the longing for Me, Who gives Himself to the being time and time again.

However, while you are human beings your thinking is limited and you will never be able to grasp such wisdom. Yet even in your imperfection you, too, can establish the connection with Me already and let Me give you happiness: you can pray, you can enter into a dialogue with Me, and the ray of My love can flow into you, if only as a weak flow of strength because you are still imperfect. But even this weak flow of strength will make you happy, and you can increase it yourselves as soon as your love for Me ignites and is fanned to a bright blaze. Then you will already feel a faint yearning in you which I will satisfy, with the result that your longing for My illumination of love will grow ever stronger and will meet with a response depending on your degree of love. You will sense Me, you will become aware of My presence, and yet you will be unable to grasp Me intellectually, because My nature is and will remain an enigma for you. And yet, I reveal Myself to you, you will be able to recognize Me as a Being Which is love, wisdom and might within Itself. And then you will also love Me progressively more and the act of giving you happiness will take place time and again, for you will never, once you have enjoyed this bliss, want to miss it again. The spark which once was emanated by Me as an independent being will constantly strive towards the fiery sea of My love. And this striving for Me will never come to an end, My love will forever give itself, the vessels will always open themselves and forever accept the ray of My love. And the yearning for Me and its constant fulfillment will provide never-ending beatitude.”

In the Beginning
Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

291 “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was God, all things were made through him, and without him was not anything made that was made.” The New Testament reveals that God created everything by the eternal Word, his beloved Son. In him “all things were created, in heaven and on earth, all things were created through him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together.” The Church’s
faith likewise confesses the creative action of the Holy Spirit, the “giver of life,” “the Creator Spirit,” the “source of every good.”

292 The Old Testament suggests and the New Covenant reveals the creative action of the Son and the Spirit, inseparably one with that of the Father. This creative cooperation is clearly affirmed in the Church’s rule of faith: “There exists but one God, he is the Father, God the Creator, the author, the giver of order. He made all things by himself, that is, by his Word and by his Wisdom,” “by the Son and the Spirit” who, so to speak, are “his hands.” Creation is the common work of the Holy Trinity.

In the Beginning was the Word

BD No. 8739 of 01/29/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: “Time and again I want to emphasize the fact that I Am the Word of eternity, I Am the Word. Yet in the beginning the Word was with God. How can you understand this? I Myself Am the be-all and end-all, everything that exists is emanated strength to which I gave life. I created similarly-natured beings for Myself whose fundamental substance was the same as I Myself: divine strength of love. And I was in contact with these beings from the very beginning through 'the Word'. Thus the Word was 'in the beginning', when the beings were brought into life by Me. Prior to this nothing existed which was able to hear My Word, although I always and forever carried the Word within Myself, for I Am a self-aware, thinking Being Which put Its will into practice and thus was able to create whatever came to Its mind as an idea or thought. Although the beings (angels) which emerged from My strength were externalized by Me as independent I nevertheless remained in constant contact with them through 'My Word'. I spoke to them, they understood Me and therefore they were immeasurably happy. I Myself was the Word, for although they were unable to behold Me My Word nevertheless proved to them My existence, they knew that they came forth from the Being Which had created them and Which loved them tremendously. This Word of Mine was the real life in them; it was the incessant flow of strength which granted them supreme realization, since through My Word everything became understandable to them, they grasped all correlations, they knew that they had emerged from the elementary
Power and were in constant contact with this elementary Power, for It communicated with them in infinite love through the Word and they heard It. I was the Word Itself, but It only manifested Itself when I brought these beings into life. And thus there was a beginning for these beings, whereas I Myself Am forever. However, there will be no end for My created beings. They will continue to exist for all eternity, and their greatest beatitude will always consist of experiencing Me Myself through My Word, of being addressed by Me and be able to enter into a blissful dialogue. Yet a large proportion of the created beings forfeited the grace and beatitude of hearing My Word, they declined the flow of My strength of love and became incapable of hearing Me by distancing themselves from Me and preventing all communication through the Word, they closed themselves and became lifeless beings since they had no more contact with Me whatsoever. They also deprived themselves of all happiness which only My formulated illumination of love, My Word, gave to them.

The heartfelt bond with Me also irrevocably resulted in the sounding of My Word, the withdrawal from Me, however, must also always be the same as the silence of My expression of love, of My Word. Nevertheless, the entity will never cease to exist, but it will only be happy if it is able to hear My Word, in other words: I Myself Am the Word, and only My presence endows the being with beatitude, and My presence will always demonstrate itself if the being can hear Me. And what I say to the being will make it incredibly happy, for it bestows on it brightest illumination, the realization of its origin and the understanding of My nature, My reign and activity throughout the whole of infinity. Such knowledge gives pleasure to the being, especially if it had previously been in an ignorant state for a long time, if it was separated from Me for a prolonged time and had abandoned every connection with Me as an isolated being and was therefore also wretched. As soon as it can hear My Word again, as it was from the start, it will also be able to be called blessed again, for to hear My Word is also the evidence of My presence, and My presence demonstrates that the being is approaching its original state again, as it was in the beginning, that it has become the divine living creation again which emerged from Me in all perfection, which was called into life by My greater than great love in order to make it forever happy. The intimate bond with Me is only verified through the hearing of My Word, for wherever the Word can be heard that is where I Myself Am, Who is the 'Word' of eternity. And I want to transfer all My thinking, intentions and activity onto My living creations, and this only ever takes place through the Word, through contact between the being and Me, which makes the sounding of My Word possible. And this Word is, again, a thought from Me expressed in a form. I want My living creations to partake in all My thinking, intentions and activity, therefore My Word flows to them, and the beatitude of the beings rests in the fact that they may completely subordinate themselves to My will, that they have the same thoughts and will within themselves and that they are nevertheless totally free and independent beings, which are not subject to My compulsion and yet do not think and want differently, because they have reached a degree of perfection again which was theirs in the very beginning. Only the most heartfelt bond with Me will also enable them to hear My Word, yet this will also guarantee the being beatitude and eternal life.”

'And the Word was made flesh'

BD 8141 01.04.1962

God the Father is speaking: “'And the Word was made flesh and lived among us' I Myself, the eternal Word, came to earth and became flesh. It was an act of overwhelming love and mercy that had moved Me to make contact with the human beings who had distanced themselves from Me to a point that they were no longer able
to hear My voice, that they could no longer hear My Word within themselves, and who did not have a relationship with the Word of eternity any more. They had caused this vast distance from Me themselves, and they would never have been able to bridge this distance on their own, they would never have been able to hear My Word again such as it was in the beginning when I could communicate with all My living creations through the Word. For this reason My love has bridged the vast distance Itself. I Myself came to earth and became flesh and then tried to get in touch with My living creations in order to speak to them again and to build a bridge for them which would lead them back to Me into the kingdom of light and bliss.

I Am the eternal Word Myself but I could not have spoken directly to any human being from above without placing those who once had originated from Me as free living creations into a state of compulsion. They had to cross the bridge to Me voluntarily and I could only achieve that by means of My Word which, however, should not sound extraordinary but like the spoken word between human beings. And for this reason I became flesh. I took abode in the human cover of Jesus and spoke to people through Him. But it was My Word which now was spoken to them, and through this Word I was able to show people the way. I was able to instruct them and tell them My will, I was able to reveal the Gospel to them, the divine teaching of love, which should once again change their souls to a state which would enable every person to hear My Word within himself if this was his sincere will. But first humanity had to be released from sin and death. The former guilt of sin, caused by the apostasy from Me, first had to be redeemed, so that the subsequent bond with Me could be crowned by the ‘pouring out of My spirit,’ so that the human being himself could hear My voice within himself again as it was in the beginning.

‘And the Word was made flesh and lived amongst us.’ Only few people understand the meaning of these words; the eternal Word came to earth Itself because humanity was in greatest difficulty, it was not aware of its wretched condition, of its lack of light, of the spiritual darkness in which it lived. It was completely separate from Me and did nothing to reduce its vast distance from Me. The only way to help people was by means of instructions which corresponded to the truth. They had to be informed of their God and Creator’s will, and this will had to be conveyed to them by Myself. I had to speak to them Myself and could only do so through a human being. Thus I embodied Myself in this human being, and only in this manner was it possible to instruct people truthfully, to draw their attention to their wrong way of life, to inform them of My will and exemplify the kind of life they should lead themselves in order to escape their spiritual darkness, in order to walk the path I showed them first so that they could attain eternal life again. For they were influenced by My adversary who continuously provoked them into leading a life without love which subsequently made and kept them weak and they were not able to contribute anything towards their ascent.

I Myself provided them with the evidence that love results in strength. I healed the sick and carried out other miracles which only the strength of love could accomplish, I also informed them about the consequences of a heartless way of life, for I first had to explain to people why they were experiencing physical and spiritual hardship. I had to inform them that their state as human beings could not be considered a happy one and what they therefore should do to attain beatitude. And they had to hear all of this from the mouth of God. They had to be able to hear My Word, and thus the Word Itself came down to earth and became flesh. In the original state the Word sounded within every being and was the cause of inconceivable bliss. And the beings abandoned this blissfulness themselves by voluntarily distancing themselves from Me and thus could not
hear My Word any longer, because this Word was a direct emanation of love on My part which they then rejected.

Humanity’s excessive hardship on earth prompted My love and mercy to draw nearer to them and to confront them in Word despite their resistance. And anyone who had ignited just a tiny spark of love within himself recognized Me and accepted My Word. He also recognized the Deity in Me and followed Me. But by and large people just saw the human being in Me and therefore valued My Word simply as that of a human being. I was amongst them and they did not recognize Me. Nevertheless, I was able to proclaim the Gospel of love, to repeatedly impart the divine teaching of love to people and to educate My apostles Myself and then send them into the world with the task of proclaiming My Gospel and bearing witness to Me. The ‘Word Itself’ had come to earth, and It was made flesh for the benefit of humanity. And every time My Word is spoken, My infinite love and mercy bows down towards humanity and emits Its love into those human hearts who willingly accept My Word, who listen to it and recognize it as their Father’s voice and who are grateful for this great gift of grace. For I Myself Am the eternal Word, and anyone who listens to Me enters into closest contact with Me, and he will indeed achieve his last goal on this earth, he will find complete unification with Me, his God and Father, to Whom he has finally returned to be eternally blessed.”

The Word of God
Ref: Conchiglia – San Juan Diego Oct23, 2008

The Holy Spirit is speaking: “The most precious jewel is nothing compared to a single Word coming from God. The Word is a priceless Gift. The Word is born from the heart and the thought draws it to hold it in itself and to meditate it, either to express it through the sound of the voice, or to express it with the Scriptures to become witness and teaching.

The expressed Word, Creates. Once emitted, from that moment onwards, creates through the will and work of man. The first act of the creation of something becomes first a mental composition then it passes to the documentation and then to the material work. The Word is the pure science coming from God. The Word is Alpha and it is Eternal. The Word indicates and orders the Universe. It is the Word that has the greatest honor, the Word nominates God. Yes, pronounces His Name in generations in generations. The Word pronounces the forgiveness or condemnation. The Word manifests Mercy and Justice. The Word announces a birth or a death. The Word cures or kills a Soul. The Word expresses joy or sufferance. The Word expresses Love or hatred. The Word unites or divides the Population. The Word proclaims the Law of God and the law of man. The Word sings praises to peace or to war. The Word unites two Twin Souls in front of God and of the world. The word evolves man, children of God, because it instructs.

Through the Word, God manifests Himself as an overwhelming artist to make perfect His creature Man, in an evolution in the Movement of Love. The Word indicates the DNA of Man, in one part of the body is contained the entire Genetic Code of the whole body. The use of the Word in the transcendent brings to the Faith. Through the Word man is guided to do experiments, to try to understand the acting of God in History. Through the Word is analyzed the Truth coming from God. Through the Word it is necessary to refuse those who intend to converse the empire of this World and to
announce the affirmation of the Kingdom of God on Earth. With the Word it is necessary to make everything new subliming the Spirit of the Law of God.

The Word must ask God for the Gifts of the Holy Spirit that works in everything. Through the Word it is urgent to evangelize the entire world. Through the Word, one must express with his audacity and though with humbleness his own royalty and to declare to be King of himself and to say and do all the holy and just things in the Eyes of God, without waiting for approval from others because the others, in majority, are against God. Therefore do not fear the Institutions because the Institutions without you cannot exist. That which God wants is always done spite of the vane words that tend to obstruct Him.

Through the Word must be proclaimed that Mary is She who for Human Nature is Divine and yet Creature. Through the Word must be proclaimed The Glory of Jesus and the Glory of Mary Who derive the Will of God Who intends to manifests to Humanity He being Father and Mother. For the Doctrine of the Catholic Church, the origin of a Christian is the Holy Spirit and not the Hierarchy that instead is called to evaluate and recognize there were it is manifested.

I Am the Holy Spirit who announces again the Actions of God in this evil and corrupted Époque because God intends to save His children.”

The Word – the hidden Manna of the Apocalypse

MV ET:38

Jesus continues to speak: “Still seeing the Beloved’s words through My eyes, one can understand that ‘the hidden manna’ too is My Word. It is manna because it gathers all the sweetness of love of Our Trinity which is Father, Brother and Spouse of your souls and loves you with three highest loves. It is hidden because it is said in the depths of the hearts of those worthy to taste it.

I would really like being able to shower it on everyone and feed everyone with it. But it is said: ‘Do not give the pears to the pigs and the holy things to the dogs.’ Although they were cleansed in My Baptism, and redeemed by My Blood, many are viler than pigs and more doggish than dogs.

You have read that the manna in the desert spoiled for the ancient Hebrews unworthy to have it. They were unworthy due to their lack of faith and their human worries. Can I have less respect for My Word than I had for the manna destined to feed the belly, whereas the Word is destined to feed the spirit?

Therefore I give manna to those who overcome the lower part with all its tendencies, to lack of faith, to the senses, to narrow-minded and selfish cares. I give the manna of My Word that fills your spirits with sweetness and light. I give it a white pebble, and in the pebble, a new name written. In other words, in the pebble, a Truth is revealed, which is withheld from the unworthy. It is the Truth which opens the doors of eternal Life for you, which gives you the keys to it and puts you on the Way to reach the Gate of My heavenly City.

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life. Outside of Me there is no other way, truth and life. Those who overcome all obstacles to follow Me will become pillars of My temple. Through the Word they kept and put in practice, after being saved in the frightful hour of trial from the temptations that kill, they will have a seat on My own throne, together with the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.” Ref: Rev2:17
Belief in God in Jesus

God the Father is speaking: “It is only necessary for you to believe in Me and take the path to Me when you suffer hardship, for you, like children, to take refuge with the Father, Who will protect you in every spiritual and earthly adversity because you entrust yourselves to Him. Time and again I emphasize that you only ought to contact Me in thought, through kind-hearted activity or in prayer and, truly, you will not be able to go astray anymore, because your bond with Me also guarantees you My help to be delivered from My adversary and to return to the One from Whom you once originated. Admittedly, evidence for the existence of a God and Creator cannot be given to you; you have to believe in Him. Yet if you are willing to do so then you will see the evidence that bears witness to Me in everything that surrounds you. And by just thinking about it you will already be able to come to believe in Me. I just do not want you to spend your life thoughtlessly, to only take notice of the world and believe that your earthly life is an end in itself.

You should always ask yourselves why and for what reason you live on earth, in order to then also get hold of the thoughts about a God and Creator, which will time and again encircle you like waves, for the purpose and goal of your earthly life is to recognize a God and Creator, to acknowledge Him and to desire making contact with Him. Then this God and Creator will also take hold of you and never ever let you fall again. And He will also convey the knowledge of Jesus Christ, your Redeemer, to you. You will have to find Him so that you lose your weaknesses, so that your ascent to the pinnacle is assured. For even if you recognize Me, you will have little willpower to seriously strive for Me, since you are too weak due to the sin of your past apostasy from Me. And for the sake of strengthening your will the man Jesus died on the cross in order to acquire the blessings of a stronger will for you. I Myself came to help you in your great spiritual adversity which was the result of your original sin, and I Myself accomplished the act of Salvation for the redemption of your guilt in Jesus the human being. So the path of return will now be possible for you if you appeal to Jesus Christ for strength, if you place your guilt of sin at his feet and express the sincere will to return to the Father, Who took abode in Jesus, Who united Himself with Him for all eternity. Even if you thus believe in God as the Creator and Redeemer, this God can never ever be regarded as being separate from Jesus Christ, for God and Jesus are one, God merely made use of a external human shell which people called 'Jesus', but Who sheltered the fullness of Me in Himself.

I created everything, even the human shell of Jesus came forth from Me, Which I chose for Myself in order to be able to stay amongst people. You humans, too, came forth from My will yet you once separated yourselves from Me voluntarily, for only love establishes a bond with Me but you forfeited it of your own free will, whereas the human being Jesus was permeated by love, thus My fundamental substance was in Him, for this is Love. Hence, in keeping with His nature He must be God Himself, and only his external shell was human until He spiritualized it as well, so that it was able to unite with His divine Soul and nothing human remained once Jesus had accomplished the act of Salvation. Anyone who therefore has recognized Me in Jesus has also escaped the darkness, for then the Light Itself will draw him into higher spheres, for I Myself Am the Light, and the light shone to earth through the human being Jesus because it permeated the human being completely. And I would like to send this ray of light to all of you, yet your heart has to open itself to Me, you must direct your thoughts towards the One Who created you. You have to muster this will freely but then you will also be seized by My
merciful love and everything will be done to impart the correct knowledge about Jesus Christ to you, and if you acknowledge Him as God’s Son and Redeemer of the world Who became as one with Me you will never ever be able to go astray again.”

The Trinity of Light
PMG NB 1943:130

God the Father is speaking: “Our Trinity is light: An unbounded light. The Source of Itself, living by itself, and acting by itself. The universe’s greatness does not equal its Infinity. Its essence fills the Heavens, glides over Creation, and holds sway over the infernal caverns. It does not penetrate you - that would be the end of Hell - but it overwhelms them with its glowing, which is beatific in Heaven, comforting on earth, and terrifying in Hell. Everything is threefold in us: forms, effects, and powers.

God is light. A vast, majestic, and peaceful light is given by the Father. An infinite circle which has embraced all Creation since the moment when ‘Let there be light’ was said until forever and ever, for God, who existed eternally, has been embracing the Creation since it existed and will continue to embrace all that - in the final form, the eternal one, after the Judgment - will remain of Creation. He will embrace those who are eternal with Him in Heaven.

Within the eternal circle of the Father there is a second circle, begotten by the Father, working differently and yet not working in contrary fashion, for the Essence is one. It is the Son. His light, more vibrant, not only gives life to bodies, but gives Life to souls that had lost it by means of his Sacrifice. It is a flood of powerful, gentle rays which nourish your humanity and instruct your mind.

Within the second circle, produced by the two workings of the first circles, there is a third circle with even more vibrant, inflamed light. It is the Holy Spirit. He is the Love produced by the relations of the Father with the Son, the intermediary between the Two, and a consequence of the Two, the wonder of wonders.

Thought created the Word, and Thought and the Word love one another. Love is the Paraclete (Holy Spirit). He acts upon your spirit, your soul, and your flesh. For He consecrates the whole temple of your person, created by the Father and redeemed by the Son, is created in the image and likeness of the Triune God. The Holy Spirit is the chrism upon the creation of your person, made by the Father; He is Grace to befit from the Sacrifice of the Son; He is Knowledge and Light to understand the Word of God. A more concentrated Light, not because it is limited in comparison to the others, but because it is the spirit of the spirit of God, and because, in its condensation, it is most powerful, as it is most powerful in its effects.

That is why I said, ‘When the Paraclete comes, He will instruct you.’ Not even I, who am the Father’s Thought that has become the Word, can make you understand what the Holy Spirit can make you understand with a single flash.

If every knee must bend before the Son, before the Paraclete every spirit must bend, for the Spirit gives life to the spirit. It is Love that created the Universe, taught the first Servants of God, spurred the Father to give the Commandments, enlightened the Prophets, conceived the Redeemer with Mary, placed Me on the Cross, sustained the Martyrs, governed the Church, and works wonders of grace.

A white fire, unbearable for human sight and nature, He concentrates in Himself the Father and the Son and is the incomprehensible Gem, who cannot be gazed upon, in
our eternal Beauty. Fixed in the abyss of Heaven, He draws to Himself all the spirits of my triumphant Church and breaths into Himself those who are able to live by the spirit in the militant Church.

Our Trinity, our threefold and single nature is set in a single splendor in that point from which all that is, is generated in an eternal being.”

“Divinity is always present and united to the Christ, who is God, like the Father. On the Earth, as in Heaven, the Father is in the Son and the Son is in the Father, They love each other and by loving each other they generate the Holy Spirit. The power of the Father is the generation of the Son and the act of generating and being generated creates the Fire, that is, the Spirit of the Spirit of God. The Power turns to the Wisdom Whom It generated and Who turns to the Power in the joy of being One for the Other and of knowing each other for what They are. And since all good reciprocal knowledge creates love - even our imperfect knowledge does - there is the Holy Spirit. There is the One Who, if it were possible to add perfection to divine perfection, ought to be called the Perfection of Perfection. The Holy Spirit! The simple thought of Him fills one with light, joy, and peace.” Ref: PMG V4:384

When Does a Soul Have Life?

“The Virgin Mary in the Writings of Maria Valtorta” – Fr. Gabriel Roschini O.S.M.:35-75

“A soul has life, it exists from that moment that God thinks it. Yes it exists in God’s thought. It is the thought of God that creates it. The soul of my mother was thought by God from everlasting. It is therefore eternal in God’s thought and in its beauty in which God poured every perfection to it, to receive delight and comfort from it.

Yes, Mother, with Whom God, Immense, Sublime, Virgin, Uncreated, was pregnant and carried You like a most sweet burden, rejoicing at feeling You stir within Him, when with Your smile, he created the Universe! He laboriously gave birth to You to give you to the world, most gentle soul, born of the Supreme Virgin to be the ‘Virgin,’ the Perfection of Creation, the Light of Paradise, the Advice of God, Who looking at You, forgave Sin, because You alone, by Yourself; can love as all Mankind put together cannot love. In You is the Forgiveness of God! In you is God’s Medicine, O caress on the Eternal One’s wound that man inflicted on God! In you is the health of the World, O Mother of the Love Incarnate and of the granted Redeemer! O soul of my Mother! Merged in Love with My Father, I looked at you within Me, O soul of My Mother! Your splendor, Your prayer, the idea of being carried by You comforted Me forever and ever for My destiny of sorrow and inhuman experience of what the corrupted world is for the most Perfect God. Thank you, Mother! When I came from Heaven I was already full of Your consolation, I descended perceiving you alone, Your perfume, Your song, Your love ... Joy, My Joy!

But I was to be Flesh as well as Spirit. Flesh to save the flesh. Flesh to sublime the flesh, taking it to Heaven many centuries before its time. Because the flesh inhabited by the spirit is God’s masterpiece and Heaven had already been made for it. In order to become flesh I needed a Mother. To be God it was necessary that the Father was God.

Jesus continues to speak, ‘I solemnly tell you that the true house of God, the Holy Ark, is her heart, the veil of which is her most pure flesh and its embroidery work is all her virtues.’

The Most Holy Trinity, before anything else, loves itself infinitely: that is its greatest love. Next to loving itself, the Trinity has loved Mary before anything else; and that is its second greatest love. The reason why the Trinity’s second greatest love is directed at Mary is because they saw in Her the dearest creature of all. The Father saw
in Her His future Daughter of Predilection. The Son saw in Her His future, dearest Mother. The Holy Spirit saw in Her His future immaculate Spouse. The Holy Trinity, therefore, awarded Mary gifts worthy of their unique and most remarkable love for Her.

The Holy Trinity has had a unique love for the Blessed Virgin from all eternity. This is the key to, and supreme reason for, the Blessed Virgin’s extraordinary grandeur and exceptional perfection.”

Jesus says: “Before man existed, the Supreme Mind that knows everything knew that man, on his own, would be a thief and a murderer. And as the Eternal Goodness has no limits in being good, before Guilt existed, He thought of the means to obliterate Guilt. The means: I, the Word. The instrument to render the means an efficient instrument: Mary. And the Virgin was created in the sublime mind of God. Everything was created for Me, beloved Son of the Father. I, King should have had under my Divine Royal feet carpets and stools such as no royal palace had, and songs and voices and servants and ministers around me as no sovereign ever possessed, and flowers and gems, all the sublime, the greatness, the kindness that it may derive from the thought of a God.

The Virgin Mary was embraced by the holy Trinity before time ever existed. She was the Trinity’s Tabernacle. She contained the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit in her womb, because She contained the blessed fruit of Her virginal womb, Jesus, in whom was found the unity of the Word with the Father and the Holy Spirit. She was thus the Beloved of the most Holy Trinity. Revelation is Her treasure, and She is the kind and beloved Queen of Revelation. She distributes Wisdom and gives the Word. She is the virginal Fountain made life-giving by God. She gushes forth with streams of living water, that is, eternal life, for whoever drinks of it.”

**The Soul of Mary**

MV Volume 1:19

Jesus continues to speak: “Now think what must have been the beauty of this soul, which the Father looked fondly on before time existed, which formed the delight of the Trinity, which Trinity longed to adorn it with its gifts, to present it to itself. Oh! Most Holy Mother Mary that God created for Himself and then for the salvation of men! Bearer of the Savior, You were the first salvation. Living Paradise, with Your smile You began to sanctify the world.

Then God created His Spouse and said to Her: ‘Come with Me. At My side see what I am doing for our Son. Look and rejoice, eternal Virgin, eternal Maiden and may Your smile fill this Empyrean and give the angels their starting note and teach Paradise celestial harmony. I am looking at You. And I see You as You will be, Immaculate Woman, Who are now only a spirit: the spirit in which I rejoice. I am looking at You and I give the sea and the firmament the blue of Your eyes, the holy corn the color of Your hair, whiteness to the lily and a rosy color to the rose, like Your silky skin. I copy the pearls from Your own minute teeth, I make the sweet strawberries watching Your mouth and I give the nightingale Your notes and the turtle-dove Your weeping. And reading Your future
thoughts and listening to the throbs of Your heart, I have the motive of guidance in creating. Come, My joy, have the worlds as a plaything as long as You will be the dancing light of My thought: have the worlds for your smile, have wreathes and necklaces of stars; place the moon under Your gentle feet; make Galatea Your stellar scarf. The stars and planets are for you. Come and enjoy looking at the flowers that will be a childish joy for Your Baby and a pillow for the Son of Your womb. Come and see sheep and lambs, eagles, and doves being created. Stay beside Me when I make the hollow of the seas and the grooves of the rivers and I raise the mountains and I adorn them with the snow forest. Stay here while I sow faddors and trees and vines, and I make the olive-tree for You, My Peaceful One, and the vine for You, My vine branch, who will bear the Eucharistic Bunch of grapes. Run, fly, rejoice, My Beauty. And may the universe, which is created hour by hour, learn from You to love Me, My Love, and may it become more beautiful owing to Your smile, Mother of My Son, Queen of My Paradise, Love of Your God.’ And again, seeing the fault and admiring the Faultless One: ‘Come to Me, You Who wipe out the bitterness of human disobedience, of human fornication with Satan and of human ingratitude. I will take with You my revenge over Satan.’”

Mary is the witness of God’s love for Man

The Blessed Mother is speaking: “My humility could not allow Me to think that so much glory, was reserved for Me in Heaven. In My mind there was the almost certainty that My human flesh, made holy by carrying God, would not have experienced decay because God is Life, and when He sates and fills a creature with Himself, this action of His is like an aroma that preserves from the corruption of death.

I had remained not only immaculate, not only I had been united to God with a chaste prolific embrace, but I was sated, even as far as My innermost recesses, with the emanations of the Divinity concealed in My womb and intent on being veiled with mortal flesh. But that the kindness of the Eternal Father had reserved for His maid the joy of feeling again the touch of My Son’s hand on MY body, His embrace, His kiss, and of hearing again His voice with My ears, of seeing His face with My eyes, I could not think that this would be granted to Me, neither did I wish it. It would have been sufficient if these beatitudes had been granted to My spirit, and that would have filled My ego with blissful happiness.

But, in witness of His first creative thought concerning man, whom He, the Creator, had destined to live, passing away without death, from the earthly Paradise to the celestial one, in the eternal Kingdom, God wanted Me, the Immaculate, in Heaven, in body and soul, as soon as My earthly life ended.

I am the certain witness of what God had thought and wanted for man: an innocent life and unaware of sin, a placid passage from this life to eternal Life, whereby, like one who passes over the threshold of a house to enter a palace, man with his complete being, made of a material body and a spiritual soul, would pass from the Earth to Paradise, increasing the perfection of his ego, given to him by God, with the complete perfection, both of the body and of the spirit, which was, on the divine mind, destined to every creature who had remained faithful to God and to Grace. Man would have reached this perfection in the full light that is in Heaven and fills it, coming from God, the eternal Sun Who illuminates it.
God placed Me, elevated in body and soul to the glory of Heaven, before the Patriarchs, the Prophets, the Saints, the Angels and the Martyrs and He said:

‘Here is the perfect work of the Creator. This is what I created in My truer image and likeness among all the sons of man, the fruit of a divine creative masterpiece, the wonder of the Universe that sees closed in one only being the divine, in the eternal spirit like God and like Him spiritual, intelligent, free, holy, and the material creature in the most and innocent body, to which every other living being, in the three kingdoms of creation, is compelled to bow. This is the witness of My love for man, for whom I wanted a perfect organism and a blissful destiny of eternal life in My Kingdom. This is the witness that I have forgiven man whom, by will of the Trine Love, I granted to be reinstated and recreated in My eyes. This is the mystic stone of comparison, this is the link of junction between man and God, it is She Who takes the times back to the early days and gives My divine Eyes the joy of contemplating an Eve as I had created her, and now made even more beautiful and holy, because She is the Mother of My Word, and because She is the Martyr of the greatest forgiveness. For Her Immaculate Heart that never knew any stain, not even the lightest, I open the treasures of Heaven, and for Her head, that never knew pride, I make a wreath of My brightness and I crown Her, because She is most holy to Me, so that She may be your Queen.’

There are no tears in Heaven. But in place of the joyful tears, that the spirits would have shed, if they were granted to weep – the liquid that trickles squeezed by an emotion – there was, after these divine words, a sparkling of lights, a changing of splendors into more vivid splendors, a burning of charitable fires in a more ardent fire, an unsurpassable and indescribable playing of celestial harmonies, which were joined by the voice of My Son, in praise of God the Father and of His Maid for ever blissful.”

The Divinity of the Most Holy Mary

Ref: Message to Conchiglia on the 25th of March 2001 – The Annunciation

Mary is Divine. Conchiglia receives from Jesus the Revelation regarding the Sign of the Cross for the New Renewed Earth. This is the first revelation in which we are acknowledged of the Divinity of the Most Holy Mary. “The Life taught by the Father, was created by Me, who still was not. But I was even before the World existed, I Am the Son, who, came out from the Father, all I created by the Holy Spirit’s work and the Mother existed even before I was in the rising Thought of the Father. I want that the Holy Triad is venerated without excluding My Mother, and the Sign you do, since now, will be: in the Name of the Father, of the Mother, of the Son and of the Holy Spirit. Her Sign will be at the center of the chest, because there the heart and her heart of Mother of the whole Universe Is treasured and will soon triumph! Don’t have fear, Conchiglia. A lot of people will rise against you, but we are with you and so, who is like God? And they perfectly know that the Mother was at my feet when I, was dying!”

Note that in the Revelation of the 25th of December 2002 (given at 5 o’clock PM) about the Sign of the Cross, Jesus says, “that He respects the liturgy of the Church. What refers to the Sign of the Cross in THE REVELATION given to Conchiglia must be considered for the New Times. Awaiting for the judgment of the Holy Catholic Church, it is possible to include the Most Holy Mary in the Sign of the Cross, in the silence of your heart or while you pray privately with your family.”
Mary is Divine

Ref: Conchiglia Message March 2002, 2004

Conchiglia receives from God the Father the Revelation of the Feminine side of God: "God from God, Light from Light, True God from True God." From Me the Essence, I made Three Parts: Father, Son and Holy Spirit, but Mary, is the Feminine Part of Me the Father.

Remember sons, where the Mother is, Angels and Saints accompany her everywhere, giving her Honor and Glory. And do not be scandalized, rather joy yourselves of the privilege I’m about to give you. Thanks to her powerful intercession, pray with the heart in this way: "Glory be to the Father, to the Mother, to the Son and to the Holy Spirit. As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, world without end." Conchiglia, be docile with each our request. Do not be scared of writing these amazing Words. Who loves the Mother will not be scandalized.

The Triumph of the Immaculate Heart of Mary consists in recognizing that Mary Is Divine and it is "to you Conchiglia" that we have revealed for the fist time this Great Truth. A Truth that we are confirming to other sons, in order to make them recognize in the world the “instrument Conchiglia,” that we have chosen to proclaim the Divinity of Mary. I Jesus Am Him who Is. Mary Is Her who Is. You are, with who we are (CON-CHI-NOI SIAMO). We are in you to show ourselves to the World through the Word of Truth which is the Pearl treasured “by you Conchiglia,” because in you is “The Secret of the King.”

In Loreto, where Pope John Paul II solemnly celebrated the Holy Mass, an extraordinary event had happened and was reported by the Italian TV channel RAI VATICANO. During the Angelus, said for the first time in Italian, the Holy Father honored the Divinity of the Most Holy Mary by saying: “GLORY TO THE FATHER, TO THE MOTHER, TO THE SON AND TO THE HOLY SPIRIT”. Pope John Paul II confirmed to know and approve the Revelation given to Conchiglia and blessed the Official Banner of the Movimento d’Amore San Juan Diego in front of thousands of people.

As you can see, it’s within the Trinity that God begins to reveal His plan for mankind. The Trinity reveals the Son and to have a Son one must have a mother, and Her name was Mary. The Virgin Mary was embraced by the Holy Trinity, you could say contained by the Trinity, even before time ever existed. She was the Trinity’s Tabernacle. She contained the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit in her womb, because She contained the blessed fruit of Her virginal womb, Jesus, in whom was found the unity of the Word with the Father and the Holy Spirit. Because the flesh inhabited by the spirit is God’s masterpiece and Heaven had already been made for it.”

“GLORY TO THE FATHER, TO THE MOTHER, TO THE SON AND TO THE HOLY SPIRIT”
Profession of Faith
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

198: Our Profession of faith begins with God, for God is the First and the Last, the beginning and the end of everything. The Credo begins with God the Father, for the Father is the first divine person of the Most Holy Trinity: our Creed begins with the creation of heaven and earth, the creation is the beginning and the foundation of all God’s work.

200: “I Believe in One God” These are the words with which the Niceno-Constantinopolitan Creed begins. The confession of God’s oneness, which has its roots in the divine revelation of the Old Covenant, is inseparable from the profession of God’s existence and is equally fundamental. God is unique; there is only one God: “The Christian faith confesses that God is one in nature, substance, and essence.”

202: Jesus himself affirms that God is “the one Lord” whom you must love “with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.” At the same time Jesus gives us to understand that he himself is “the Lord.” To confess that Jesus is Lord is distinctive of Christian faith. This is not contrary to belief in the One God. Nor does believing in the Holy Spirit as “Lord and giver of life” introduces any division into the One God:

We firmly believe and confess without reservation that there is only one true God, eternal, infinite and unchangeable, incomprehensible, almighty, and ineffable, the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit; three persons indeed, but one essence, substance or nature entirely simple.

213: God is the fullness of Being and of every perfection, without origin and without end. All creatures receive all that they are and have from him; but he alone is his very being, and he is of himself everything that he is.

The Father’s plan for Man
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

51-53 “By natural reasoning man can know God with certainty, on the basis of His works. But there is another order of knowledge, which man cannot possibly arrive at by his own powers: the order of divine Revelation. Through an utterly free decision: God has revealed Himself, and given Himself to man. This He does by revealing the mystery, His plan of loving goodness, formed from all eternity in Christ, for the benefit of all men. God has fully revealed this plan by sending us His beloved Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit.

It pleased God, in his goodness and wisdom, to reveal Himself and to make known the mystery of His will. His will was that men should have access to the Father, through Christ; the Word made flesh, in the Holy Spirit, and thus became sharers in the divine nature.

God, who ‘dwells in unapproachable light,’ wants to communicate His own divine life to the men He freely created, in order to adopt them as His sons in His only-begotten Son. By revealing Himself God wishes to make them capable of responding to Him, and of knowing Him, and of loving Him far beyond their own natural capacity.

The divine plan of Revelation is realized simultaneously ‘by deeds and words which are intrinsically bound up with each other’ and shed light on each other. It involves a specific divine pedagogy: God communicates himself to man gradually. He prepares him to welcome by stages the supernatural Revelation that is to culminate in the person and mission of the Incarnate Word, Jesus Christ.”
Summa Theologiae: Can Man See God
Reference summary: St Thomas Aquinas – Summa Theologiae: 27-29

“Our senses cannot perceive God, for what we sense by bodily organs must also be bodily. **God has no body and cannot be sensed or imagined, but only understood.** Augustine thought it probable that when the eyes of the blessed see the New Heaven and the New Earth, they will see God present everywhere governing things, as we now see life of the living breathing people around us; for that they are alive is not something we believe, but something we see as soon as we look at them.

So unless God Himself, by his grace, enters a created mind and makes Himself intelligible to it, no such mind can ever see God. Eyesight is an entirely bodily ability that can’t be raised to an immaterial level; our eyes see only this or that instantiation of a nature without abstracting it.

When created minds do see God’s substance, the very substance of God itself forms their understanding; but then something more than their nature is needed to predispose them to such sublimity: what we call a light of glory. The brightness of God will illuminate her, namely, the community of those who see God. This supernatural light likens us to God: when He shall appear, we shall be like Him and shall see Him just as He is.

This light makes the creature like God. The more such light there is in the mind, the more perfectly the mind sees God. And those who have a greater love have the more light. Real love causes greater desire, and desire is itself in some way a predisposition making man fit to receive what he desires. So those who love more will see God more perfectly and be more blessed.

God, infinitely perfect and blessed in Himself, in a plan of sheer goodness freely created man to make him share in his own blessed life. For this reason, at every time and in every place, God draws close to man. He calls man to seek Him, to know Him, to love Him, with all his strength.”

The Foundation of Creation
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

280 Creation is the foundation of “all God’s saving plans,” the “beginning of the history of salvation” that culminates in Christ. Conversely, the mystery of Christ casts conclusive light on the mystery of creation and reveals the end for which “in the beginning God created the heavens and the earth”: from the beginning, God envisaged the glory of the new creation in Christ.

The Revelation of God as Trinity
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

237: The Trinity is a mystery of faith in the strict sense, one of the “**mysteries that are hidden in God, which can never be known unless they are revealed by God.**” To be sure, God has left traces of his Trinitarian being in his work of creation and in his Revelation throughout the Old Testament. But his inmost Being as Holy Trinity is a mystery that is inaccessible to reason alone or even to Israel’s faith before the Incarnation of God’s Son and the sending of the Holy Spirit.

241: For this reason the apostles confess Jesus to be the Word: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God”; as “the image of the invisible God”; as “the radiance of the glory of God and the very stamp of his nature.”
Following this apostolic tradition, the Church confessed at the first ecumenical council at Nicaea that the Son is “consubstantial” (definition: having the same substance as something else, especially another member of the Holy Trinity) with the Father, that is, one only God with him. The second ecumenical council, held at Constantinople in 381, kept this expression in its formulation of the Nicene Creed and confessed “the only-begotten Son of God, eternally begotten of the Father, light from light, true God from true God, begotten not made, consubstantial with the Father.”

The apostolic faith concerning the Spirit was confessed by the second ecumenical council at Constantinople 381; “We believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord and giver of life, who proceeds from the Father,” By this confession, the Church recognizes the Father as “the source and origin of the whole divinity.” But the eternal origin of the Spirit is not unconnected with the Son’s origin: “The Holy Spirit, the third person (definition: a unique human being) of the Trinity, is God, one and equal with the Father and the Son, of the same substance and also of the same nature. Yet he is not called the Spirit of the father alone, but the Spirit of both the Father and the Son.” The Creed of the Church from the Council of Constantinople confesses: “With the Father and the Son, he is worshiped and glorified.”

Trinity Problem - How can God be one and three Persons?

The doctrine of the Trinity is foundational to the Christian faith. It is crucial for properly understanding what God is like, how He relates to us, and how we should relate to Him. But it also raises many difficult questions. How can God be both one and three persons? Is the Trinity a contradiction? If Jesus is God, why do the Gospels record instances where Jesus prayed to God?

The Catholic doctrine of the Trinity means that there is one God who eternally exists as three distinct Persons — the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Stated differently, God is one in essence and three in person. These definitions express three crucial truths: (1) The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are distinct Persons, (2) each Person is fully God, (3) there is only one God!

The Bible speaks of the Father as God (Philippians 1:2), Jesus as God (Titus 2:13), and the Holy Spirit as God (Acts 5:3–4). Are these just three different ways of looking at God, or simply ways of referring to three different roles that God plays?

The answer must be no, because the Bible also indicates that the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are distinct Persons. For example, since the Father sent the Son into the world (John 3:16), He cannot be the same person as the Son. Likewise, after the Son returned to the Father (John 16:10), the Father and the Son sent the Holy Spirit into the world (John 14:26; Acts 2:33). Therefore, the Holy Spirit must be distinct from the Father and the Son?

Before we answer these questions, we should first review the history of the Ancient Church to see where the teachings of the three persons in God came from:
The early Christians were quick to spot new heresies. In the third century, Sabellius, a Libyan priest who was staying at Rome, invented a new one. He claimed there is only one person in the Godhead, so that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are all one person with different "offices," rather than three persons who are one being in the Godhead, as the orthodox position holds.

Of course, people immediately recognized that Sabellius’s teaching contradicted the historic faith of the Church, and he was quickly excommunicated. His heresy became known as Sabellianism, Modalism, and Patripassianism. It was called Sabellianism after its founder, Modalism after the three modes or roles which it claimed the one person of the Trinity occupied, and Patripassianism after its implication that the person of the Father (Pater-) suffered (-passion) on the cross when Jesus died.

Because Modalism asserts that there is only one person in the Godhead, it makes nonsense of passages which show Jesus talking to his Father (e.g., John 17), or declaring he is going to be with the Father (John 14:12, 28, 16:10) One role of a person cannot go to be with another role of that person, or say that the two of them will send the Holy Spirit while they remain in heaven (John 14:16-17, 26, 15:26, 16:13–15; Acts 2:32–33).

Modalism quickly died out; it was too contrary to the ancient Christian faith to survive for long. Unfortunately, it was reintroduced in the early twentieth century in the new Pentecostal movement. In its new form, Modalism is often referred to as Jesus Only theology since it claims that Jesus is the only person in the Godhead and that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are merely names, modes, or roles of Jesus. Today the United Pentecostal Church, as well as numerous smaller groups which call themselves "apostolic churches," teach the Jesus Only doctrine. Through the Word Faith
movement, it has begun to infect traditionally Trinitarian Pentecostalism. Ironically, Trinity Broadcasting Network, operated by Word Faith preacher Paul Crouch, has given a television voice to many of these Jesus Only preachers (who are, of course, militantly anti-Trinitarian).

In the quotes that follow, the Fathers’ forceful rejection of Modalism is shown not only when they condemn it by name, but also by passages in which they speak of one person of the Trinity being with another, being sent from another, or speaking to another.

The Letter of Barnabas
"And further, my brethren, if the Lord [Jesus] endured to suffer for our soul, he being the Lord of all the world, to whom God said at the foundation of the world, ‘Let us make man after our image, and after our likeness,’ understand how it was that he endured to suffer at the hand of men" (Letter of Barnabas 5 [A.D. 74] emphasis added).

Hermas
"The Son of God is older than all his creation, so that he became the Father’s adviser in his creation. Therefore also he is ancient" (The Shepherd 12 [A.D. 80]).

Ignatius of Antioch
"Jesus Christ, was with the Father before the beginning of time, and in the end was revealed. Jesus Christ, came forth from one Father and is with and has gone to one [Father]. . . . [T]here is one God, who has manifested himself by Jesus Christ his Son, who is his eternal Word, not proceeding forth from silence, and who in all things pleased him that sent him" (Letter to the Magnesians 6–8 [A.D. 110] emphasis added).

Justin Martyr
"God speaks in the creation of man with the very same design, in the following words: ‘Let us make man after our image and likeness.’ I shall quote again the words narrated by Moses himself, from which we can indisputably learn that [God] conversed with someone numerically distinct from himself and also a rational being; but this offspring who was truly brought forth from the Father, was with the Father before all the creatures, and the Father communed with him" (Dialogue with Trypho the Jew 62 [A.D. 155]).

Polycarp of Smyrna
"I praise you for all things, I bless you, I glorify you, along with the everlasting and heavenly Jesus Christ, your beloved Son, with whom, to you and the Holy Spirit, be glory both now and to all coming ages. Amen" (Martyrdom of Polycarp 14 [A.D. 155] emphasis added).

Mathetes
"[The Father] sent the Word that he might be manifested to the world. This is he who was from the beginning, who appeared as if new, and was found old. This is he who, being from everlasting is today called the Son" (Letter to Diognetus 11 [A.D. 160] emphasis added).

Irenaeus
"It was not angels, therefore, who made us nor who formed us, neither had angels power to make an image of God, nor anyone else. For God did not stand in need of these in order to accomplish what he had himself determined with himself beforehand should be done, as if he did not possess his own hands. For with him [the Father] were
always present the Word and Wisdom, the Son and the Spirit, by whom and in whom, freely and spontaneously, he made all things, to whom also he speaks, saying, ‘Let us make man in our image and likeness’ [Gen. 1:26]" (Against Heresies 4:20:1 [A.D. 189] emphasis added).

Tertullian

"While keeping to this demurrer always, there must, nevertheless, be place for reviewing for the sake of the instruction and protection of various persons. Otherwise it might seem that each perverse opinion is not examined but simply prejudged and condemned. This is especially so in the case of the present heresy [Sabellianism], which considers itself to have the pure truth when it supposes that one cannot believe in the one only God in any way other than by saying that Father, Son, and Spirit are the selfsame person. As if one were not all, through the unity of substance." (Against Praxeas 2:3–4 [A.D. 216]).

"Keep always in mind the rule of faith which I profess and by which I bear witness that the Father and the Son and the Spirit are inseparable from each other, and then you will understand what is meant by it. Observe, now, that I say the Father is other [distinct], and the Son is other, and the Spirit is other. . . . I say this, however, out of necessity, since they contend that the Father and the Son and the Spirit are the selfsame person" (ibid. 9:1).

Hippolytus

"Thus, after the death of Zephyrinus, supposing that he had obtained [the position] after which he so eagerly pursued, he [Pope Callistus] excommunicated Sabellius, as not entertaining orthodox opinions" (Refutation of All Heresies 9:7 [A.D. 228]).

Novatian

"[W]ho does not acknowledge that the person of the Son is second after the Father, when he reads that it was said by the Father, consequently to the Son, ‘Let us make man in our image and likeness’ [Gen. 1:26]? Or when he reads [as having been said] to Christ: ‘Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten you. Ask of me, and I will give you the heathens for your inheritance, and the ends of the earth for your possession’ [Ps. 2:7–8]? Or when also that beloved writer says: ‘The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, until I shall make your enemies the stool of your feet’ [Ps. 110:1]? Or when, unfolding the prophecies of Isaiah, he finds it written thus: ‘Thus says the Lord to Christ my Lord’? Or when he reads: ‘I came not down from heaven to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me’ [John 6:38]? Or when he finds it written: ‘Because he who sent me is greater than I’ [cf. John 14:24, 28]? Or when he finds it placed side by side with others: ‘Moreover, in your law it is written that the witness of two is true. I bear witness of myself, and the Father who sent me bears witness of me’ [cf. John 8:17–18]?" (Treatise on the Trinity 26 [A.D. 235]).

"And I should have enough to do were I to endeavor to gather together all the passages [of the kind in the previous quotation], since the divine Scripture, not so much of the Old as also of the New Testament, everywhere shows him to be born of the Father, by whom all things were made, and without whom nothing was made, who always has obeyed and obeys the Father; that he always has power over all things, but as delivered, as granted, as by the Father himself permitted to him. And what can be so evident proof that this is not the Father, but the Son; as that he is set forth as being obedient to God the Father, unless, if he be believed to be the Father, Christ may be said to be subjected to another God the Father?" (ibid.)
Pope Dionysius

"Next, then, I may properly turn to those who divide and cut apart and destroy the monarchy, the most sacred proclamation of the Church of God, making of it, as it were, three powers, distinct substances, and three godheads. I have heard that some of your catechists and teachers of the divine Word take the lead in this tenet. They are, so to speak, diametrically opposed to the opinion of Sabellius. He, in his blasphemy, says that the Son is the Father and vice versa" (Letters of Pope Dionysius to Bishop Dionysius of Alexandria 1:1 [A.D. 262]).

Gregory the Wonderworker

"But some treat the Holy Trinity in an awful manner, when they confidently assert that there are not three persons, and introduce (the idea of) a person devoid of subsistence. Wherefore we clear ourselves of Sabellius, who says that the Father and the Son are the same [person]. We forswear this, because we believe that three persons—namely, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit—are declared to possess the one Godhead: for the one divinity showing itself forth according to nature in the Trinity establishes the oneness of the nature" (A Sectional Confession of Faith 8 [A.D. 262]).

"But if they say, ‘How can there be three persons, and how but one divinity?’ we shall make this reply: That there are indeed three persons, inasmuch as there is one person of God the Father, and one of the Lord the Son, and one of the Holy Spirit; and yet that there is but one divinity, inasmuch as, there is one substance in the Trinity" (ibid., 14).

Methodius

"For the kingdom of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, is one, even as their substance is one and their dominion one. Whence also, with one and the same adoration, we worship the one deity in three persons, subsisting without beginning, uncreated, without end, and to which there is no successor. For neither will the Father ever cease to be the Father, nor again the Son to be the Son and King, nor the Holy Ghost to be what in substance and personality he is. For nothing of the Trinity will suffer diminution, either in respect of eternity, or of communion, or of sovereignty" (Oration on the Psalms 5 [A.D. 305]).

Athanasius

"[The Trinity] is a Trinity not merely in name or in a figurative manner of speaking; rather, it is a Trinity in truth and in actual existence. Just as the Father is he that is, so also his Word is one that is and is God over all. And neither is the Holy Spirit nonexistent but actually exists and has true being. Less than these the Catholic Church does not hold, lest she sink to the level of the Jews of the present time, imitators of Caiaphas, or to the level of Sabellius" (Letters to Serapion 1:28 [A.D. 359]).

"They [the Father and the Son] are one, not as one thing now divided into two, but really constituting only one, nor as one thing twice named, so that the same becomes at one time the Father and at another his own Son. This latter is what Sabellius held, and he was judged a heretic. On the contrary, they are two, because the Father is Father and is not his own Son, and the Son is Son and not his own Father" (Discourses Against the Arians 3:4 [A.D. 360]).

Fulgentius of Ruspe

"See, in short you have it that the Father is one, the Son another, and the Holy Spirit another; in person, each is other, but in nature they are not other. In this regard he
[Christ] says, ‘The Father and I, we are one’ [John 10:30]. He teaches us that ‘one’ refers to their nature and ‘we are’ to their persons. In like manner it is said, ‘There are three who bear witness in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Spirit, and these three are one’ [cf. 1 John 5:7]. Let Sabellius hear ‘we are,’ let him hear ‘three,’ and let him believe that there are three persons" (The Trinity 4:1 [A.D. 513]).

**Mystery of the Holy Trinity**

Ref: MV:[July 1, 1943]

Jesus is speaking: "To your very limited intellectual capacity, to your embryonic spirituality, it is not granted to know the mystery of the nature of God. But to the spiritual ones among the mass of the so-called spiritual, the mystery is made more knowable. To the lovers of the Son, to those who are truly marked with My Blood, the mystery is unveiled with a greater clarity, because My Blood is Knowledge, and My predilection, a school.

Today is a great feast in Heaven, because all Heaven sings today the 'Sanctus' to the Lamb whose Blood was poured out for human Redemption. You [Maria] are one of the few—too few—creatures who venerate My Blood as It should be venerated. But to those who do venerate It, that Blood, from the time when It was shed, speaks with words of eternal Life and supersensible knowledge. If My Blood were more loved and venerated, more invoked and believed in, many of the evils which bring you all to the abyss would be exorcised.

It spoke, this Blood, when It was still beneath the figure of the mosaic lamb, under the figure of the prophetic words in the sign of the preserving Tau. It spoke, after It was shed, in the mouth of the apostles; It shouts Its power in the Apocalypse; It invites with Its call by the mouths of the mystics. But It is not loved. It is not remembered. It is not invoked. My Church has so many feasts. But a most solemn feast for My Blood is lacking. And in My Blood is salvation!

Today, the feast of My Blood, I illumine a mystery for you. Say: ‘Glory to the Father, to the Son, to the Holy Spirit,’ because it is of Us that I want to speak to you. Because of your human heaviness, figures are needed in order to think of the Father and the Holy Spirit, incorporeal Beings of infinite beauty, but Whom none of you can conceive with your human senses. So much so, that only with difficulty do you turn with all your thought to Them to invoke Them, as you invoke Me Whom you think of as a Man-God. You do not understand even remotely, therefore, the mystery of Our Trinity.

In order to think of God there is no need to bring up comparisons with other beings. He is. In being, there is all. But being has no body, and the eternal Being has no body."

**God reveals the Mystery of the Holy Trinity**

The mysteries that are hidden in God can never be known unless they are revealed by God. To answer these questions and to set us free from the darkness of error, God the Father is going to reveal the mystery of the Holy Trinity:

**God and Jesus are One**

Ref: Vol. 6:32 BD

God the Father is speaking: “That the human spiritual state is growing increasingly darker is revealed by fact that people are no longer able to understand God’s ‘becoming One’ with Jesus properly, and that they therefore also lack the right comprehension for God’s ‘human manifestation.’ Owing to the misguided teaching of the
three-person Deity they began to think wrongly. Yet, time and again, it has to be said that the eternal Deity cannot be personified, thus it cannot be conceived as anything other than power permeating the whole of eternity. *This power cannot be limited nor can it be thought of as a ‘form’, but it can permeate a form completely. And this process of complete permeation by divine strength occurred in the man Jesus.*

He was full of love and love is the fundamental substance of the eternal Deity, ceaselessly emanated into infinity, which creates and maintains everything. And this divine strength of love permeated the human form of Jesus and thus manifested itself in Him. God’s fundamental nature took abode in the man Jesus and thus God became ‘human’, and since Jesus was completely filled with the fundamental substance of God, He became ‘God’. Because even His completely spiritualized human form was able to wholly unify with God after His crucifixion so that Jesus then became the comprehensible Deity, that the human being cannot imagine God other than in Jesus, but that it cannot ever be a question of ‘two people’. The human being Jesus had achieved the goal on earth, the complete deification, which all created beings should achieve; because God wanted to create images of Himself whose final perfection, however, had to be achieved by the free will of the being itself. Jesus the man achieved this deification not only on account of a life of love, but with the act of Salvation He also redeemed humanity’s guilt of sin, for He used God’s strength of love or He would have been unable to bear the terrible suffering and crucifixion. This strength of love was God’s fundamental nature, thus God Himself was within the man Jesus in all fullness and accomplished the act of Salvation.

However, it is a misleading concept when you humans speak of a three-person God because the eternal Deity cannot be personified since It is pure love, and this love manifested Itself in Jesus, and thus the eternal spirit God was working in Jesus, and to all beings He can only be comprehensible in Jesus. Since God’s former created beings had abandoned Him because they could not see Him, He became a visible God to them in Jesus. *But Jesus is not a second being that could be thought of as existing next to God. He is God because God is strength of love, which permeates a fully spiritualized form, thus it consists entirely of divine fundamental substance and is therefore only visible to those beings who have also become spiritualized in order to see spiritually.*

It is certainly correct to describe God’s nature as Father, Son and Holy Spirit if the Father is acknowledged as love, the Son as wisdom and the Holy Spirit as the will or power of God, Because God’s nature is love, wisdom and power. But the goal God had set for Himself when He created the beings, the voluntary deification of these beings, also explains when it is achieved; *God’s manifestation in Jesus, the visible Deity in Jesus, while the three-person Deity does not allow for a correct, i.e. truthful explanation. People have created their own concepts which obstruct their spiritual maturing process, because only one God can be called upon; three different Gods may not be prayed to but God Himself wants to be acknowledged in Jesus, and hence He can only be worshipped in Jesus. And He demands this acknowledgment of all human beings, because this acknowledgment had been denied to Him in the past, and because the act of Salvation has to be accepted at the same time. Because no person can find forgiveness of his original sin without Jesus Christ, and therefore the human being has to declare his belief in Him, he has to believe that God Himself has shown compassion for humanity and accomplished the act of Salvation in Jesus.*
The Doctrine of the Trinity of God

BD No. 4484 of 11/11/1948 taken from book 52

God the Father is speaking: “You have the gift of being able to use your intellect and you ought to use this gift. In an earthly respect your life compels you to do so and you readily comply with this compulsion. It is the most natural thing in the world for you to think about everything you encounter, to explore and ponder and thus intellectually enhance your earthly knowledge. But only rarely if ever do you use your intellect in order to acquire spiritual knowledge of your own inner accord. You certainly allow yourselves to receive it from external sources and accept it without using your intellect, without scrutinizing or thinking about it. But you don’t assimilate it with your intellect and thus you don’t use the latter, or you misuse it by drawing entirely wrong conclusions because you accept the spiritual knowledge you receive without examination. But He Who endowed you with intellect will also hold you to account as to how you have used it.

Countless people live with misconceptions because they don’t think about doctrines which should motivate their scrutiny because, in the form they are presented to people, they are simply unacceptable. Admittedly, you reject all scrutiny with the remark that you, as human beings, are incapable of making a correct judgment, and you are right insofar as your intellect alone is not enough for this. Yet each and every time this has to be countered by the fact that enlightenment by the spirit can and always must be requested in order to truthfully explain the most difficult problems, and that God will never deny His assistance to someone who seriously wants it. And thus it is also possible for a human being to get an explanation for questions which the intellect alone is unable to answer. But the less a person believes that he is incapable of making a correct judgment the more it is necessary to appeal to God for assistance. This is more advisable than to accept doctrines which a person finds difficult to accept, for whatever a person wants to endorse as truth also has to be completely explained to him, on account of which teachings from above are constantly conveyed to earth which bring light into the spiritual darkness. And darkness is wherever the truth is being displaced or veiled, where misguided teachings are spread and upheld by people as truth. And this darkness shall be penetrated by light. Lies and error shall be displaced by the truth, it shall be exposed where people are wrongly instructed, because only the truth leads to eternal life and only the truth is divine, whereas misguided teachings are God-opposing.

And so it is essential to throw light on a doctrine which, mixed up and completely distorted by the enemy of souls, has found approval amongst people, and precisely because the latter did not use their gift of intellect and accepted without inspection what they were offered: the doctrine of the Trinity of God. This doctrine is completely incomprehensible, that is, it cannot be rationally grasped and understood, it is an unacceptable explanation of the eternal Deity because it is absurd, since the human being who is professing it is not allowed to think about it anymore or, if he thinks about it, cannot admit to it. Wanting to place the eternal Deity into a strictly-limited form is a sign of those people’s imperfection who accept this teaching. Every form is a strictly-limited concept but God’s Being is limitless because it is something profoundly perfect. Hence something supremely perfect cannot be divided either, for perfection is a state of spirit and something spiritual can never be divided into three parts, thus one can never speak of a three-person God because it is an inconceivable concept which will lead to completely wrong points of view about the Deity’s nature. God the Father, God the Son, and God the holy Spirit, these concepts do not justify the assumption that three persons have united themselves as the eternal Deity, hence that these three amount to one God, whereas the nature of God can be made comprehensible to people if the three concepts
are explained such that the 'Father' is love, the 'Son' is wisdom and the 'Spirit' is strength.

And this alone is the correct explanation which is the foundation of the doctrine of the Trinity of God, yet due to misunderstanding it was wrongly interpreted and resulted in the misguided teaching that the Deity consists of three persons.

The spirit of God, the partial concept of God's Nature, can never be personified; it cannot be limited to a form in line with human ideas, it is an infinite abundance of light and strength which is directed and used by an exceptionally strong will of love. The light is God, the strength is God, and the will of love is God, one is not without the other, everything Divine incorporates this Trinity within Itself; it is the sign of perfection if love, wisdom and strength are inherent in a being, in which case it has become an image of God. Yet it is only ever one Being, not a form but something infinite, spiritual, which requires no form in order to exist and which would burst all forms if they had not spiritualized themselves first, so that they were able to contain love, wisdom and strength in abundance without ceasing to exist.

Such a form was the human being Jesus, Who was chosen by God as the carrier of the entire abundance of love, wisdom and strength in order to serve people as a conceivable Deity so that they can believe in an Essence which, being of supreme perfection is nevertheless in connection with imperfect people, His living creations. But this form was purely physical, it was effectively only at the disposal of physical onlookers because the spirit requires no form in order to be able to be seen. The idea of Father, Son and Holy Spirit as three separate entities, even with the addition that they are one, is misleading, because people will then be at risk of implementing a separation by calling upon every part individually and will thereby increase the consciousness of each of the three parts, thereby losing the right, truthful sense of the one God to Whom alone they should turn in every earthly and spiritual adversity.

Even the man Jesus, Who lived on earth as an individual being in order to accept the abundance of God within Himself, became one with Him, which was evidenced by His ascension, because the body had completely spiritualized itself and all substances were able to join the eternal Deity and thus there no longer existed two separate beings who were perfect but it was only one Deity, Which was love, wisdom and strength in supreme perfection. God the Father, God the Son and His Spirit, which permeates the whole of infinity and implements everything that is determined by His will. It is the eternal Deity’s Nature which is being characterized by the concepts of Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Wisdom, the Son, comes forth from the Father of love, and the all-permeating strength implements what is decided by the Father and the Son. God is all-powerful and exceedingly wise and loving. This concept is more understandable and solves the problem of the triune Deity in the simplest way, and only spiritually blind people are unable to grasp or acknowledge this uncomplicated solution because they are misled by spiritually blind leaders who are unenlightened and refuse to let themselves be taught.”
Misguided Teachings about the Trinity
Ref: Vol. 6:29 BD

God the Father is speaking: “People have a completely wrong concept of the Divine Trinity due to the misguided description of a Divinity which consists of three persons. Every thinking human being will deem such an explanation unacceptable, thus it will either be accepted without thought or it will be rejected, whereas a correct explanation can be accepted by every human being since it reveals the essence of the eternal Deity and considerably adds towards enlivening faith in God. The concept of God has already become so vague to people that they find it difficult to have faith, and if they are now expected to understand the Deity as three persons as well the concept becomes even more confused and faith will waver. Indeed, rightly so, because in order to believe in a three-person God, the intellect has to be completely detached. But God has given the human being intellect for the purpose of assessing what he should believe. But with divine assistance, i.e. through the spirit of God, the intellect can certainly acknowledge a Divinity if it is truthfully instructed. In that case even the keenest intellect will not refuse to agree.

But this truth reveals God’s being in the manner that unites love, wisdom and strength within itself, that one is unthinkable without the other, that love is the fundamental concept from whence wisdom emerges and both express themselves through the strength of will. Love is the creative principle which gives rise to everything; it is the birth giving strength. However, it does not create aimlessly or arbitrarily but it proceeds with wisdom. Whatever God’s wisdom knows to be good and right is accomplished by His will if love urges Him to do so. It is the concept of a supremely perfect being. Because love, wisdom and omnipotence are evidence of a perfect Entity, which cannot be exceeded further. Love, wisdom and omnipotence are proof of Divinity, they provide the human being with a concept of the eternal Deity’s substance, but they are not three different divine persons united within one being.

The misguided doctrine of God’s Trinity has considerably contributed towards people loosing faith, because a description like that had to result in instinctive rejection and thus the grace of prayer was not used, which could have provided the sincerely seeking human being with clarification. The object of their prayer was questionable, people thought it strange to call upon three persons which they should believe to be as one God. Immense confusion has been caused; it was an evident influence of Satan, who forever attempts to undermine the truth, to obscure the essence of God and to estrange God Himself from them.

The fact that this misguided teaching was accepted in the first place testifies of the darkened spiritual state of those who, due to their complete lack of enlightenment, did not possess any means of discrimination and hence had been excellent tools in Satan’s hands to distribute this teaching and with this to endanger the faith in a manner as rarely a misguided teaching had achieved. In order to believe in God as a supremely perfect Being, this Being also has to introduce Itself to people such that they can recognize His perfection, also the intellect of a human being who is looking for the truth has to understand such concepts, otherwise he could not be held to account.

God is not content with blind faith, He demands every teaching to be deliberated and responded to, because faith can only become alive when it has become an inner
conviction. When this option is excluded from the start, when people are presented with a misguided teaching for unconditional acceptance, only blind faith can be demanded and achieved by this which is of no value before God. On the contrary, it is far more damaging to the soul, especially when God’s image becomes distorted and thereby the love for Him cannot arise, which is absolutely essential in order to become blessed.”

**The Problem of the Trinity**

Ref: Vol. 2:30 BD

God the Father is speaking: “The problem of the Trinity is one of many problems which have been made difficult to resolve due to a completely misguided explanation. The explanation which is simple and comprehensible for all people is not accepted because human reasoning has become confused by concepts which are incomprehensible to the human intellect but which, for this very reason, are retained as unchallengeable and people are even forbidden to reflect on them. However, every human being who comprehends the ‘human manifestation of God’ in Jesus, who does not seek to personify the Being of God, will find this problem easy to understand and to explain, who recognizes the all pervading spirit as ‘God’ and who understands that the inconceivable Deity manifested Itself in Jesus in order to become a ‘visible’ God to Its created beings. Hence the concepts: Father, Son, and Spirit will no longer lead these people into misguided thinking, because they only acknowledge one Being which unites love, wisdom and strength within Itself. Love gave rise to everything and thus is the Creator, the ‘Father’. And out of Him the ‘Son’ also emerged, in whom the Father manifested Himself. But the Son is also ‘Wisdom’, because only love is the fire which emits the ‘light’. Thus love and wisdom cannot be separated, just as Father and Son are one.

And again love is also the strength which, however, only ever expresses itself in utmost wisdom. The ‘spirit’ of God is His continuous emission of love, which helps the as yet imperfect to achieve final perfection. Hence only one being can ever be considered God Father, Son and Spirit, a Being whose essence consists of love, wisdom and strength. The fact that this Being manifested Itself in the man Jesus does not sanction the change of the Deity into a twofold Being Which can be called upon separately, and then adding another one as the ‘spirit’ to this twofold Being, Which again is called upon by those who cannot work this problem out by themselves but simply accept the sermons of unenlightened thinkers. This is proven by the fact that many people are unable to call upon the Father in Jesus Christ and they are usually unable to understand that God Himself is only accessible to them in Jesus Christ; that the threefold, different prayer only ever reaches one ear, that the eternal Deity cannot be divided, that It Itself in Jesus Christ came close to the human beings, who were unable to conceive the eternal, all-comprehensive and pervading spirit. The concepts: Father, Son and Spirit still prompt you humans, whose spirit is yet unenlightened, to aim your thoughts and prayers into different directions.

You call upon God the Father, you call upon Jesus, and you also call upon the spirit, so that it might come to you. But you will only pray correctly when these three have become one concept for you, when you only call upon one Being Which unites within Itself love - the Father, wisdom - the Son, and strength - the Spirit, and only then will you have solved the problem of God’s Trinity correctly, too. Although the teaching of the ‘three-person Deity’ has been extended by adding that these Three are one, the teaching is nevertheless a serious misguidance of people, which results in further misguided opinions. Especially the call to God in Jesus Christ incorporates unlimited strength which, however, is lost to you, who are still subject to misguided notions and
unable to free yourselves from them. You and your awareness would certainly benefit from sincere reflection upon the subject but you refrain from it because you have become slaves, even though God had given you complete freedom. But you should use your spiritual freedom, and then God Himself will truly help you to clarify your thoughts, for He Himself is the light and He wants to give light to all those who desire it."

**The Christ Problem – Trinity**

BD No. 7001 of 12/24/1957 taken from book 75

God the Father is speaking: “All the angels bowed down to the Lord Who descended to earth. For they knew that it was the beginning of an act of Salvation for the fallen spiritual beings, because God's infinite love itself came to help His living creations which were staying in the abyss. The spiritual beings which had remained with God in the world of light were full of love for those who had fallen and were equally devoted to God in profound love, and this love became ever more glowing the more they realized the significance of the act of compassion which was to be accomplished for the fallen beings. For they were aware of the deep gulf that had to be bridged in order that these fallen beings could reach the pinnacle again, And thus a soul, an originally created angel-spirit, offered to build this bridge, It offered God, the Eternal Love, to make amends on behalf of Its fallen brother for their past offence against Him. This soul's love for God and for its fallen brothers in the abyss was such that It aimed to unite both again, and the Love which animated It was God Himself, And therefore, when the soul of light embodied Itself on earth in the infant Jesus the eternal Love Itself descended to earth and thus 'God' became a 'human being.' And the human shell in turn had to spiritualize itself through its life on earth, in the midst of dark surroundings it had to let the light within itself shine, through living a life of love it had to let itself be permeated completely by the Eternal Love. And this accomplished the deification, so that everything about the man Jesus became love, and thus Jesus became 'God.' God's human manifestation in Jesus cannot be explained in any other way than the fact that the Eternal Deity, Love, manifested itself in Jesus because He, as a soul of light having descended to earth, so shaped His human shell that it enabled God to take abode in it, which would have been impossible in a heartless, sinful person. And the unification of Jesus with God can equally only be understood as the complete deification of the man Jesus through love. God sent His Son to Earth.

These Words have to be evidence to you that the soul of the man Jesus came from above, that a most elevated spirit of light offered Himself for a mission on earth but which God Himself, the Eternal Love, carried out, for Love accomplished the act of Salvation, Love redeemed the guilt of sin, Love brought the fallen being deliverance from sin and death. However, the concept of 'love' is still incomprehensible to you humans because you have not shaped yourselves into love yourselves. And until then you will be unable to grasp God's human manifestation and no Words will enlighten you about it as long as love has not been kindled in you to illuminate your spirit. But you must not think of 'God' and 'Jesus Christ' as two Beings, you must not speak of the 'Father' and the 'Son' in combination with the 'holy Spirit' in the same way as you hitherto imagined the 'Trinity of God' to be. God and Jesus are One, and the strength of the spirit emanates from this Oneness because, again, it is an inseparable part of its nature, because God is love, wisdom and strength, something spiritual which no-one is able to behold. But the eternal Deity manifested itself in the man Jesus and became a visible God to His created beings. And all the angels in Heaven praise and glorify Him, Who descended to earth for the love of His living creations which desired to see Him. And He opened the gate to eternal bliss for all of them.”
John 14:7-14: Master, show us the Father

Jesus said to His disciples: “If you know me, then you will also know my Father. From now on you do know him and have seen him.” Philip said to Jesus, “Master, show us the Father, and that will be enough for us.” Jesus said to him, “Have I been with you for so long a time and you still do not know me, Philip? Whoever has seen me has seen the Father. How can you say, ‘Show us the Father?’ Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words that I speak to you I do not speak on my own. The Father who dwells in me is doing his works. Believe me that I am in the Father and the Father is in me, or else, believe because of the works themselves. Amen, amen, I say to you, whoever believes in me will do the works that I do, and will do greater ones than these, because I am going to the Father. And whatever you ask in my name, I will do, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you ask anything of me in my name, I will do it.”

“Whoever has sees Me has sees the Father”

BD No. 3621 of 12/06/1945 taken from book 46

Jesus is speaking: “Whoever sees Me sees the Father, because the Father and I are one. I brought the Word to people but they did not recognize it as God’s Word, as the expression of His infinite love for His living creations. They looked at it as human word, given to them by Me from Myself, because they were dark inside and did not know about God’s working within the human being. Hence they could no longer hear God’s voice themselves, which could have provided evidence to them of God’s presence, of His essence and his close relationship with people. I, however, wanted to return this knowledge to them; I wanted to introduce them to the strength of love and faith, so that they might become noticeably aware of God’s presence if they heeded My teaching. I came to them as a mediator sent by God to proclaim His Word to people of good will in accordance with His instruction. The eternal Father-Spirit took abode in Me to visibly work through Me. Everything I said and did was His work, His will, His strength and His love. I was merely the form through which God expressed Himself, or His presence would have been unbearable for the people who were living in profound spiritual darkness. And the form which veiled the Father-Spirit also belonged to Him, for everything within Me aspired towards the Father-Spirit, albeit it was a mortal shell like any other human being. But because of the spirit within Itself It became immortal.

I was Jesus, the man, but only in My external appearance, because everything in and about Me was spiritualized by love, it was united with the eternal love to which I was inseparably connected since eternity. God as a spirit is not visible to human beings, nevertheless He made Himself visible to them in Me as a person, He adopted My physical garment and showed Himself in it to people, identifying Himself as wisdom, love and omnipotence. And to those who believed in Me My work on earth gave evidence of the Deity through miracles, which were only possible to God and which My will could accomplish because God was in Me, and thus His will, wisdom and strength permeated Me. Hence there was no further separation between God and My mortal body, It had become one with Him, He occupied it completely, He Himself walked on earth in My external form, which in turn was a work of His love in order to make Himself accessible
to people. And I brought His Word to them. He Himself spoke through Me, He, the eternal Word Himself, had become flesh in order to make Himself heard by people. Because they no longer knew the mystery of eternal love, the eternal Father-Spirit, Whose Word establishes the bond with people.

They no longer knew about the strength of the Word which draws everything towards itself when it can become effective in a person. They did not know that every human being could hear the divine Word Itself in himself if he shaped himself to love in accordance with God’s will, in order to receive the divine love Itself. For this reason God came to earth Himself, and He brought them the knowledge again which should release the people from their darkness. And people did not recognize Him, they pursued Me, Who sheltered the Divine inside of Me, as a human being. And I had to allow it to happen in order to safeguard their free will. I brought the Word to them but they did not accept it, and they did not recognize in Me the One Who permeated Me completely. They saw Me but not see God in Me, Who did not conceal Himself from their view but performed signs and miracles in order to make the blind see again. But to those who believed He revealed Himself in His love, wisdom and omnipotence. And they saw Him rise to heaven in full glory, they saw His shell spiritualizing itself before their eyes and in radiating light ascend to the kingdom which had been its home since eternity.”

God is a Spirit Who Manifested Himself in Jesus Christ

BD No. 7828 of 02/17/1961 taken from book 82 - Ref: John 14:10-14

God the Father is speaking: “You should not imagine your God and Creator as a strictly limited Being, you should not try to associate Him with a form, for then your idea would always be wrong, because something defined can never correspond to My nature, which is utterly perfect, thus infinite; for I Am a spirit who fills and permeates everything. In My nature I will be eternally unfathomable for My living creations, for although My living creations were externalized by Me in supreme perfection they are nevertheless only sparks of love, emanated by the fire of My Eternal Love and externalized as individual beings who, however, would be unable to behold the eternal source of light and strength if I showed Myself to them in My full abundance of brilliance, since they would perish if they faced the radiating light.

Yet you need not visualize Me in any other way than as the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ. In Him I became the ‘visible’ God for you, in Him the eternal, infinite spirit has manifested Itself, in Him you see Me and are able to behold Him face to face. Thus I gave Myself a form for you, whom I had externalized from My love and My strength as My living creations. The Eternal Spirit who fills all of infinity permeated this form with light and became a visible God for you. And yet I reign and work throughout all of infinity and thus My Being cannot be limited either, I can only have become a conceivable idea in the form of Jesus Christ for you, who are still finite yourselves, who have not yet attained the highest perfection, for I have to give to you what corresponds to your state, which is still far from perfection.

However, I Am and remain also inscrutable in My nature for the spirits of highest perfection, which, however, is a cause of increased beatitude, because My children constantly strive towards Me, are constantly delighted by Me through My fulfilling of their desire yet never able to reach Me, and on the other hand may behold Me from face to face in Jesus Christ. This, too, will remain an enigma to you, and only in the state of enlightenment will you begin to comprehend and yet eternally unable to fathom My nature. To you I appear infinitely far away and yet I Am as close to you as only a father can get to his child. But this awareness makes you immensely happy, and your love for
Me increases constantly and is also the cause of bliss, because it always meets with fulfillment.

And thus your love for Jesus Christ will blaze ever more ardently, in Whom you have recognized your Father of eternity and in Whom I bestow unlimited bliss upon you. For in Him I Am now able to be close to My children, even though I Am not bound to the form, even though I fill all of infinity with My light and My strength, with My Being, which is and remains inscrutable. But you, My living creations, shall look for and find Me in Jesus, for I have chosen Him as the form which received Me; and this once human external form completely spiritualized itself and yet remained visible to every being which attained the state of maturity of spiritual vision.

Thus you see My eternal spirit when you see Jesus, for He and I are one, you see the Father when you see Jesus, because I wanted to be visible to you, My created beings, in order to gain all your love. Yet you will never be able to behold Me in My infinite abundance of strength and light without ceasing to exist. But I want to be able to create and work with My children and thus also reveal Myself to them in order to heighten their beatitude. And I want to experience their love Myself and therefore will always be close to My children.”

**The Holy Spirit Speaks**

MV 1943:601

“I am Love. I do not have my own voice because my Voice is in the whole creation and beyond the creation. Like the ether (the upper regions of space: heavens), I spread through all that is; like fire, I inflame; like blood, I circulate.

I am in every word of Christ, and flower on the lips of the Virgin. I purify the mouths of the prophets and saints and make them luminous. I am He who inspired things before they existed, for it is my power that, like a heartbeat, moved the creative thought of the Eternal.

Through Christ all things have been made, but all things have been made by Myself, Love, for it is I that with my secret power moved the Creator to work the miracle. I was when nothing was, and I shall be when only Heaven remains.

I am the inspirer of the creation of man, to whom the world was given for his delight, the world in which, from the oceans to the stars, from the Alpine peaks to the streams, my seal is present.

I shall be the one to place on the lips of the last man the supreme invocation: ‘Come, Lord Jesus!’

I am the One who, to placate the Father, infused the idea of the Incarnation and descended, as a creative fire, to make Myself an embryo in the immaculate womb of Mary, and ascended, made Flesh, onto the Cross, and from the Cross, to Heaven again, to make the new alliance between God and man in a ring of love, as, in an embrace of love. I had clasped the Father and the Son, generating the Trinity.

I am He who speaks without words, everywhere and in every doctrine originating in God, He who without touch opens eyes and opens ears to hear the supernatural, He who without a command draws you from the death of life to Life in the Life which knows no limit.

The Father is upon you; the Son is in you; but I, the Spirit, am in your spirit and sanctify you with my presence.

Seek Me wherever there is love, faith, and wisdom. Give Me your love. The fusion of love with Love creates Christ in you and bears you back into the Father’s breast.
I have spoken today, which is the advent of Love on Earth, my highest manifestation, the one from which redemption and Pentecostal infusion come to the Earth.

May my Fire dwell in you and set you aflame, recreating you for God, in God, and through God, the Eternal Lord, to whom all praise should be given, in Heaven and on Earth.”

Various gifts of the Spirit during the End Times

God the Father is speaking: “The spirit of God manifests itself in various ways, since its working depends on a person’s ability, on his spiritual maturity, and it also depends on his disposition which spiritual gift will be given to him. The receiving of a spiritual gift always presupposes that you are shaped by love, thus a voluntary total transformation of the being. God’s spirit can only flow into a suitable vessel, a vessel, which thus has been prepared for the reception of the divine ray of love through unselfish deeds of love. Anyone who has not yet achieved this transformation into love cannot expect a gift of the spirit. Consequently, the gifts of the spirit are always merely the result of a loving way of life and never arbitrarily granted gifts. They have to be 'endeavored', which anyone could do but which is rarely done. The way God’s spirit takes effect depends on the task given to a person who was shadowed by God’s spirit during his earthly life, which God’s wisdom certainly recognized to be beneficial for humanity but nevertheless requires the human being’s free will. God truly knows who wants to serve him and how that person shapes himself, He will therefore place him where he is able to work most effectively.

People in the last days have to be shaken up since their thinking will become completely superficial, thus they will need to be extraordinarily impressed in order to disturb their contentment. But even unusual phenomena have a completely natural explanation, yet what appears to be natural to one person is inconceivable to another because he is spiritually blind. Hence these ‘spiritually blind’ people will be confronted by someone with ‘vision’ who can detach himself from his earthly tie and, as you might say, be lifted into the spiritual realm, and who returns from this spiritual realm to earth with a gift which cannot be gained in an earthly way. He will work with powers which enable him to achieve the seemingly impossible, by way of the Word he will be able to heal the sick or see the future clairvoyantly, he will possess profound wisdom and thus will also be able to inform his fellow human beings, or he will know what is otherwise concealed from people. He will be able to speak foreign languages, the working of the divine spirit will clearly manifest itself, but only in order to gain people’s souls for the spiritual kingdom, because the spirit of God only affects people spiritually and does not promote earthly interests. Hence the holder of a spiritual gift will always be a laborer in the vineyard of the Lord.

As a result of this gift he will be God’s representative on earth who wants to establish and increase His kingdom and has made it his task in life. God’s spirit will only manifest itself noticeably to other people through His willing servants, although every person can be permeated by His spirit and thus is also able to understand clearly and precisely and be qualified to pass his knowledge on to other people. Nevertheless, people only receive in accordance with their will, and a prerequisite for receiving an obvious gift of spirit is their willingness to work for God and His kingdom. God wants to reveal Himself through people to all of humanity. God wants to be recognized in His working, hence a person has to act as an intermediary as long as God cannot approach people
Himself, as long as unbelief and spiritual blindness make this utterly impossible. It follows that God reveals Himself through His spirit, which manifests itself through a human being, in order to guide people into faith, to enlighten them, to make them see the light shining from above onto people, in order to let them know the purpose of their earthly life and to illuminate the path to the goal. All spiritual gifts only serve to influence people’s souls in the divine sense. Then powers will be released in a person which clearly testifies of a divine influx, the influx of strength that originates from God, the strength of a divine spirit.”

Doubting God’s Existence

God the Father is speaking: “It requires an exceptionally keen intellect to scientifically prove that God’s existence can be doubted or denied. And the attempt will be made to solve this biggest problem by scientific means, the question: Does God exist? That humanity is deliberating this most important question is also a sign of the end time, but far more in a negative sense, since people are willing to partake in this controversial issue and its line of argument because their faith, if it exists at all, is very weak and the slightest reason suffices to shake it.

Does God exist? No question is more important, and providing it is asked seriously by seeking people I Am prepared to enlighten them so that the seeker will be truly satisfied with the knowledge he receives and which he now also confidently upholds. However, if the question is not raised by seekers but by people who think they know better, who only accept the answer which suits them, and who do not want to prove that I Am but that I Am not, they will never arrive at a truthful result, in spite of sound evidence. They already belong to the opposing power which wants to take over the reign itself and push Me aside. And this is the beginning of the end, because according to the law of eternity I will strip My adversary of his power as soon as he oversteps his legitimate limit, which will be the case when he attempts to displace Me entirely from people’s thoughts.

The battle for Me will be harsh, impressive words intend to convince My Own that they are chasing after a figment of imagination, all religious dogmas and doctrines will be pulled to pieces and not entirely steadfast people will gradually suffer defeat, because the adversary knows how to use his words effectively. And since the majority of people lack knowledge, since they are spiritually blind themselves, they cannot detect the adversary’s inaccuracy, but they cannot look for and find the truth within themselves either. And they will falter and fall if they do not join Me in the last hour, if they do not (in the last hour) ask Me for clarification which I very gladly grant to anyone who asks, providing he is of good will and wants what is right and truthful. But anyone who trusts in himself, who wants to solve this most important problem intellectually as well, will get lost in the darkness because he is chasing a deceptive light, he believes the convincing words of worldly scholars and admires their keen intellect and conclusions, and he will abandon Me and condemn himself.

Because I know of this conflict since eternity, because I want to help the weak as well as those who are looking for Me, I Am bringing them the truth in advance. And anyone who applies this truth, who becomes worthy to receive it and voluntarily aspires for it will outshine the keen intellect of worldly scholars, he will become knowledgeable, he will receive the ability to reason, his spirit will become enlightened, and nothing will be able to take away his faith, his conviction, because he is taught by Me Myself and has the evidence that I Am and that I want to win all My living creations for eternity. And he will remain loyal to Me until the end.”
God’s Message to Rationalists - Deniers of God
BD No. 5744 of 08/11/1953 taken from book 62

God the Father is speaking; ‘I want to speak to those who are not yet able to make the right decision, who are not unwilling to believe and yet cannot acknowledge Me with conviction either; to those who oppose the knowledge which My representatives on earth want to make accessible to them with their intellectual knowledge, to those, who first want everything proven to them and believe that they can understand or refute it with their sharp intellect. Their knowledge kills the spirit. What is described as higher truth, what cannot be proven in an earthly sense, because compulsory faith may not be exercised in earthly life, cannot be fathomed scientifically and even the sharpest human intellect is no guarantee for correct thinking on the spiritual level. I want to put this question to you humans: in which category of the works of creation do you place yourselves? Don’t you realize that you are the only thinking and reasoning beings, whereas all other works of creation are unable to exhibit this thinking ability and freedom of thought?

From this alone you can conclude that you were created by a Power which is equally capable of thinking, which is merely infinitely powerful, for despite your faculty of thought you are incapable of creating living beings with the same faculty of thought. You cannot quote your offspring as evidence, since you do not create them yourselves but merely fit in with existing natural laws which also provide you with evidence of a law-giver. Consider furthermore: Is a ‘natural force’ capable of thought? That is, is it able to bring beings into existence whose organism testifies of supreme wisdom? Would this natural force itself not have to be recognized and acknowledged as a Being with an ability of thought and will and thus be able to create and give life to expedient forms? And is the work of creation not sufficient evidence in itself even for the most intellectually astute philosophers? Indeed, would you be able to substantiate the ‘non-existence’ of a Being, would you even be able to vaguely quote a comparison as evidence that a force brings forth orderly creations unless this force meets its match in a human being’s will?

Let a force become uncontrollably active and you will have a dreadful experience but you will not be able to produce creations whose expedience and order you can admire. Thus, by virtue of your intellect alone you are able to acknowledge a Supreme Being which you have to regard as the Creator of eternity. It truly does you no honor that you want to deny this Being, that you merely want to explain His activity, which is visible to you in His creation, as the effect of an unguided force, that you thus want to base the emergence of creation on an unconscious and blind process. Such an explanation is truly no evidence of a correctly employed intellect, on the contrary, it is a defiant evasion which you are looking for because you do not want to acknowledge a God, for even with just a weak will both possibilities are considered first, and then a person will rather decide to accept than to reject a spiritually tangible Power which reveals itself in creation.

If you humans knew the serious effect a rejection, a denial of a spiritually tangible Deity has on your soul you would also understand why I want to enlighten you, why I want to stimulate you to seriously think about it so that you will give your misguided thoughts the right direction of your own accord, so that you will be able to believe what
seems unacceptable to you as long as you just make one-sided judgments, as long as you believe that you can intellectually ascertain the truth. But the belief in a God and Creator is necessary in order to make a connection with this God and Creator. And this connection with Him is the real purpose and goal of earthly life, otherwise you would truly not have been allowed to embody yourselves on this earth, which was only created for the purpose of My living creation being able to re-establish the unity with God which He once had voluntarily severed. If, however, you deny a God then it means that you are still very distant from Me, it signifies renewed opposition to Me of your own free will which will incur a dreadful fate in the beyond or a repeated banishment into matter when the end of this earth has arrived. Therefore I would like to address you and encourage you to think it through before it is too late, and even if your earthly knowledge is extensive, you will with certainty penetrate far more profound knowledge if you entrust yourselves to the One Who has created you and Who wants to be recognized as your God and Creator of eternity in order to then helpfully assist you.”

Countless Evidence of God

BD No. 7624 of 06/17/1960 taken from book 80

“Whoever has sees Me has sees the Father”

God the Father is speaking; “I make it easy for you to believe, if only you wanted to, for I furnish you with such obvious evidence of Myself and My working so that you would easily be able to recognize Me and consequently could also gain a convinced faith. I give evidence of Myself through creation, through everything surrounding you. And I give evidence of Myself through My Word which rings out to you from above and is conveyed to people who are willing to believe. For the will to do so must be present first, then the human being will also be able to believe. The will to believe opens his eyes, ears and heart, and he will be able to see, hear or perceive countless pieces of evidence of My existence, because I will reveal Myself to a human being of good will, because I will come close and make Myself known to him. Hence no person can say that it is impossible for him to believe, but it is merely a lack of willingness, and no human being can be compelled. In that case his will is still utterly opposed to Me, for the denial of a Deity is proof that the person is still totally entrenched in the original sin, that he has not abandoned his past opposition to Me, and then his will cannot be forcibly broken either.

Even so, I constantly try to attract his will during his earthly life by repeatedly revealing Myself to him in the most diverse ways, so that he can always recognize Me by merely changing his will. Faith in Me can be gained by every person, because he lives in the midst of My creation and the works of nature frequently affect him, which he only needs to think about. Admittedly, an opposing will always tries to find different
explanations about the miracles of creation rather than the existence of a spiritually tangible Creator of eternity; yet as soon as his own will becomes less important other thoughts will be able to arise in him and he can consider it possible for a higher Power to be the Originator and Controller. And I will always endeavor to influence the human being such that he can achieve this realization.

During the last days before the end faith will continue to dwindle, and even My revelation will not achieve very much, precisely because of people’s will, which cannot be coerced. However, I will not stop speaking to people from above, because My Word has the strength to change a person’s thinking if he allows it to take effect in him. For it does happen, albeit only rarely, that complete unbelievers hear or read My Word and feel touched by it. However, every soul is important to Me and I will not slow down trying to attract each individual soul. And by way of fate I also cross the path of people who do not want to believe, by allowing them to meet with serious difficulties so that they can turn to an overwhelmingly powerful Being with an appeal for help. Yet I must always grant complete freedom to their will and therefore I can only ever aim to influence this will, which indeed will be done by My love and mercy for as long as the human being lives on earth.“

And I give evidence of Myself through My Word which rings out to you from above and is conveyed to people who are willing to believe.
Chapter 2: Beings of Light

In the Beginning
Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

290 “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth”: three things are affirmed in these first words of Scripture: the eternal God gave a beginning to all that exists outside of himself; he alone is Creator. The totality of what exists depends on the One who gives it being.

Question: Where did God dwell before He created heaven and earth? Could the Angels in heaven behold God?

Where is Heaven?
Ref: MVN 1944:380

Jesus is speaking: “No man, by any means, can reach the star nearest to the earth, the humblest one in its burning. But God grants that you - because He loves you and you love Him - may reach it, know it, and immerse yourself in its Fire. And consider that there is less distance between the earth and the stars than between the stars and the throne of God. They are the immense floor of the Heavenly City, the foundations, even more than the floor, High up, much higher up, at inconceivable heights, for they do not correspond to human measures, is that blessed Reign ruled over by the Trinity, where a place is prepared for those who love. But since God’s loving haste knows no delay, He, ahead of time, breaths you into Himself in spirit and gives Himself to you with his Fire.”

Heaven and Earth
Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

326 “The Scriptural expression ‘heaven and earth’ means all that exists, creation in its entirety. It also indicates the bond, deep within creation, that both unites heaven and earth and distinguishes the one from the other: ‘the earth’ is the world of
men, while ‘heaven’ or ‘the heavens’ can designate both the firmament and God’s own ‘place’ – ‘our Father in heaven’ and consequently the ‘heaven’ to which is eschatological glory. Finally, ‘heaven’ refers to the saints and the ‘place’ of the spiritual creatures, the angels, who surround God.”

**Angels**
Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

328 The existence of the spiritual, non-corporeal beings that sacred Scripture usually calls “angel” is a truth of faith. The witness of Scripture is as clear as the unanimity of Tradition.

**What are Angels?**
Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

329 “In the works of St Augustine, he answers this question this way: ‘Angels is the meaning of their office, not of their nature. If you seek the name of their nature, it is ‘spirit,’ if you seek the name of their office, it is ‘angel,’ from what they are, ‘spirit,’ from what they do, ‘angel.’” With their whole being the angels are servants and messengers of God. Because they *always behold the face of the Father, who is in heaven* they are the ‘mighty ones who do his work,’ harkening to the voice of his word.

As purely *spiritual* creatures, angels have intelligence and will: they are personal and immortal creatures, surpassing in perfection all visible creatures, as the splendor of their glory bears witness.”

---

St Gregory the Great: The Word “Angel”
Ref: From the homily on the Gospels by St Gregory the Great, pope (Hom 34, 8-9: Pl 76, 1250-1251)

“You should be aware that the word ‘angel’ denotes a function rather than a nature. Those holy spirits of heaven have indeed always been spirits. They can only be called angels when they deliver some message. Moreover, *those who deliver messages of lesser importance are called angels; and those who proclaim messages of supreme importance are called archangels.*

And so it was that not merely an angel but the archangel Gabriel was sent to the Virgin Mary. *It was only fitting that the highest angel should come to announce the greatest of all messages.*
Some angels are given proper names to denote the service they are empowered to perform. In that holy city, where perfect knowledge flows from the vision of almighty God, those who have no name may easily be known. But personal names are assigned to some, not because they could not be known without them, but rather to denote their ministry when they come among us. Thus, Michael means ‘Who is like God?’; Gabriel is ‘The Strength of God’; and Raphael is ‘God’s Remedy.’

Whenever some act of wondrous power must be performed, Michael is sent, so that his action and his name may make it clear that no one can do what God does by his superior power. So also our ancient foe desired in his pride to be like God, saying: I will be like the Most High. He will be allowed to remain in power until the end of the world when he will be destroyed in the final punishment. Then, he will fight with the archangel Michael, as we are told by John: A battle was fought with Michael the archangel.

So too Gabriel, who is called God’s strength, was sent to Mary. He came to announce the One who appeared as a humble man to quell the cosmic powers. Thus God’s strength announced the coming of the Lord of the heavenly power, mighty in battle.

Raphael means, as I have said, God’s remedy, for when he touched Tobit’s eyes in order to cure him, he banished the darkness of his blindness. Thus, since he is to heal, he is rightly called God’s remedy."

Different Status of the Created Beings

God the Father is speaking: “Believe Me that I still have to correct many misconceptions if you are to live in truth and defend it. You have a completely wrong concept of My creative strength, which is unlimited and endowed the created beings with an infinite abundance of strength. Thus they, like Me, were also able to constantly and without knowledge of limitation externalize creations into the universe. Hence there are no different degrees of creative power in the beings who remained faithful to Me, who did not voluntarily move into a different sphere from Mine, where I Myself amid My hosts have the domain of My creativeness. All beings were created perfect, and that means that no being is subject to any restriction, but that every being is given a task which it conscientiously fulfills. But one task is no more important than another, and thus there is no difference of status either, all those beings’ love culminates in their love for Me, and they indeed always aspire towards Me in order to become even more blissfully happy through the response of My love, which you humans cannot measure by any standard. Merely the degree of love can differ in beings who overcame the abyss without having achieved childship to God on earth but who nevertheless achieved a degree of love and constantly seek to increase it. Their happiness, that they escaped the abyss and had to walk the path of evolution, knows no limits. They are conscious of their present beatitude, and their eternal life is a constant singing of praises and thankfulness. They, too, are allowed to create and give life to the universe but always in accordance with their abundance of light, which constantly increases.

Thus everything perfect knows no limit, consequently there cannot be any beings who take precedence, and your idea of dividing these beings into groups of more or less able beings is wrong, since perfection renders this null and void. These are always human concepts, because you are more or less inadequately shaped and thus also want to transfer these attributes to the absolutely perfectly shaped beings. Whether the smallest or the largest being is created, it takes the same creative strength, because it is the same work of wonder in My creation. And the supreme perfection of the beings rests in the fact that one helps the other, that not one wants to take precedence before
another and therefore neither the expression ‘angel’ nor ‘archangel’ is justified, but all beings belong to My vast host of created original spirits, only you humans imagine the world of spirits to be status orientated, just as you create different positions on earth for yourselves. As long as you still have a low degree of maturity the degree of love will differ too, and you cannot create in strength and might. You have to aim to increase this degree of love until you attain your original condition again, from which your fall into the abyss took place. In addition, you also have to acquire the childship to God on earth, and for this purpose a being of light can return to earth for a mission, if it had previously failed on earth but achieved a degree of light in the beyond which sanctions a repeated embodiment. Just as every non-fallen spirit may take this path through the abyss in order to test its free will, although it can never descend further, rather the original spirit’s urge for creation becomes ever more powerful. Then it will make constantly greater demands on My strength of love and aspire towards Me and thus create with My strength, which completely permeates this spirit. Perfection, however, is unlimited, or, what is perfect knows no limits. It is as powerful as I Myself and can make and shape the largest as well as the smallest creations, for it will always help and assist the wretched to attain beatitude.

You can only understand this when you know what ‘love’ is in its fundamental essence, and therefore I assess everything by the degree of love. But this assessment ends as soon as the being is perfect, because to be perfect means to be infinitely blessed, then every being’s love is only intended for Me as the utmost perfect Being, Which will always gratify its longing for love and yet it will never end.”

Angels – Pure and Perfect Spirits
MV Vol.1:509 - MV N 1945-1950:403-408

Jesus is speaking: “The angels, pure and perfect spirits, living and rejoicing in the light of the Most High Trinity, although perfect, are inferior to you men, who are far from Heaven, and they admit their inferiority. Their inferiority consists in their impossibility to sacrifice themselves and suffer to cooperate in the redemption of man. What do you think of that? God does not take an angel and say to him: ‘Be the redeemer of mankind!’ But He takes His own Son. And although the Son’s sacrifice is of incalculable value and His power is infinite, the Father, knowing that there is still something missing from the amount of merits to be opposed to the amount of sins that mankind accumulates hourly, does not take other angels to fill the measure and does not say to them: ‘Suffer to imitate Christ,’ but He says that to you, men. Such is His fatherly goodness that He makes no difference between the Son of His love and the children of His power. He says to you: ‘Suffer, sacrifice yourselves, be like My-Lamb.’ Be co-redeemers! Oh! I can see cohorts of angels who stop rotating for an instant in their adoring ecstasy round the Trine Fulcrum, and kneel down, looking towards the earth and say: ‘Blessed are you who can suffer with Christ for your and our Eternal God!’”

An angel stood by the altar, holding a golden censer; a large quantity of incense was given to him, and clouds of incense rose from the hand of the angel in the presence of the Lord. Thousands upon thousands waited on him, and myriads upon myriads stood before him.

Ref: Rev 8:3,4 Dan 7:10
The Devil, the Fallen Angel – Part 1
Ref: Catholic education.org FR. WILLIAM SAUNDERS

“We believe that in the beginning, God created Satan as a good angel: The Lateran Council IV (1215) stated, ‘The devil and the other demons were indeed created naturally good by God, but they became evil by their own doing.’ These angels irrevocably chose through their free will to rebel against God and not to serve Him. For this rebellion, they were cast into hell. Sacred Scripture attests to this belief: Our Lord, speaking of the final judgment, said, ‘Then [the Son of Man] will say to those on His left: ‘out of my sight, you condemned, into that everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels’’ : (Mt 25:41). St. Peter wrote, ‘Did God spare even the angels who sinned? He did not! He held them captive in Tartars [the term in Greek mythology to indicate the place of punishment in the underworld]⦒ (2 Pt 2:4). St. John added, ‘The man who sins belongs to the devil, because the devil is a sinner from the beginning’ (1 Jn 3:8). In sum, God created the devil as good, God punished him for his sin, and God allows his present activity. The Catechism admits, ‘It is a great mystery that providence should permit diabolical activity, but ‘we know that in everything God works for good with those who love him’” (No. 395).

The Devil, the Fallen Angel – Part 2
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

391 Behind the disobedient choice of our first parents lurks a seductive voice, opposed to God, which makes them fall into death out of envy. Scripture and the Church’s Tradition see in this being a fallen angel, called “Satan” or the “devil.” “The Church teaches that Satan was at first a good angel, made by God: “the devil and the other demons were indeed created naturally good by God, but they became evil by their own doing.”

392 Scripture speaks of a sin of these angels. This “fall” consists in the free choice of these created spirits, who radically and irrevocably rejected God and his reign. We find a reflection of that rebellion in the tempter’s words to our first parents: “You will be like God.” The devil “has sinned from the beginning”; he is “a liar and the father of lies.”

393 It is the irrevocable character of their choice, and not a defect in the infinite mercy that makes the angels’ sin unforgivable. “There is no repentance for the angels after their fall, just as there is no repentance for man after death.”

394 Scripture witnesses to the disastrous influence of the one Jesus calls “a murderer from the beginning,” who would even try to divert Jesus from the mission received from his Father. “The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the works of the devil.” In its consequences the gravest of these works was the mendacious seduction that led man to disobey God.

395 The power of Satan is, nonetheless, not infinite. He is only a creature, powerful from the fact that he is pure spirit, but still a creature. He cannot prevent the building up of God’s reign. Although Satan may act in the world out of hatred for God and his kingdom in Christ Jesus, and although his action may cause grave injuries – of a spiritual nature and, indirectly, even of a physical nature – to each man and to society, the action is permitted by divine providence which with strength and gentleness guides human and cosmic history. It is a great mystery that providence should permit diabolical activity, but “we know that in everything God works for good with those who love him.”

Another question that needs to be understood correctly is whether the angels could see the Face of God? Ref: Matthew 18:10 See that you do not despise one of
these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven always look upon the face of my heavenly Father. God has no face; He is spirit that dwells in unapproachable light, so how could the angels look upon the face of God? This verse is a parable which speaks of the angels as intercessors who present the prayers of human beings to God, see Tb 13, 12-15. The high worth of the little ones is indicated by their being represented before God by their heavenly beings.

The Unforgivable Sin of the Angels
Ref: CCC The Fall of the Angels – 391-395

The Church teaches that because the angels used their free will to radically and irrevocably reject God and his reign, there is no mercy for them. It is the irrevocable character of their choice, and not a defect in the infinite mercy that makes the angels’ sin unforgivable. The church goes on to say that “There is no repentance for the angels after their fall, just as there is no repentance for man after death.” “The Church teaches that Satan was at first a good angel, made by God: “the devil and the other demons were indeed created naturally good by God, but they became evil by their own doing.”

Knowing this, one would have to ask, how was it possible for Lucifer to fall into sin being in heaven? Lucifer was the first being that God created, was he not a perfect being? Was God visible to angels in heaven? Where did all the angels come from? Were they all created by God? Did Lucifer have the gift to create other beings where man has the gift to create other human-beings? Why did Lucifer turn away from God, and why did he have so many followers? If Lucifer fell into pride, what was the source of this pride? Were the fallen angels really sent to earth? Why didn’t God have mercy on the fallen angels when He shows mercy to us when we fall? Were there angels that wanted to return to God after they realized what they had done? If so, wouldn’t God show mercy on them? What path of redemption would God use to return the fallen angels back to heaven? Perhaps the angels that were sent to earth were sent for a specific reason which may have something to do with why the creation process took so long. Is it possible that the angels played a major role in the evolution process of creation as a means of redemption? Is human life the final journey of the soul? Is the soul a spirit before it enters the body, if so, where did the spirit come from?

As you can see, there are many questions that need to be answered for us to better understand the unforgivable sin of the angels and God’s plan of salvation. The mysteries that are hidden in God can never be known unless they are revealed by God. To answer these questions and to set us free from the darkness of error, God the Father is going to reveal the hidden mystery behind the fall of the angels:

Act of Creating the Spiritual Beings
BD No. 7067 of 03/17/1958 taken from book 75

God the Father is speaking: “It is My will that you shall be enlightened where darkness prevails. People who don’t question cannot receive answers, but those who want to know and turn to Me Myself will receive My reply so that they will learn to recognize Me in My love and wisdom and grant their love to Me. The act of creating the spiritual beings was a spiritual process which will only be understandable to you humans
when you enter the kingdom of light. As long as you live on earth it can only be roughly outlined to you according to your level of understanding. Nevertheless, it will not divert from the truth, but it will lack both the deeper reasons as well as the infinitely many intermediate processes which, however, would not contribute towards your enlightenment either. However, you can rest assured that I will not let your thinking become confused, since you only wish to be instructed in the truth. When I created the first being I was only motivated by the thought of creating a vessel for Myself which was intended to assimilate My ceaselessly outpouring strength of love, because My infinite love wanted to give itself and only ever provide happiness. My strength of love constantly brought forth all kinds of spiritual creations. Therefore I also wanted to create something that corresponded to Me Myself, thus an image of Me. And My will came to pass, a being of supreme perfection arose beside Me which was pleasing to Me, which was indescribably beautiful, it was an image of Myself which from then on was so permeated by My strength of love that it was equally able to be creatively active without limitation. And just as the source of My strength of love had motivated Me into shaping a receiving vessel into which it could flow, the same will and desire also arose in this being to make use of the constant influx of My love’s strength and, likewise, to let beings arise from within itself. Thus the same process repeated itself, because I wanted to let this first-created being participate in the incredible bliss of giving life to like-natured beings, for as an 'image' of Myself it was imbued with the same feelings, it was overflowing with love, and the strength it constantly received from Me did not keep the being inactive either, which resulted in this very process of creating countless beings. Hence these created beings could not be different from My first-created being, they were supremely perfect, brightly radiant and overwhelmingly powerful spirits which all corresponded to the image I had externalized. Through My influx of strength, which made the act of creating these beings possible in the first place, I was therefore also their 'Creator', although the will of the first-created being had to avail itself first of this strength of Mine. Hence all beings emerged from Me and My first image, and all beings possessed the same creative power. But My will was also active in all originally created beings, the host of originally created spirits were inflamed with burning love for Me, because My fire of love was their fundamental element, they had been the products of purest love and therefore all created beings were also positively inclined towards Me.

Endless times passed by in most blissful harmony and a constant exchange of love, and this state need never have changed. But then the process of creating took on a different form, which should only be understood in a spiritual sense. This was triggered by the desire of My first-created being, the bearer of light, to see Me. The being’s love for Me was still unchanged and therefore it desired to behold Me even though it knew that I, as the 'centre of strength and light' could not be visible to My created beings, which would have ceased to exist in view of My abundance of light, it would have consumed the created beings, which were sparks of My light, and thus a beholding of Me was not possible. And because it was unable to behold Me the thought flashed up in it to become independent from Me and more or less present itself to the host of originally created being as ‘Creator itself’, a thought which arose as a consequence of the desire to see Me despite better knowledge. As an
attribute of perfection all beings also possessed free will which, however, always corresponded to My will. And this free will allowed for the said mental confusion. Thus the bearer of light, Lucifer, was not prevented by Me from aiming his will in the wrong direction. Even so, the process of creation started to falter, that is, as long as his will no longer harmonized with Mine he more or less closed himself off to the flow of My love, yet always just temporarily, for at first his resistance was so small that love nevertheless came through again and he utterly devoted himself to Me once more, which then also resulted in an unabated flow of My strength of love and thus continued creative activity. But time and again the wrong thoughts kept emerging in him because he did not confide them in Me Myself so that I could have refuted them. For he temporarily excluded Me without realizing that he thereby lessened his strength. As soon as he loosened the bond with Me through wrongly inclined thoughts the inflow of strength of love also lessened; however, he did not realize this in view of the countless multitude of spirits he had already called into existence through his will and the use of My strength. Time and again it must be emphasized that My strength enabled him to create the beings in the first place and that only his love for Me gave him the strength, so it is understandable, that a reduction of his love also reduced the inflow of strength. And at the same time, every created being was also the proof of Lucifer’s connection with Me, thus no other being could arise after Lucifer consciously separated from Me, on account of which all created beings belong to Me as well, for they are 'My emanated strength of love'. And yet a large proportion of all created beings had fallen away from Me. And that justifies the question as to whether the beings differed in their fundamental substance.

I only externalized one being as an independent entity. And this being was created in My image. Consequently, all spiritual beings which were brought into existence by this being had to entirely correspond to Me and My image again. They were the same perfect; most radiantly shining living creations, for only something supremely perfect was able to emerge from our mutual love and will, which both corresponded to each other, beings, which were by no means inferior to the first-created bearer of light. Hence they were equally extremely powerful and ablaze with burning love for Me, even though they were unable to behold Me. Nevertheless, they recognized Me, for I also revealed Myself to them through the Word. It was an infinitely large number of spirits which glorified Me and sang My praises, which, in reverence, were willing to serve Me and which were only ever active according to My will, thus they were images of Me Myself. And this indescribably happy multitude of spirits should have increased the light bearer’s love for Me ever more. Yet various feelings in him began to oppose each other: He saw the gloriously radiating beings and desired to behold Me as well. Since he was visible to the beings he deemed himself superior to Me and no longer wanted to acknowledge Me as the One from Whom everything had emerged, despite the fact that he knew that he, too, had originated from Me. Conscious of the strength permeating him, he began to separate himself from the source of strength, a process which lasted for an infinitely long time because the desire for happiness repeatedly pushed him back to Me and therefore he repeatedly received strength again for the creation of new beings. And so these beings, too, consisted of the same fundamental substance, namely of My emanated strength of love; however the sporadic separation from Me also influenced the process of creation to a certain extent, insofar as those beings’ will and love was more inclined towards their maker than Me, but I neither tried to influence these beings nor the bearer of light. Yet they were equally enlightened, they recognized Me as their Creator and were therefore also able to make the right decision in free will when this important decision was demanded of them.
My first-created being was connected with all beings produced by him, just as I was inseparably linked with all beings because My strength of love had to permeate them were they to continue to exist. My adversary tried to maintain the connection with his created beings even after his will was already opposing Mine, that is, he also inspired the first spirits into turning away from Me and a number of them succumbed to his temptation, Lucifer also pulled them into the abyss and their realization should have truly made them abhor his disgraceful plan. And their sin was far greater still, therefore, their path of return will also be considerably more difficult, whereas the majority of the first-created beings remained with Me when the followers of My present adversary detached themselves from Me. The hidden resistance with which Lucifer started to oppose Me resulted in the fact that an infinitely large host of created spirits decided partly for and partly against Me when the test of will was expected of them; for the resistance disturbed the hitherto integrated whole. My former image was no longer governed by the same will, the same love, it had caused a rift and this division was also felt by the beings which had emerged from our love, which were now like their maker, even though My strength was involved in their creation. But since this resistance had not been present in the first-created spiritual being, since the light bearer's love and will were completely merged with Mine, it was only possible for such beings to emerge from our love which utterly corresponded to us, whose brilliant abundance of light and unlimited strength were true images of Me Myself as well as of the being which I had externalized from Me in My love, and which also, with a few exceptions, remained with Me. And the same process occurred in the latter as happened in Lucifer: free will aimed in the wrong direction, they desired to see their God and Creator and drew the wrong conclusions from My necessary invisibility by acknowledging that which was 'visible' to them as their 'God', who then exalted himself and drew countless beings to himself, which all detached themselves volitionally from Me and thereby plunged into the abyss.

Once all created beings glowed with light and strength, because nothing could have arisen without the flow of My love's strength. The reduced emanation of light only began with Lucifer's reduced love for Me, but this did not mean that these beings were lacking the light of realization, for at the moment of creating the beings My strength of love also permeated the maker of all the beings again; but these moments became increasingly less frequent until he voluntarily rebelled against Me and was no longer able to receive any influx of strength because he rejected it by believing himself to be just as powerful as Me. And then his state of mind became dark as well. He, who once had been in My image, became My direct opposite, his nature reversed completely, he had sunk into the deepest abyss and his followers with him, whom he regarded as his supposed power and strength. The highest being, having emerged from My love, had sunk the lowest, because it misused its free will, the characteristic of divine origin. And it was left up to every being to aim this will in My or his direction, every being was able to pass the test of will because every being possessed the light of realization and also had the strength at its disposal to resist the urging for its maker. But neither will every fallen being ever lose My love, for My love let it arise and My love will never ever let it perish again, but until it surrenders its resistance it will not be able to feel My love and thus remain wretched. However, one day its resistance will diminish and the being will look for My love again and consciously take the path of return to Me. Then it will recognize My inconceivable love, it will recognize its God and Creator in Jesus Christ, in Whom I Myself became for all beings the visible God, Whom they desired to see and Who prepared for them the path of return into the Father's house."
God the Father is speaking: “Believe Me, I will gladly instruct you when I recognize your longing for truthful knowledge, because I only emanate light and this light permeates the darkness. However, you are still in an area of darkness where light has to be sent to you until you are so filled by it that you can also pass it on again yourselves. But you will be receptive for My ray of light as soon as you desire clarification about regions which are still in darkness to you. Then I can illuminate you, I can once again gradually return you to the state of enlightenment and introduce you to knowledge which will make you happy. And there shall be light in you, you shall know where you came from and your final goal on earth. You can only receive this knowledge from Me Myself, Who created you for My pleasure.

You came forth from Me Myself. My strength of love externalized living creations who were like Me Myself, who were independent beings, created by Me as miniatures of Myself. I gave life to these creations, i.e. they were able to create and work like Me, they were also able to hear My voice and therefore knew of Me Myself as their God and Creator, and they were faithfully devoted to Me and tremendously happy. But you humans know little or nothing about the kingdom of these once blissful spirits. This kingdom was originally created when I wanted to recognize Myself in images of Myself, when I created vessels into which I could pour My love. I created spiritual beings because My infinite love wanted to give itself, it wanted to flow into similar beings whose perfection gave Me unimaginable bliss. I created a spiritual world with living inhabitants for My delight, I populated it with creations of the most magnificent kind and rejoiced in the beings’ bliss, to whom I gave such happiness because love, which was and remains My fundamental nature, motivated Me to do so.

This spiritual world existed for an infinitely long time in harmony and most intimate unity of all beings with Me, their Creator and Provider. For an infinitely long time these beings’ will and love concurred with Mine. Because the first created being, which I Myself had externalized in complete perfection, loved Me deeply and devotedly. It found unlimited bliss by constantly creating new beings brought to life through his will and the use of My strength, which corresponded to My will, because the love this being felt for Me resulted in the same will. Consequently, there was no discord in the spiritual world, nothing contradicted My will, it was a world of unlimited happiness because all spiritual beings were teeming with light and strength and were able to create by using their own will, which was also My will as long as the strength of My love permeated all My living creations. But this perfect state did not last. For I did not constrain the spiritual beings by My will, I gave free will to every single being as a sign of its divinity.

The first created being, Lucifer, also had this free will, and he misused it. However, Lucifer could have voluntarily wanted the same as I Myself and he would have been infinitely happy and remained so forever. But he misused his freedom of will and directed it wrongly, which resulted in a spiritual rebellion the consequences of which you humans cannot possibly understand. Nevertheless, you humans are the products of this past spiritual rebellion. Lucifer, the first created being, with whom I was in constant contact through the Word, was able to think, as were all created beings, and therefore he was also able to infer a wrong meaning to My Word. He had free will and could therefore also change the direction of his mind. He was able to leave the law of eternal order and set up completely wrong concepts and, by doing so, caused mental confusion in himself as well as in the beings who followed him, which resulted in momentous consequences. He also transferred his wrong thoughts to the beings brought to life by
his will and the use of My strength. A general opposition to Me ensued, the beings resisted Me, they no longer accepted My illumination of love unreservedly and thereby grew weaker and darker. They revolted against the law of eternal order, their thoughts made their own way.

This resulted in an incredible chaos in the host of the first created spirits who then had to decide whom they should follow, which resulted in the desertion of countless beings from Me. However, I did not put a stop to it, I only saw in it as a means which would lead to even greater bliss than I could give the 'created' beings, who certainly had emanated from Me in all perfection but who nevertheless were always just My 'work.' Now, after the apostasy from Me, they had the opportunity to return again as 'children' which would heighten their bliss by far, because the return to Me as a 'child' has to be achieved entirely voluntarily but then the being will be completely independent from Me, My power and My will, yet it will exist totally within My will since, due to its perfection, it will have totally accepted My will. You humans are on this way of return to Me while you live on this earth, and if you are of good will My eternal light of love can permeate you once again, and all the knowledge you once possessed but voluntarily surrendered can be regained by you. And I know of no greater bliss than to give you this knowledge, than to offer you My immense love and to change your state of darkness and ignorance, so that you will become as you were in the beginning, so that you will achieve unlimited happiness again, so that you will reach your goal and return as true children to Me, your Father of eternity, Whose love is and eternally will be for you who once came forth from His love.”

First Created Being - Light bearer - Apostasy from God

God the Father is speaking: “Your human intellect is only able to understand profound truth to a certain degree, because pure spirituality is only spiritually explainable. This explanation will be accepted by the spirit within you and indeed also passed on via the soul to the intellect, but the intellect is still too earthly minded and therefore cannot delve so deeply into spiritual knowledge to understand everything. Nevertheless, My spirit expresses itself through the spiritual spark within you, and anyone who has love will also understand the meaning of what I say to him:

My creative will was immense, My strength inexhaustible, and I found My bliss in the implementation of My thoughts and plans. And this bliss wanted to express itself, My love wanted to give itself, I wanted another being beside Me to also enjoy what made Me indescribably happy. I experienced My solitude as a lack which I could change any time if I wanted to. And I wanted to re-discover Myself in a being that should be closely united with Me, which I wanted to shape as a mirror of Myself, as My own image, to be able to bestow it with unlimited bliss and thereby increase My bliss too. I wanted to create such a being and this will sufficed, because My will was strength and always proceeded with love and wisdom. The entity I externalized from within Myself was indeed My image yet it could not see Me, had it been able to see Me it would have ceased to exist due to its beatitude, since no being could endure to behold Me. For every being, even the most perfect image of Myself, is always just a product of My strength of love, whereas I Am the strength of love Myself and enlighten everything with incomparable intensity but, as a result, I could not be endured by the being I had externalized. Yet by creating this being I had a vessel into which the strength of My love
could flow continually, and thus it also received My creative will, My strength, My wisdom and My love beyond measure with this constant influx of strength from Me. As a result, it was now able to experience the same bliss, it was able to use its strength in accordance with its own will, it could be creatively active for its own pleasure and thus constantly increase My bliss, because it was My strength which enabled the being to do so and I took pleasure in its happiness.

And now countless other beings of the same nature emerged from this being. They all were children of My love in radiating light, in utmost perfection, because from the image I created of Myself and My infinite love could only ever emerge utmost perfection, because we shared the same will. Both our love found itself again in the created beings, because nothing imperfect existed as long as My will and My love worked through this first created being. It was an enlightened world of spirits; there were a great number of originally created spirits. The strength from Me flowed unrestricted to the being which I had chosen for Myself as the bearer of light and strength. And the entity itself was more than blissfully happy. Yet I wanted to increase this bliss even more; I did not want it to be tied to My will but it should be active of its own will which, if the being was perfect and remained so, was My will. For the being, having been created by Me, was incapable of having any other will. But I wanted it to be able to act independently, because the only characteristic of a divine being is that love is so powerful within itself that it is the decisive factor for the same direction of will as mine. I wanted to receive this love from My first created being which, however, was intended to result in its ultimate perfection at the same time, so that it was no longer active as a created being in accordance with My will but should enjoy unlimited bliss by merging with My will for love of Me.

But in order to pass this test of love and will it had to have complete freedom of will. It did not see Me but it recognized Me because it was enlightened. However, it saw the countless beings created by its will, and it felt itself as their creator in spite of knowing that it had received its strength from Me. And the entity was envious of My strength. Although it was visible to the beings it had created, it was nevertheless conscious of its origin from Me, but it claimed the right to rule these beings for itself by presenting itself to them as the source of strength, as the only power able to create. It more than less denied to love Me in order to rule. You humans cannot understand the process by which a self-aware being could transgress into completely wrong reasoning but this is explained by free will which, in order to become active, must also be able but does not have to make a negative choice.

The bearer of light and strength saw on the one side the evidence of strength conveyed through him, yet he did not see the source of strength itself. Thus he declared himself ruler over his created spirits and also tried to portray Me as non-existent to them. He tried to transfer his now opposing will on to them. And now the moment of decision, of proving their perfection, also came for the beings who had been created by the bearer of light with the use of My strength. My strength was inherent in all these beings, they were fully enlightened and aglow with love for Me, Whom they could not see but nevertheless recognize. But they also loved their creator, because the strength that had created them was love which had emanated from the first created being and enabled it to create. This love now had to make a choice, and it divided itself.

Terrible confusion occurred amongst the spirits who felt urged to make a decision. But, since My strength of love was effectively light, it was understandable that the urge towards the primary source of strength was stronger in many beings, that their love diminished for the one who separated from Me and pushed towards Me with increased force. For the light within them was the realization that I was Eternal Love.
Every being had this knowledge indeed, but it also had free will which did not depend on knowledge, or it would not have been free. And the spiritual world divided itself. The externalized being had its followers just as I had Mine, even though I was not visible. But the effect of My strength was so powerful that many beings turned away from the one who wanted to oppose Me. Their will remained in the right direction, whereas the bearer of light and his followers directed their will wrongly, thus they volitionally separated from Me and this caused their fall into the abyss.

Thus the light bearer, the fully illuminated being externalized by Me, became My adversary, whereas everything that had emerged from him, that was created by both our love, partly turned towards Me and partly towards him, depending on the glow of love by which it was permeated. As soon as the bearer of light separated from Me the beings experienced an undefined desire for a definite pole. Free will began to unfold itself, neither I nor My adversary influenced them forcefully, they were merely exposed to both our emanation of strength which wanted to gain every being for itself. The flow of My strength was pure love and affected the beings so intensely that they recognized Me without seeing Me, but they could also recognize the first created beings' change of will. However, because they could see this entity many followed it, i.e. they subordinated themselves to its will and thus distanced themselves from Me. Yet other originally created beings felt themselves as My children and voluntarily remained loyal to Me, only they were far less in number. These were the first created beings who arose from My light bearer’s most blissful creative will and My immense influx of strength of love. And this strength of love was inherent in these beings too and persistently pushed them towards Me, for they recognized their creator's present will as wrong and therefore turned away from him. The other beings could have come to this realization too yet they blindly followed the one they could see, and their will was respected and in no way influenced by Me, because this decision of will had to take place in order to shape the created beings to independent perfection. The being which left Me drew a large number of followers into the abyss, for to distance oneself from Me means to strive towards the abyss, to aim towards a completely opposite state, which thus signifies darkness and weakness, loss of knowledge and strength. Whereas My children blissfully remained in the most radiant light and immense strength, in beatitude.

After the fall of Lucifer, the light bearer, his strength was defeated. He could no longer actively create and shape although I did not withdraw the strength from him because he was My living creation. His power and strength rested in his followers, whom he now dominated as prince of darkness. But they are also the products of My love which I will not leave to My adversary forever. As long as these beings still share his will they belong to him; but as soon as I succeed in turning their will towards Me he has lost them, and thus his strength diminishes at the same rate as I release his prisoners from his control which, however, always presupposes the being's free will.”

**Creation of the Beings Who Oppose God**

BD No. 2100 of 10/06/1941 taken from book 30

God the Father is speaking: “Bear in mind that you are the living creations of the one who opposed God, that you were called into existence by the will of the God opposing power and that you are therefore children of sin. God did not withhold His strength from this spirit who once emerged from His strength as a perfect being, hence he made use of God’s strength and, by drawing on divine strength, let countless beings arise from his will, and this was your beginning. You are the products of a wrong will and yet of divine origin, since only God’s strength made you become what God’s
adversary wanted. And this is why you are subject to him as long as your will still strives for the same, separation from God, for this was the fundamental idea, the motive for the apostasy from God, to be free from His power, to be free and to rule over the beings. And thus the most illuminated being created by God descended into the deepest abyss, it rebelled against God and tried to instigate all beings having emerged from his will to also rebel against God. And his created beings succumbed to his will although they were able to freely decide which lord to acknowledge. The beings were in his power because they surrendered their will to him, which was subsequently abused by God’s adversary by binding it and thereby enslaving the originally free living creations. However, everything that emerges from God’s strength has the urge for freedom, and in order to return this freedom to the beings God seized the beings from their maker’s power. He placed them in a free state into the spiritual world and gave them the right of self-determination. The beings, however, also abused their freedom and also became sinful by taking the opponent’s side. But divine strength is the fundamental substance of the beings, and divine strength must flow back to God without fail. And thus God wrestles for these fallen-away beings so that they will find the path to Him and offer Him their will.

Human intellect cannot comprehend that nothing can ever be lost which emerges from God; it cannot understand what an enormous task it is to lead that which had distanced itself close to God again. Nor can human intellect accept that the power of God’s adversary was so great as to create beings, and that divine strength did not intervene to change his will, so that he would have had to acknowledge God as Lord above himself and also order his products to approach God and comply with His will. Human intellect cannot comprehend that infinite times pass by before the transformation of these living creations’ thinking takes place and they recognize God. And therefore God informs people through spiritual channels of the knowledge of which power was active during the creation of the beings who are now experiencing their embodiment on earth. These beings voluntarily aspired to be in opposition to God and would never ever return to God again had they been left in the state of free will; and since they had been created by the wrong will, the wrong will was also within them and this consequently had to strive contrary to God, for they did not know the power which was responsible for their aspiration. And thus the beings were subject to their creator, they were something imperfect, enslaved and therefore alienated from God, which could not correspond to His will and nature.

God, as the most perfect Being, could not tolerate anything near Him which did not correspond to this state of perfection. Nevertheless, it was not the beings’ own fault because they did not recognize the light as yet since they had emerged from darkness. God’s love helped these beings and informed them of the light. He gave them freedom of will by removing His adversary’s power over the beings and thus freed the beings from his control. The imperfectly created beings, however, could not be changed by divine will to become perfect but had to decide for themselves, they had to strive towards God’s presence of their own accord and distance themselves from the adversary. Due to their freedom of will they had been placed into a position to decide since they now knew about both powers. Yet their wrong will predominated and the beings turned towards their maker again and lost themselves to the darkness. And God took pity on them, for the state of those without light was painful. His love wanted the beings in a happy state. And so He removed the beings’ will and let them take an infinitely long path in a state without willpower which should lead them into perfection. And for this purpose God let the creation arise. God shaped forms which were designed to shelter the passive beings. Thus God created heaven and earth, a spiritual and an earthly world, which was destined
to be an abode for the imperfect beings until they had become perfect. Now the beings were forced to discard their arrogance and bow down to divine will. They had to endure a state which represented a constraint for the spiritual being which formerly enjoyed its freedom. It was deprived of its freedom because it had abused it. However, the path through the works of creation will bring it closer again to its previous freedom until it finally receives its freedom again when it is a human being, in order to then pass the test as to whether it will use its free will in the right way. There is indeed a great risk that the being will not pass the test, yet such a test has to take place because the return to God is only of full value in free will, thus it signifies that the being will come closer to God. The strength from God which was once used by the adversary for the creation of the beings will have flowed back to its origin, and at the same time the God-opposing will have changed into a God-resembling will, thus the being has become perfect as soon as it shares the same will as God. The being, which had no knowledge of God when it was created, only recognized God’s adversary as its lord; but now it has freed itself from his power and found the path home to its Father, from Whose strength it emerged.”

God only Created Beings of Equal Perfection

God the Father is speaking: “I only emanated one being, Lucifer, the bearer of light, whom I created for Myself in order to give Myself and My love to him, and which therefore was shaped in My image which came forth from Me in supreme perfection, which arose before Me as a thought and already existed in its abundance of light and strength, as could not otherwise be possible because nothing imperfect could emerge from Me. I created this being for My own happiness, because My fundamental nature is love and love constantly wants to give pleasure, but prior to this no spiritual being existed which was able to receive My love. It was a mirror image of Myself, I saw Myself in My externalized being, it was, to some extent, My second Self, which likewise unified love, wisdom and might within itself so that it could not be anything else but I Myself, and which therefore was also inexpressibly happy because it was constantly infused by My strength of love. I wanted an identical being next to Me because My creative strength made Me exceedingly happy and I wanted to provide a being with the same happiness in order to take pleasure in its bliss. My fundamental substance is love, and this love, in turn, is strength. My strength of love was unable to remain inactive and constantly brought spiritual creations into being. Yet no-one apart from Me was able to take pleasure in these creations and this motivated Me to create a likeness of Myself, a being which had the same nature as I Myself, with the difference that it had a beginning, whereas I Am everlasting. I enjoyed beatitudes beyond measure by radiating My strength of love into My created being which then, permeated by the same strength of love, also wanted to be creatively active and was able to do so because it was completely free. It was utterly absorbed in My love, a constant exchange of love took place, for the love I gave was returned to Me by the being in the same way. The being was fond of Me and totally engrossed with Me. And that resulted in unimpeded illumination with love, unimpeded illumination with strength which wanted to become active. And since the creation of the first spirit of light had given Me extreme happiness, its bliss also consisted of the creation of the same beings, thus from both of our strength of love a countless host of the same beings emerged, which were all supremely perfect and exceedingly blissful. This process has already been explained to you though My revelations. And yet you keep asking questions as to who
really was the creator of the elevated and highest beings of light, because in your state as a human being you already have a different concept of the originally created spirit of light, since you are no longer in possession of full realization as a result of sin.

However, you forget that all original spirits have their origin in Me and the bearer of light, that the latter used My strength for the creation of all spiritual beings, that you therefore came forth from Me and from him, but his will used My strength which flowed to him without restriction. And therefore you will also understand that the bearer of light had an exceptional position, because he was the only one who was called into life by Me. Although he certainly lost his strength and power through his apostasy from Me, he lost his realization and fell into the deepest abyss, he is nevertheless still the same originally created spirit, which is now as active as a direct opposite as he was formerly devoted to Me with burning love and enjoyed supreme beatitudes. All other fallen beings were dissolved in their fundamental substance; the once emanated strength was reshaped into the most manifold creations. The bearer of light, however, having lost all light, remained the being he was from the start, he merely turned into the opposite, so that he became My opposite pole and now serves Me as an opposite pole in the return of the fallen spiritual beings. For these spiritual beings had once been put to the test to acknowledge Me or him, and they followed him and became lost. And now they will be tested time and again, for My existing adversary insists on his claim on the fallen beings, just as I will not surrender them since they emerged from My strength of love, but the being itself makes the decision. My adversary asserts his rights and influences the beings in a negative sense, while I try to win the beings over for Me through influencing them in a positive way. And countless beings support Me; they, too, were created by him but they recognized Me as the source of strength from which he also originated. And they have remained in beatitude because they still receive My strength of love continuously and are active in a creative and shaping way. However, self-aware beings were only externalized by Me and the bearer of light in unison, and these self-aware beings will indeed continue to exist forever. Only the once fallen beings lost their self-awareness for a certain period of time in order to be able to accomplish the ascent from the abyss again in a dissolved state. But they will receive their self-awareness again as soon they have to pass their final test of will as a human being. But My spiritual adversary must be taken into account at all times, for he remained what he was, and he will continue to remain who he is for infinitely long periods of time.

However, after the creation of My first being of light nothing of inferior value emerged from Me Myself and this being of light. Your human thinking is still limited because you are not perfect yet, and thus the thought occurred to you that the beings, having emerged from our mutual love, cannot be put on par with the first-created being. But this thought is misguided, because it was the same strength and the same will of love which brought them to life, therefore there were only ever supremely perfect beings, true images of Myself. You humans indeed compare your fellow human beings, you can detect more mature and immature traits of nature, consequently you also assume that you can make such evaluations regarding the originally created beings. But surely you understand that such valuations are not appropriate concerning the creations which came forth from Me and My love. All creations of a spiritual nature were only of the highest perfection, and in particular the created beings were of supreme perfection. The fact that part of them nevertheless fell does not entitle you to assume that these 'fallen' beings were less perfect and fell because their creator Lucifer, due to his recurring rejection of My strength of love, had created inferior beings. For even a number of the first beings which were created by our will of love followed him when he turned away from Me and proceeded towards the abyss. Nor did the individual beings' strength
of will differ; it was, however, free, and that explains everything; for freedom knows no limitations, and a free will must be able to develop in all directions. The individual beings’ wrong thinking is the second explanation for the fall. The ability to think also allowed for wrong thinking, to wrongly interpret My Word which the beings, due to their constant illumination of love, heard within themselves. They were not compelled to interpret the Word only in one direction, by virtue of their faculty of thought they were also able to apply a different meaning to it and so they did when they rejected My love, for thereby they also lost their power of perception and their thinking became confused. In addition, the limitless flow of strength of love made them arrogant, so that in their abundance of strength they believed themselves to have the same power, so that their love for their Creator therefore diminished and the being more or less made demands, which was demonstrated by their desire to visibly present Myself to the beings. They believed themselves to be entitled to it, and this wrong way of thinking was transferred on to them by My first-created being. It expressed this desire despite the fact of knowing full well that it had to remain unfulfilled were My created beings to continue to exist. Thus it can certainly not be said that any of the fallen beings has merely been a victim of its creator’s will, for every single being had the right of self-determination and was also in possession of brightest realization. But every fallen being became spiritually arrogant and forgot, or refused to acknowledge, that it had originated from Me, that I therefore had been its Creator and Father, against Whom its revolt was the worst sin which the being would never ever be able to redeem by itself again. **All beings were created in equal perfection, and the fact that a number of equally created beings remained loyal to Me is already proof in itself of a greater than greater guilt, they only did not relinquish their love for Me, whereas those which had ‘fallen’ rejected My love, and this was their immense original sin which was subsequently intended to be redeemed by One Who belonged to the beings which remained faithful to Me.** The fallen beings cannot be excused by some kind of imperfection, with lacking perception, less illumination or a weak will. They had the same nature as those who remained loyal to Me, yet in awareness of their immeasurable strength they arrogantly no longer accepted My strength of love and were thereby also deprived of all strength. They must laboriously gain strength again if they want to become what they were in the beginning. Any kind of imperfection would have been an excuse for a being’s apostasy, but this did not exist, and when Lucifer saw the countless multitudes of created beings in brightest illumination and supreme strength which had emerged from his will by using My strength he exalted himself above Me because he was unable to behold Me, but he himself was visible in his magnificence to the countless multitudes of spirits.

![Image](image_url)

However, untold original spirits remained faithful to Me, they were created to be exactly the same as the fallen spirits and not advantaged by Me in any way, they merely
returned their infinite love to Me which permeated them and which they constantly received from Me and thus became increasingly more blissful, whereas the love of the fallen beings became a selfish love which no longer wanted to please but only wanted to take. This process is and will remain inexplicable to you humans because it was a spiritual process which can only be understood by the spirit; nevertheless, the circumstances which motivated Me into bringing the material world and its creations into being can be roughly explained to you, and time and again I will try to enlighten you, as far as your intellect is able to grasp it, and correct any misguided opinion, since one single misguided thought is already enough for you to construct a wrong edifice of ideas which you will no longer be able to dismantle and yet you will be far removed from the truth. You would also do well not to brood over things which are irrelevant for your soul’s salvation, which only show some kind of craving for knowledge, the satisfaction of which does not contribute in the slightest towards attaining full maturity of soul. For what you need to know will be conveyed to you by Me, yet always on condition that your own maturity of soul will determine the measure I hand out.

Yet you shall always know that I Am supremely perfect, that everything is based on My love, wisdom and might and that no imperfections can be present when this bond with Me exists. And this existed at the creation of the beings, for the being I externalized the bearer of light, was most intimately devoted to Me and was therefore able to receive boundless beatitudes through the influx of My strength of love. And it used this strength of love again in accordance with My will, because its will was in line with Mine as long as we were united by deepest love. Every act of creation, however, necessitates the flow of My strength of love, and therefore every created being had to be called perfect when it was brought into life. The fact that it then changed into the opposite and became an imperfect being was purely the result of its free will, which was the same as Mine as long as the being's love belonged to Me. When it resisted My love it had to leave the eternal order and continued to possess brightest illumination until it decided to turn away from Me for good. Only then did it lose its realization, only then its spirit darkened, and only then did it become My opposite. It was no longer a divine being but adopted all the qualities of the one who first revoked his love for Me and became My adversary. Henceforth it forfeited its perfection, it became poorly shaped and was hostile minded towards Me, My strength of love was no longer able to touch it, and thus all spiritual substances hardened which I subsequently reshaped into material creations, into the complete opposite which it had been in the very beginning. Nevertheless, this fallen spiritual being always has the opportunity to regain its original state if it is willing to abandon its resistance to Me and once again voluntarily allows itself to be illuminated by My strength of love. The apostasy from Me happened out of free will, and the return to Me must therefore also take place out of free will. Then the being will be and remain infinitely happy again.”

Jesus' soul
BD 8750 11.02.1964
Was Jesus’ soul already incarnated before God’s human manifestation?

God the Father is speaking: “Time after time I want to reveal My love for you by introducing you to knowledge which will make you very happy, because like a bright light it will unveil things to you which previously were obscured by darkness, and because your degree of awareness will be raised again which also signifies a maturing of the soul. For love always will and has to be the foundation for the conveyance of My Word, I could not address you if a certain degree of love were not present, and thus this love will let the light of realization shine ever more brightly within you. You are still
occupied by questions which only I Am able to answer, because only I know the regions you wish to understand better:

All elevated, previously not-fallen spirits also incarnate on earth in order to take the path through the abyss for the purpose of attaining the highest goal, the childship to God. And for this purpose they have to live on earth in the flesh, they embody themselves as a human being and live their earthly life just as every once fallen original spirit. They, too, have to struggle and resist all temptations with which they are confronted by My adversary's side. Thus, they must have passed in truth 'through the abyss' in order to then, when they are recalled, return as a child of God to Me, their eternal Father. And beings of light have descended at all times in order to help people who, as once fallen beings, should achieve their return to Me. The light beings' love is very strong and profound so that they are always helpful and only ever intend to return My lost children to Me. And I do not stop them if they want to descend to earth in order to bring help, which is always needed. But the beings always had come from Me, permeated by My light of love they were living creations of utmost perfection who, with the same will as Mine, work with Me in the spiritual kingdom as well as on earth when they descend for the purpose of a mission. No being of light will ever exclude itself from a mission of bringing light to the earthly inhabitants.

And thus the soul, which as the human being Jesus accomplished the act of Salvation on earth, was also such a spirit of light who had initially emerged from Me as a light ray of love to which I gave independent life. This spirit had accepted a unique mission because he had realized from the start that the fallen beings needed Him, because he realized from the start that the first human being would fail and that he therefore as the 'human being Jesus' wanted to help humanity. He was from the start indeed also actively involved in the creation of the material world, for My will and strength flowed into all beings which had remained loyal to Me and which therefore were active as independent beings in infinity. This soul, too, had descended to earth (this soul, too, had previously already served Me as a spirit of light), and it established the connection between the people and God, that is, it came to people as a spirit of light and thus enabled Me Myself to audibly speak to people through this soul. Hence this spirit of light served Me as a cover, nevertheless not physically albeit certainly temporarily visible to people but not permanently, in as much that He did not live on earth as a 'human being' but only worked amongst people apparently having the same physical substance, and yet he was and remained a spiritual being Which disappeared again from sight of those whom It helped through instructions and discourses.

Elevated beings of light indeed embodied themselves physically on earth too, and as representatives of Myself always also proclaimed My will to people, for it was necessary to provide them with the information why and for what purpose they lived on earth in spiritual hardship. Nevertheless, a distinction has to be made between the earthly life of a being of light as a human being and the appearance of a spirit of light through whom I communicated Myself. In that case the spirit of light was not My visible external cover, as was the case with the human being Jesus, but he only served Me to proclaim My Word to people in a natural manner, for I could also have addressed people from above but then they would have lost their freedom of will. Thus I always availed Myself of an external form which could either be a physical or a spiritual human being. However, the former lived his life on earth as a human being, whereas the latter was only temporarily visible to people because they urgently required My Word.

Consequently, if it is said that Jesus' soul had repeatedly incarnated before My human manifestation you should only ever assume a spiritual appearance when I Myself, love, wanted to express Myself to you humans and thus I chose a spiritual cover for
Myself in order to manifest Myself to people. Whereas an embodiment of Jesus’ soul in the flesh before My human manifestation has not taken place, although I was also able to express Myself in the Word through a human being if he thus had descended to earth from the kingdom of light. **Jesus’ soul had been chosen to enable My human manifestation on earth, and this soul was truly the most elevated spirit of light Who, as first-born Son, had emerged from Me, that is, from My strength and the will of the one whom My greater than great love had externalized as first-created being.** I Myself, as the Eternal spirit God, manifested Myself only in Jesus, in this highest soul of light. But it had already served Me as a spirit of light previously in order to enable Me to speak to people, who nevertheless had a high degree of maturity which enabled Me to send them such beings of light through which I Myself could address them directly.

But the fact that untold beings of light had also been embodied as human beings prior to this who likewise upheld people’s contact to Me, who brought My Word to them, who, in a manner of speaking, lived on earth as a mouthpiece for Me, should be accepted as truth but should not lead to misguided notions, because Jesus’ soul was chosen for My human manifestation, since it had offered itself from the start for this act of compassion in the awareness of the first human beings’ failure.

It is wrong to say that I as ‘God’ have already incarnated several times. For My human manifestation in Jesus is and remains a unique action, which humanity is unable and even the world of light only barely able to grasp, the likes of which has never before and will never be evidenced again afterwards. For Jesus was not one of many but He was the One Who was to become for you humans and for all beings in the kingdom of light the visible God, Whom I have chosen for Myself as cover which shall remain eternally visible.

**And this being had an exceptional status, for His love, as the first spirit emanated by My and Lucifer’s love, was so immeasurably profound that only He could be considered for My human manifestation and thus a previous process as a human being on this earth was out of the question which, however, does not exclude that He, too, took part in creating the material world, for He knew about My plan of return and He always unreservedly accepted My will and as a being with an abundance of light and strength was also able to accomplish it. This being was so devoted to Me that it enabled the complete fusion with Me, that He and I had to be one, because I in Him and He in Me absorbed each other completely, and this will therefore unveil the secret of My human manifestation in Jesus the moment the being has attained the degree of light again that gives him brightest realization.”**

**Messianic Enthronement**

Ref: Hebrews 1: 5-9

For to which of the angels did God ever say: “You are my son; this day I have begotten You”? Or again: “I will be a father to him, and he shall be a son to me”? “And again, when he leads the first-born into the world, he says: “Let all the angels of God worship him.” Of the angels he says: “He makes his angel’s winds and his ministers a fiery flame”; but of the Son: “your throne, O God, stands forever and ever; and a righteous scepter is the scepter of your kingdom. You love justice and hated wickedness; therefore God, your God, anointed you with the oil of gladness above your companions”.

136
The soul which dwelt in the man Jesus was My 'Son'

In Summary

Jesus is speaking: “God begets only another Himself, as the Perfect One could but beget another Perfect One, another being like Himself, in order not to lower His perfection by begetting a creature inferior to Himself.

God is Light and within the eternal circle of the Father there is a second circle, begotten by the Father, working differently and yet not working in contrary fashion, for the Essence is one. It is the Son. That Son can but be God like His Father, with Whom He shares attributes in power, and with Whom He enjoys the Charity which gladdens them in the ineffable and unknowable love of Perfection itself.

Thought created the Word, and Thought and the Word love one another. Love is the Paraclete (Holy Spirit). The Beloved Son of God is spirit just like the Father. In
essence, He is the Spirit of the Spirit of God and dwells in unapproachable light with the Father because they are one.

Being one, means they have only one nature which unites love, wisdom and strength within itself. Love gave rise to everything and thus is the Creator, the ‘Father’. And out of Him the ‘Son’ also emerged, in whom the Father manifested Himself. But the Son is also ‘Wisdom’, because only love is the fire which emits the ‘light’. Thus love and wisdom cannot be separated, just as Father and Son are One.”

Where did Evil Come From
BD No. 7618a of 06/11/1960 taken from book 80

Jesus is speaking: “You cannot assess to which abysmal distance the once-fallen spirit has sunk as a result of its opposition to Me, his God and Creator of eternity. He knew Me, he possessed an abundance of light which excluded all deficiency of realization throughout eternities he received the evidence of My love and strength; he knew he had come forth from Me, that I had created him; he was inconceivably happy to receive My strength of love and he used this strength according to his will, which continuously augmented his bliss and yet, he left Me, He rebelled against Me, rejected My love and plunged into bottomless depths. He, whom I once created in My image, became My direct opposite, and now you humans pose the question as to how this could have been possible; after all, the first being, the bearer of light, was created in all perfection, as nothing imperfect can come forth from Me. This question can only be answered in that perfection knows no limitation, no restriction; it was able to move in any direction without being prevented from doing so. Free will is an imperative part of perfection; perfection includes the fact that everything has the rightful measure but this also means that free will can exceed the rightful measure and that the rightful measure will thereby be revoked. Lawful order is the rightful measure in all things. Consequently, if free will diverges from the lawful dimension, disorder will ensue, a state, which no longer corresponds to My will, to My eternal order. Hence something initially divine, something good, changes into something non-divine into something opposing God, and this is therefore the concept of ‘sin’. On the other hand, it must be possible to exceed the ‘rightful measure’, otherwise free will could not become active, but it can just as well remain within eternal order. It is therefore indeed possible that a being created by Me can entertain wrong thoughts and intentions because it has free will, but it is never pushed by Me Myself into wrong thinking and wanting, because it would be impossible for Me, the most perfect Being, to ever have a wrong thought, hence the allegation is wrong that evil is also inherent in Me. Nor did the being I externalized have anything evil in itself when I created it; everything it possessed was the lawful measure so that it did not have to fall.

However, because the thoughts and intentions of the perfect being were unlimited, it was also able to go beyond the rightful measure, it was able to lose itself and step out of the eternal order. But this spiritual confusion of the being could only occur when it turned away from Me, when it prevented My Word from sounding in him, for My Word was unable to give or demand anything else but perfection. My Word would never have induced the being into leaving My eternal order, but once the bond with Me became loosened and the being no longer listened to My voice, it was also able to think and want in the wrong direction, because this option was open to it on account of its decision of will. Yet ‘sin’, the wrong will, was at all times external from Me, I was only ever able to think and want in lawful order. I Myself was perfect, I created perfect beings and these remained perfect for as long as they upheld their connection with Me,
but which they were also able to sever as a sign that they possessed free will. But this bond with Me guaranteed right inclinations and thoughts; detachment from Me resulted in wrong inclinations and thoughts. For the being aspired towards something external to Me, Lucifer, the light bearer, put himself in My place, although he recognized Me as the primary source. The beings which came forth from both of us put Lucifer in My place, even though they, too, possessed the light of realization. Hence they deliberately carried out the separation and no longer moved within the right order, they no longer possessed the rightful measure, and instead, the negative now predominated, whereas in lawful order the positive prevails. In other words: **perfection was being lost and something imperfect emerged from this change of will, which expressed itself in a negative way and thus distanced itself, increasingly further.** Something outside of Me also went outside the lawful order, because lawful order can only be in Me, the most perfect Being, and because everything that does not correspond to this order is evil, therefore sin. And so the answer to the question as to whether I carry evil in Me is clear. Nothing evil can exist in Me or I would not be perfect. And evil is always that which steps out of this perfection and turns the rightful measure around, which thus revokes the eternal order, which is the fundamental principle of My nature. However, as evidence of its divinity I had to give free will to every being, and this had to have the option to change itself in any direction, and thus the being itself created evil when it rebelled against Me, when it left the eternal order, when it wanted to use its strength negatively and work against Me, when it distanced itself from Me. And for the sake of My ultimate goal for My living creations to become ‘children’ I did not prevent the being. Nevertheless, it could just as well have remained with Me, it did not have to become sinful and fall, it could have voluntarily remained perfect and enjoyed supreme bliss, nevertheless, it voluntarily forfeited it.”

**Note:** This event prefigures the events that took place in the **Books of Samuel:** 1 Samuel 8:19 - Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, Nay; but we will have a king over us; 1 Samuel 8:20 - That we also may be like all the nations; and that our king may judge us, and go out before us, and fight our battles. 1 Samuel 8:21 - And Samuel heard all the words of the people, and he rehearsed them in the ears of the LORD. 1 Samuel 8:22 - And the LORD said to Samuel, Hearken unto their voice, and make them a king.

**Lucifer the Angel of Light**

MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St. Paul to the Romans:185  
Jesus is speaking: “From the moment that Satan wanted to be equal to God in his every action, freedom, power, and will to act, by disordinately desiring, he who is a created creature, to being equal to He who is Uncreated - God as the Father from whom He is generated: the Only Begotten Son - and desiring it so that it could also be said of the created creature that which is said of the Incarnate Word at the beginning of the Gospel of John, dictated to the Evangelists of Love and Light from the Spirit of God who is Love and Light, ‘All things were made through Him;’ from that moment, the fulminated archangel is sacrilege, a murderer and predator.

He was Lucifer. He considered himself: Light. However, **to be the ‘bearer of light’ is not the same as being the Light.** There is a considerable difference between to ‘bear’ and ‘being.’ The Light: the Son of God, the Word of the Father, the Uncreated and Eternal, Immense and most Perfect One, ‘begotten, not made, consubstantial to the
Father’ through whom ‘all things were made’ has nothing of the same and in common
with the angelical creature created to be the bearer of light and messenger of God who
was Lucifer originally, he who then prevaricated by wanting to be the Light because he
freely and voluntarily wanted to be unfaithful to the Lord his Creator and to his Grace. It
was the delirious pride of wanting to believe himself God, and therefore, not subject to
the obedience in adoration of God that fulgurated the rebel.

From that moment, Satan wanted his own people to oppose the People of God. And he pursues this end without rest, out of hatred towards God and the being whom God loves as a Father. And he uses his intelligence, retained even after the divine fulguration - a most acute intelligence, which was suitable to the prince of the angelic nation - and his power for this purpose, spying on every action of man, listening to his every word, drawing from the cognition of every human action and word, from the physical appearance of an individual, from diseases, from misfortunes, from studies, from affections, from occupations, from everything, so many spheres to stir up trouble for you by creating prodigies apt to seduce and draw you into error.

Those prodigies of which Jesus Christ speaks, predicting the end times and putting men on guard against these prodigies and voices of the false prophets and false christs who will rise and appear here and there, and who will be none other than the satanic snares and satanic prophets, servants of the prophesied Antichrist, aroused in order to seduce men to Falsehood and to false doctrines of lies and to have them be found unprepared during the dreadful moment of the kingdom of the Antichrist on Earth and of the consecutive last coming of the Son of Man, of Christ the Victor for the Last Judgment of separation of the lambs and sheep from the goats and rams, of election and condemnation, of benediction and malediction. Those prodigies which Paul speaks of in the II Epistle of those in Thessalonians II and those prodigies which John speaks of in Chapter XIII of his Apocalypse.

Yes. The torment that Satan gives to the spirits faithful to the Lord is truly astute, tenacious and ferocious.”

Satan is not the Work of God

MV Vol. 4:799

Jesus is speaking: “Satan is not the work of God, but the free will of the rebellious angel. God had made him His glorious minister and thus had created him for a good purpose. Now, speaking to your own ego, you are saying: ‘Then God is foolish because He gave glory to a future rebel and entrusted His Will to a disobedient angel.’ I reply to you: ‘God is not foolish but He is perfect in His thoughts and deeds. He is the Most Perfect One. Creatures are imperfect, even the most perfect ones. There is always a point of inferiority in them, as compared with God. But God, Who loves them, has granted them free will so that through it the creature may be perfect in virtue and thus become more like God the Father.’ And I also tell you, oh mocker and shrewd seeker of sin in My words, that God draws a good purpose also from evil brought about voluntarily: that of making men possess a glory they deserved. The victories over evil are the crowns of the chosen ones. If evil could not give rise to good consequences for people full of good will, God would have destroyed it because nothing in Creation must be completely devoid of incentives or good consequences.”
The Meaning of the Name Satan
MV N 1945-1950:147

Jesus says: "The primitive name was Lucifer: in the mind of God it meant 'ensign or bearer of the light' - that is, of God, for God is Light. Second in beauty aimed all that is, he was a pure mirror reflecting unendurable Beauty. In mission to men he would have been the executor of God's will, the messenger of the decrees of goodness which the creator would have transmitted to his blessed, sinless children, to lead them higher and higher in his likeness. The bearer of light, with the rays of this divine light which he bore, would have spoken to man, and they, devoid of sins, would have understood the flashings of harmonious words, all of them love and rejoicing.

On seeing himself in God, seeing himself in himself, and seeing himself in his companions - for God enveloped him in his light and delighted in the splendor of his archangel - and because the angels venerated him as the most perfect mirror of God, he admired himself. He should have admired God alone. But in the being of all that is created all good and wicked forces are present and turn together until one of the two parts over-comes to yield good or evil, as all gaseous elements are present in the atmosphere because they are necessary. Lucifer attracted pride to himself. He cultivated and extended it. He made it into a weapon and a seduction. He wanted more than he had. He wanted everything - he was already so much. He seduced the less attentive among his campaigns. He distracted them from contemplating God and his supreme Beauty. Knowing the future wonders of God, he wanted to be in God's place. He saw himself, with his disturbed thought, as the head of the future men, worshipped as the supreme power. He thought, 'I know God's secret. I know the words. The design is known to me. I can do all that He wills. As I presided at the first creative operations, I can proceed. I am.' The words that only God can say were the cry of the ruin of the proud one. And he was Satan.

He was 'Satan.' In all truth I tell you that the name of Satan was not given by man, though, by the order and will of God, he gave a name to all that He knew to exist and still baptizes His discoveries with names created by Himself. In all truth I tell you that the name of Satan comes directly from God, and it is one of the first revelations God made to the spirit of his poor son wandering over the earth. And as my Most Holy Name has a meaning which I once mentioned to you, now listen to the meaning of this horrendous name:


This is Satan. This is what those sick with Satanism are. And he is also seduction, craftiness, darkness, agility, and iniquity. The five accursed letters forming his name, were written with fire on his brow stricken by a lightning bolt. The five accursed characteristics of the Corrupter against which my five blessed Wounds flame out, saving with their pain whoever wants to be saved from what Satan continuously injects.

The names 'demon,' 'devil,' and 'Beelzebub' can pertain to all the spirits of darkness. But this alone is 'his' name. And in Heaven he is named by that name alone, but there the language of God is spoken, in loving fidelity, to indicate what is intended as well, as God conceived it.

He is the 'Contrary One.' The one contrary to God: The one that is the opposite of God. And every action by him is the atheists of God's action. And every rumination by him involves leading men to be contrary to God. This is what Satan is. He is 'a setting
himself against Me’ in action. He sets the threefold concupiscence against my three theological virtues; the serpentine breeding ground of his horrible vices against the four cardinal virtues and all the others issuing forth from Me.

But, as charity is said to be the greatest of all virtues, so I say that the greatest of its anti-virtues and the one most repulsive to Me is pride: Because all evil has come through it. I therefore say that, whereas I still make allowances for the weaknesses of the flesh which yield to the incitement of lust, I say that I cannot make allowances for the pride seeks to compete with God, as a new Satan. Do I strike you as unjust? I am not. Consider that at root lust is a vice of the lower part which in some has an extremely voracious appetite, satisfied in moments of overwhelming brutishness. But pride is a vice of the higher part, consummated with sharp, lucid intelligence, premeditated and enduring. It damaged the part which most resembles God. It tramples on the gem given by God. It communicates a likeness to Satan. It sows pain more than the flesh does. For the flesh can make a wife, a woman, suffer. But pride can crush victims in whole continents, in every class of people. Because of pride man has been ruined and the world will perish. Because of pride faith languishes. Pride: the most direct emanation of Satan.

I have forgiven the great sinners of the senses because they were devoid of spiritual pride. But I could not redeem Doras, Jocanah, Sadoc, Eli, and others like them because they were ‘the proud.’

The Creation of Hell

MV - “Lessons on the Epistles of St. Paul to the Romans”: 214 – 216

Jesus speaks: “‘Eden’ was the name of the place where man had been created and placed so that he could populate it with his campaign. Just as ‘Heaven’ was the name of the place where the angels and pure spirits had been placed after having been created by God in order to adore and serve Him forever and ever. Eden means ‘garden,’ that is, a place of delights. Heaven means ‘Kingdom of God,’ a place of holiness and joy. If order had not ever been voluntarily violated by the creatures to whom God had given life and places of joy and delight, Eden would have remained Eden for all the descendents of the Man-Adam, and Hell would not have existed.

However, the angel first, knowing the future mysteries and future works of the Lord through a sublime gift, mysteries and works which Lucifer, through the most sublime amongst the angels, could never have accomplished, in the place of contemplating by adoring the infinite Power and Love of his Creator - and this would have been ‘living in order and living in harmony with good intellectual impulses’ - he rallied against his Lord in a foolish rebellion that stifled love, and therefore, harmony and order in him and in his followers; and he created. Yes, he too, created. But what? He created disorder, sin, and hell; that which only one who had separated himself from God could create.

The disorder in human impulses and instincts which God had given as good, order and harmonious amongst them, in order and in harmony for the final end for which God had created man, was brought into being by Lucifer, the rebel who for having been the ‘brightness of the morning’ of the heavenly creation of the angels, believed himself to be ‘like the Most High’ above whose heavens he attempted to ‘exalt his throne.’ (Isaiah 14)

Sin against love, that is, pride of the mind and of the heart of which the innocent Man-Adam became guilty, the tremendous sin of the I who wants to ‘become like God,’
(Genesis II) was brought into being by Lucifer who then seduced Man to this sin in order to make him [Adam] similar to himself in his rebellion to God.

Hell, the place of eternal inconceivable torture in which those who obstinately live in hate towards God and His Law precipitate, has been created because of him, by the rebellious Archangel who was fulgurated with his followers by divine wrath and conquered by faithful angels, conquered, because he was by then stripped of the power of his state of grace, fulgurated and ‘brought down to the depths of the Pit’ (Isaiah) in which his horrendous fire of hate, and his now horrendous light and flame, so different from the light and flame of grace and love with which God had endowed him when He created him, had lit the eternal and most atrocious fires.

Heaven remained Heaven, even after the rebellion and the fall of the rebels. Because in the Kingdom of God, everything is established by eternal rules and - having expelled the proud, the rebellious, and the self-idolaters whose abode is the burning inferno pool - perfect holiness, joy, love, harmony and order continues forever.

However disorder existed at this point, and with it, sin, sorrow and death were able to pierce amongst the delights of Eden, disturbing order, harmony and love, spreading poison, corrupting the intellect, will, sentiments and instincts, arousing sinful appetites, destroying innocence in grace, grieving the Creator and making creatures who were, a little while ago supernaturally and naturally happy, both unhappy, one condemned to obtain his bread with [great] difficulty from the earth now cursed and bearer of tribulations and thorns, and the other condemned to giving birth in pain, to live in sorrow and in subjection to man, both condemned to sorrow over a son slain by the [other] son and the shame of being parents of a fratricide, and in the end, of being acquainted with the sorrow of dying.

All this millennial sorrow comes from a disorder created by a rebel in Heaven and by acquiescence to the disorder proposed by the now accursed snake, in Eden, to the first two inhabitants of the Earth. Nor ever more could the first perfection, the first love, the first harmony, the first order; rise after an angel and two innocents voluntarily preferred evil over the Supreme Good.

Not even the Sacrifice of God, who made Himself Man in order to redeem, served to re-establish the primeval state order, harmony, love of perfection. Grace restores; however; the wound remains. Grace succors; however, the formats remain.

Whereas before it would have been sweet and effortless to reach Heaven, one now needs to “use violence” in order to attain the Kingdom of Heaven: Holy violence against evil violence. Because from the moment of the sin, Good and Evil exists, and they contend with each other outside and within man.

God calls. Satan calls. God inspires. Satan inspires. God offers His gifts: Satan his. And between God and Satan is man; man in whom there are two natures already in battle against one another, one carnal in which the foments of the Sin dwell, the other spiritual in which the voices of Grace dwell. And if God turns in the direction of he who resembles Him because He is the Father who loves His sons and who wants to re-unite with them after their earthly trial, Satan, the Adversary, Hater of God and of Man son of God, turns in both directions and incites the carnal side while he attempts to seduce the spiritual side in order to conquer and prey on like a ‘roaring lion who wants to devour,’ of whom Peter the apostle speaks.”
The Seven Chasms of Hell

Ref: Diary of St. Faustina -741 p296

St. Faustina is speaking: “Today, I was led by an Angel to the chasms of hell. It is a place of great torture; how awesomely large and extensive it is! The kinds of tortures I saw: the first torture that constitutes hell is the loss of God; the second is perpetual remorse of conscience; the third is that one’s condition will never change; the fourth is the fire that will penetrate the soul without destroying it – a terrible suffering, since it is a purely spiritual fire, lit by God’s anger; the fifth torture is continual darkness and a terrible suffocating smell, and, despite the darkness, the devils and the souls of the damned see each other and all the evil, both of others and their own; the sixth torture is the constant company of Satan; the seventh torture is horrible despair, hatred of God, vile words, curses and blasphemies. These are tortures suffered by all the damned together, but that is not the end of the suffering. There are special tortures destined for particular souls. These are the torments of the senses. Each soul undergoes terrible and indescribable sufferings, related to the manner in which it has sinned. There are caverns and pits of torture where one form of agony differs from another. I would have died at the very sight of these tortures if the omnipotence of God had not supported me. Let the sinner know that he will be tortured thought all eternity, in those senses which he made use of to sin. I am writing this at the command of God, so that no soul may find an excuse by saying there is no hell, or that nobody has ever been there, and so no one can say what it is like.”

Satan’s Power

BD No. 5136 of 05/25/1951 taken from book 58

God the Father is speaking: “The one who wants to ruin you only has great power if you grant him this power yourselves, for if you resist him and turn to Me, you will receive the flow of My light of love which will completely disable him, for he is unable to endure love. Satan truly constantly endeavors to captivate, to eternally dominate, everything that had emerged through his will but nevertheless with My strength. And therefore he will put extreme pressure on those he fears to lose, who get away from him of their own free will, who strive towards Me in order to be forever united with Me. He will spare no means to influence these souls; he will cause confusion wherever possible. He will always be present where My Own congregate, he will try to enter their thoughts in order to transfer his will onto them, even though he realizes that he has lost control over these souls.

Nevertheless, he opposes Me as an enemy, for his immense ambition deludes him into believing that his power cannot be broken. He indeed recognizes love as the weapon that will injure him and therefore he takes flight where it confronts him and stirs up unkindness at the first opportunity. He feels his power waning and yet will not let himself be conquered. For this reason his activity is usually instantly recognizable, because his method is always such that it will cause enmity between people who like each other, so that confusion arises where clarity used to be; and the fault is always due to people themselves that their minor unkindness lends Satan a finger and he tries to take the whole hand, that is, he spurs people into ever greater heartlessness. He has great power but only where it is granted to him, because you humans do not use the weapon against him which will render him powerless, because you do not practice love sufficiently, because your selfish love is still predominant, which offers him a welcome opportunity. You do not recognize him when he crosses your path, you are short-sighted and you consider him your friend and trust him. He is not your friend as long as he is still
My adversary, and he remains My adversary as long as he is without love. He has to be feared as long as you are without love yourselves, for in that case you belong to him and are still very distant from Me. But if your spark of love has been kindled in you then you will loosen the bond yourselves, then you will change your Lord, you will unite with Me and then he will have lost all power over you.

Therefore you, who became My Own due to your will which strives towards Me and rejects him, need not fear him. Then he cannot harm you anymore, yet you can still help him by gathering glowing embers onto his head, by extending your love even to those who are hostile to you, by responding to evil with love, because then he will have to recognize that you have deified yourselves, that you stand above him in brightest light and immeasurable strength. For when a being surpasses him he will feel its power and he will also set it mentally free, i.e. it will no longer be pressured by him, because in unity with Me it is unattainable for him. All people are able to travel the path to the Father’s heart, and the restraints which keep them bound can be loosened by all people with love, which is the means of release and unification at the same time, which turns you into My children, who will eternally experience the Father’s reciprocated love and therefore be eternally happy.”

**Satan Challenges God**

Ref: MV Vol. 1:507

Jesus is speaking: “Satan has challenged the Eternal Father for centuries. Elated with his first victory over man, Satan said to God: “Your creatures will be mine for ever. Nothing, not even punishment, not even the Law You want to give them, will enable them to earn Heaven, and that Abode of Yours, from which You expelled me, me, the only intelligent being in Your creation, will remain empty, useless and sad, like all useless things.’ And the Eternal Father replied to the Cursed One: ‘You will be able to do that as long as your poison is the only thing to rule over man. But I will send My Word and His word will counteract your poison, it will restore hearts to health, curing them of the madness with which you made them wicked, and they will come back to Me. Like lost sheep that find the shepherd, they will come back to My Fold and Heaven will be filled with souls. I made it for them. And angels and you will be grinding your horrible teeth, out of powerless fury, down there in your horrid kingdom, a cursed prisoner, and the stone of God will be turned over on you and sealed by darkness and hatred will be with you and with your followers, while Mine will enjoy light and love, songs and beatitude and infinite, eternal, sublime freedom.’ And Mammon with a burst of sneering laughter swore: ‘And upon my Gahanna I swear that I will come when it is time. I will always be present wherever Your evangelized people are and we shall see whether I or You is the winner.’

Satan, of course, lays snares for you, to sift you. And I also circumvent you to sift you. The contestants are two: I and he. You are in the middle. The duel of Love and Hatred, of Wisdom and Ignorance, of Good and Evil is over you and around you. I am sufficient to ward off any wicked blow against you. I come between the satanic weapon and you and I am willing to be wounded in your stead, because I love you. But you must ward off internal blows, with your will, running towards Me, following My way which is Truth and Life. Who is not suitable to become a disciple of Christ, will be like light chaff, that will be blown away by the wind of the world. Who is Christ’s enemy is pernicious seed that will grow in the satanic kingdom.”
Revelation 12:7-12: The Test of Angels

Then war broke out in Heaven; Michael and his angels battled against the dragon. The dragon and its angels fought back, but they did not prevail and there was no longer any place for them in heaven. The huge dragon, the ancient serpent, who is called the Devil and Satan, who deceived the whole world, was thrown down to earth, and its angels were thrown down with it.

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: “Now have salvation and power come, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Anointed: For the accuser of our brothers is cast out, who accuses them before our God day and night. They conquered him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony; love for life did not deter them from death. Therefore, rejoice you heavens, and you who dwell in them. But woe to you, earth and sea, for the Devil has come down to you in great fury, for he knows he has but a short time.”

To better understand this rebellion and its severity we will hear from an Angel, not just an Angel, but a Guardian Angel. His name is Azariah who is the guardian Angel of the seer Maria Valtorta who will provide us with a first hand account of that exact moment, because Azariah was there to experience it:

The Battle of Angels in Heaven

“The Virgin Mary writings of Maria Valtorta” By FR. Gabriel M. Roschini, O.S.M.:82-85

Azariah, the guardian angel of Maria Valtorta is speaking: “Besides being present when all things were created, the Virgin Mary was present also when Angels (pure spirits-beings of light) and humans (made up of matter and spirit) were tested.

Once He had created Angels and humans to be the subjects of the Queen of the Universe, God adorned them with grace. He bestowed on them the high honor of being his children who participate in his divine nature. God then placed them in delightful paradise: the Angels in the Angels’ Paradise also called ‘Heaven;” and the first two humans in the ‘Garden of Eden.’ Angels and humans were created to live in love and friendship with God. If they overcame their test and gave God ‘the love He demands and deserves’ they would be admitted to the reward of heavenly glory, overflowing with perfect happiness. The Angels’ test consisted of the proposition which God made to them to adore the divine Word. This implied accepting the revelation that the Eternal Thought would eventually take flesh and become a human being. The test for the first two human beings was to accept the divine word and to abide by it, abstaining from eating the fruit of the forbidden tree.

A certain number of Angels and the first two human beings (our first parents) failed their test. They did not submit to God’s Word, thus falling from His grace.

A host of Angels with Lucifer at their head, driven by pride, did not welcome God’s Word, refusing to worship Him. The Angels’ paradise was thus turned upside down, and God drove them out of Heaven. And the Angel said ‘Woe to the inhabitants of the Earth!’

When Lucifer’s sin upset the order of the Angels’ Paradise and dragged the less faithful spirits into disorder, we were all greatly horrified. [Azariah the Angel speaking to the Seer.] We felt as though something had been torn apart and destroyed without hope of being fixed. That was truly the case. Perfect charity, which until then was the only
thing that existed in [the Angels’] Paradise, was now destroyed. It had toppled over into an abyss reeking with the stench of Hell.

The absolute charity of Angels had been destroyed and hatred was born. We were astounded, as one can be in Heaven [that is, in the Angels’ Paradise]. We [Azariah] remained faithful to the Lord, and we cried on account of God’s grief and wrath. We wept because of the fragility of spirits, and because peace and order had been violated in [the Angels’] Paradise. We no longer felt certain that we were impeccable, even though we were pure spirits by nature. Lucifer and his peers have proven to us [by their example] that even Angels could sin and turn into demons. We realized that pride could develop in us: it was latent. We feared that no one, except God, could resist pride, since Lucifer had yielded to it. We quivered because of those obscure forces. Until then, we had not thought that they could invade us. We did not even know that they existed, and now their harsh reality was revealed to us. We felt disheartened. We asked one another, the spacklings of lights: ‘Is it useless to be pure as we are? Who will ever be able to give God the love He demands and deserves, even we are liable to sin?’

At this point, we turned our attention from the abyss of desolation to the Divinity, so as to behold His splendor. We were filled with awe such as we had never experienced before. We then contemplated the second revelation of Eternal Thought. [It was Mary, who would worship God’s Incarnate Word and become His handmaid]. When the proud angels became aware of the first revelation [the Incarnation of the Divine Word], they refused to worship Him, thus causing disorder to appear. At this we were troubled, but when we became aware of the second revelation [Mary], the worshiper and handmaid of the Divine Incarnate Word, we were once again filled with peace.

We saw Mary in God’s eternal Thought. Seeing Her and possessing that wisdom which is comfort, security and peace, was one and the same thing. We greeted our future Queen with the song of our light. We contemplated Her freely received perfections [Her unique privileges], as well as Her voluntary perfections [Her exceptional merits, etc]. What a beautiful instant that was! To comfort His Angels, the Eternal One showed them the precious stone of His Love and Power. We saw that She would be filled with such humility that, by itself, it could make up for all the pride of creatures [whether angels or humans].

She taught us right then and there not to turn the gifts we had received into instruments that would ruin us. It was not Her bodily form that spoke to us, but Her spiritual reality, speaking wordlessly. Contemplating Her in God’s thought for a moment preserved us from every proud thought, because She was most Humble. [Thus Mary was a means of salvation even for the Angels, since, by Her, they were preserved of every sin of pride and were strengthened in their charity.] For centuries upon centuries, we live in the sweetness of that dazzling revelation. For centuries upon centuries, for eternity, we have been rejoicing and will rejoice, possessing as we do the One we had contemplated in spirit. God’s Joy is our joy, and we remain in Her light so as to be imbued with it and thus give joy and glory to our Creator.

Just as the rebel angels, first two human beings, our first parents, failed their test. Driven by the pride of Satan aroused in them (wanting to be similar to God), they refused to bow to God’s commandment and disobeyed Him. As a result, they fell from His grace and lost their free preternatural gifts (integrity and immortality). Furthermore, they were driven out of the Garden of Eden.
We have seen that God revealed Mary to the good Angels in the Angels’ paradise, after their comrades fell away. He revealed Mary to them as their salvation (which they obtained by worshipping and serving the incarnate Word of God). Similarly, God revealed Mary to our first parents immediately after their falling away in the Garden of Eden. He revealed Her as the principal of their salvation with Christ and through Christ.

When God created the angels he had their future queen in mind. Similarly, when He formed Adam, He thought of Christ, who was to be the new Adam. Also, when He shaped Eve from Adam’s rib, He thought of Mary, since She was to be the new Eve (in virtue of her grace received from Christ).”

The Mysteries behind the fall of the Angels
BD No. 8566 of 07/22/1963 taken from book 90

God the Father is speaking: “Believe Me, I will gladly instruct you when I recognize your longing for truthful knowledge, because I only emanate light and this light permeates the darkness. However, you are still in an area of darkness where light has to be sent to you until you are so filled by it that you can also pass it on again yourselves. But you will be receptive for My ray of light as soon as you desire clarification about regions which are still in darkness to you. Then I can illuminate you, I can once again gradually return you to the state of enlightenment and introduce you to knowledge which will make you happy. And there shall be light in you, you shall know where you came from and your final goal on earth. You can only receive this knowledge from Me Myself, Who created you for My pleasure.” Let’s begin:

The Fall of the Angels – 1
BD No. 8858 of 09/23/1964 taken from book 93

God the Father is speaking: “In the beginning only perfection emanated from Me. Hence you can object when I Am described to you as a Creator who has created ‘unclean’ spirits. I Myself Am the Creator of all beings because there is no strength apart from Me which could create beings. And thus the first spirit of light whom I externalized was enlightened by My strength, and only perfection could emanate from our mutual will of love and strength. And this is precisely what you have to understand, that I cannot act in opposition to My order of eternity, that I could not have externalized imperfect beings from within Myself either, who did not decide to abandon Me voluntarily until after an infinitely long time, who were not influenced by Me in any way to infringe against the divine order but who acted with completely free will. Only in view of that can you understand My eternal plan, that My objective is their deification, and in view of that you can also understand why Lucifer, the light bearer, became My direct opposite.
When you are given an entirely impossible description concerning the creation of beings you will doubt My perfection, and you will also doubt My love for every creation which, ‘according to My will’ was (supposed to be) ‘faulty’ from the start. In that case you cannot comprehend the process which was intrinsic to the rejection of My strength of love, and I have to make the truth available to you, because one error is followed by another. That such an error could have crept into divine revelation is always the result of intellectual thought, which is used by My adversary to cause confusion, which in turn is the reason why I have to reveal Myself again and again, and (in order to) lead you into the truth in all purity.

Eternities had elapsed before the apostasy from Me occurred, thus My love was able to continuously enlighten the beings and they were in a constant state of abundant blissfulness. And even the being which I had created as My first vessel for the emanation of My love had been receiving the flow of My love’s strength for eternities before it detached itself from Me out of free will, which it possessed as a divine living creation. However, if I had created an ‘unclean’ being, I Myself could have been accused of having given life to such a being, but this cannot eternally be the case because I Am perfection Itself. I have no imperfections, I Am pure love, and This does not create anything unclean, but It will do everything to lead whatever has become unclean back to purification.

Yet, how wrongly the act of creation is depicted to you; and what consequences will result from this. And time and again I bring you the absolute truth, because without it you cannot know Me properly, because your idea of Me questions My perfection, and because of this you cannot love this Being, Whose perfection you doubt, either. Because you, too, have emanated from Me in complete perfection, even though you have taken the path through the abyss to once again become what you were in the beginning. You will understand that I cannot explain all spiritual reasons in view of your lack of awareness which you are now experiencing due to the sin of rebellion against Me, nevertheless everything you are told relating to it has to correlate, and you can safely dismiss any blatant contradiction and explain it to yourselves by the fact that human intelligence, which can be influenced by the adversary, played a part in it.

Only My plan of deifying My created beings has caused Me not to oppose the apostasy of the beings, but this occurred in free will from the position of utmost perfection into the deepest abyss. God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend. This does not refute the fact that they had been created in absolute perfection just like their lord who, as the light bearer, was the first to fall away. However, I had not created him in a manner that he had to do so but free will was the cause of the fall, just as free will has to seek to ascend again in order to become what it was in the beginning.”

The Fall of the Angels - 2
BD No. 8859 of 09/24/1964 taken from book 93
(Continuation of no 8858)

God the Father is speaking: “When your belief in My perfection is taken from you, when you doubt it, then you are subject to a misguided doctrine which can entirely destroy your faith, because you then have no guarantee that I Am telling you the absolute truth, which can only be given to you by a supremely perfect Being. And in that case your former will would not have been quite so grave, because if you had been ‘created imperfectly’ you could also find a reason therein for having fallen, and such misguided teaching has to be most decisively rebutted. You must know that you were fully enlightened at the time of your fall, that you were not surrounded by the least
amount of twilight or darkness at the moment of your apostasy from Me and that you, like Myself, had been supremely perfect. i.e. beings of light, whose fall would simply have been incomprehensible if you had not been in possession of free will as the sign of your divinity.

The fact that the first created original spirit was endowed with the same abundance of light and need not have fallen, that he voluntarily changed himself into the opposite, was not My will, it was not My doing, it was entirely the result of his free will which, nevertheless, could not dispute My perfection. Neither had it been determined since eternity that the first created spirit had to fall, although I had known since eternity how he was going to direct his will. But if his fall had been planned, as you erroneously assume, he would not have had free will, and I would not be a perfect Being if I had transmitted My will onto him.

Surely this has to make sense to those of you who question My perfection, who allow yourselves to be influenced by descriptions offered to you by a human lack of common sense in order to undermine Me and the pure truth. I cannot counter the errors often enough which slip into My Word time and again, although I protect My messengers who receive it directly from Me. But as soon as the desire for pure truth was not predominant My adversary was also able to interfere and cause confusion by first questioning My perfection, and thus misguided teachings arose which I constantly have to correct if I want people to receive the truth. This is extremely important before the end because My Being should be accurately described to enable the emergence of love which I expect of My living creations, and this love can only be given to a supremely perfect Being, Which in Itself does not have the least imperfection. Only I alone know that and why My first created spirit has fallen, but it has been explained to you as far as you are able to understand it. But if you associate this with My will, Which wants everyone to achieve utmost bliss, then it is a most blatantly misguided doctrine, which could only have been fashioned by an unenlightened spirit, a purely intellectual thought process. Because My will is good, it will never initiate something contrary to this, it can only ever express itself in accordance with My love, thus it could not have determined the fall of the first being itself, while at the same time allowing every being its free will, irrespective of how it is used.

For I have known thereof since eternity and thus have also been able to establish My plan of salvation accordingly, because I foresaw with what hatred he is opposing Me, he has now become My direct opposite who, however, nevertheless contributes towards helping Me redeem vast numbers of My beings, albeit involuntarily. Because one thing I could not do: I could not create children for Myself, because the free will of the being itself has to become active. And that has been My intention from the start, but it did not necessitate My first being’s fall into the abyss because, truly, I still have many options to achieve the goal I have set Myself. And thus I Myself would not have wanted something which was (would be) a sin against Myself for which I then would (have) let the beings walk an eternally long path in agony in order to become what they were in the beginning. Such a description of My fundamental essence, Which could only create and plan with supreme perfection, is wrong and will have to be denounced time and again as wrong, because from within My power I have created everything in existence with deepest love, with superlative wisdom. And all of this proves My perfection to you, because I do not bring something into being without meaning and reason and thus also want to be recognized and loved as supremely perfect.”
The Judgment of the Soul before God

Ref: MV Mary Magdalene: 218

Jesus is speaking to Lazarus: “Ah! The particular Judgment, I know. I believe. The soul presents itself to God, and God judges it.”

“It is so. And the judgment of God is just and inviolable. And it has infinite value. If the soul is judged mortally guilty, it becomes a damned soul. If it is lightly guilty, it is sent to Purgatory. If it is just, it goes to the peace of Limbo awaiting Me to open the gates of Heaven. So I called your soul back after it had been judged by God. If you had been damned, I could not have called you back to life, because by doing so, I would have cancelled My Father’s judgment. For damned souls, no further changes are possible. They are judged forever.

So you belonged to the number of those who were not damned. So you either belonged to the class of the blessed souls, or to the class of those who will be blessed after being purified. But consider this, My dear friend. If the sincere will of repentance that man can have while being still a man, that is, body and soul, is valid as purification, if the symbolical rite of baptism in water that one wants out of spirit of contrition to be cleansed of the foulness contracted in the world and because of one’s flesh has the value of purification for us Hebrews, what value will repentance have, a more real and perfect repentance, a much more perfect repentance of a soul freed from the body, aware of what God is, enlightened on the gravity of its errors, enlightened on the extent of joy that had moved away for hours, for years, for ages: the joy of the peace of Limbo that will soon be the joy of the achieved possessions of God: the double, triple purification of perfect repentance, of perfect love, of the bath in the ardor of the flames lit by the love of God and by the love of spirits, in which and by which the spirits are stripped of all impurity and emerge as beautiful as seraphim, crowned with what does not even crown seraphim: their earthly and ultra-earthly martyrdom against vice and for sake of love? What will it be? Tell Me, My dear friend.”

“Well…I do not know…perfection. Better still…a new creation.”

“There you are; you have said the right word. The soul becomes as if it were created again. It becomes like the soul of an infant. It is new, the past no longer exists. When the original Sin falls, the soul without stain and the shadow of stain, will then be super-created and worthy of Paradise.”

Beings of Light - people’s spiritual guardians

BD 3981 20.02.1947

God the Father is speaking: “The beings which are surrounded by light in the spiritual kingdom are in closest contact with Me and therefore also share the same will, and they have a tremendous amount of strength at their disposal to implement their will. And thus they are effectively the executives of My will, they are My servants, My authorized representatives, whose actions comply with My plan of Salvation since eternity. They take care of countless beings on earth as well as in the beyond. Everything that is alive, thus having a certain degree of maturity, also has to be
cared for such that it achieves its goal, because without help it would never take the right path; it has to be constantly guided, and this guidance and care is the responsibility of all beings who are permeated by light and strength, whose love for Me and for the unredeemed is so profound that they will always do that which complies with My will, to release the imperfect spirit. Countless beings of light are close to Me and tirelessly active, thus countless people on earth are also able to enjoy their care, and every single fate, every event can be directed for the human being in such a way that he can fully mature, as is his destiny.

But even these beings of light will not infringe on the freedom of will, so that, in spite of greatest and utmost loving care, a descent into darkness is not impossible if the being itself resists the will and care of the light beings, thus when it does not acknowledge Me Myself and does not desire strength or light. In that case the care of the spiritual beings of light will also cease until the person turns to Me himself and thereby also gives the beings of light the freedom to influence him.

But no human being on earth needs to do without the light beings' help and love, no human being will be poorly considered or neglected by Me, but every person's fate corresponds to his own will and this determines the amount of help and strength for his salvation. And since the beings of light are the executives of My will their guidance and care is the same as Mine. Consequently, one can only ever speak of My work and My help, because the beings of light belong to Me as part of Myself, even though they experience the happiness of My permeating them with strength and light and the bliss of constant activity for Me as individual beings. This activity, however, consists purely of executing what My love and wisdom deems to be good and beneficial for the individual souls. Thus the entire universe can be full of souls in need of help, not one soul will have to do without divine care because the kingdom of light is infinite and the bliss of the souls therein consists of accepting tasks from Me and surpassing each other in fulfilling them.

The soul that has become My Own through shaping itself into love is also in direct contact with Me, and My will, My strength and My wisdom permeate this loving being so that it will not part from Me again for all eternity. It then lovingly devotes itself to the souls which cannot share this bliss due to their imperfection, and which the being of light feels impelled to release. It feels the same love for the unredeemed as I Myself, from Whose strength of love everything emerged. Thus it will also look after My living creations, take care of them and direct their state of affairs, so that every human being on earth has a spiritual guardian who, in turn, being completely connected to Me, cannot want and think other than I Myself. I stand above everything surrounded by a host of blissful spirits, but even the smallest and most insignificant being enjoys My care, My protection, and will not be forgotten by Me, even if this is incomprehensible to people because their knowledge and strength is limited and they assume that I have the same restrictions too, as long as they are imperfect themselves and have no idea about the power and light of the Perfect.”

**Guardian Spirit - Spiritual Guides**

BD No. 6636 of 09/05/1956 taken from book 71

Jesus is speaking: “A loyal spiritual guide accompanies you throughout your earthly life wherever you might go. You are never without spiritual protection, and if this guide, as well as the beings of light surrounding you, were permitted to work
unrestrictedly, your full maturing on this earth would be guaranteed, since their love for you leads them to do whatever will help you to ascend. But they are not allowed to affect you unreservedly because your will itself is imposing restrictions on them. They, too, are only able to influence you according to this will, and you humans often prevent the activity of the beings which guide you due to your opposing will. Nevertheless, your guides will not abandon you and will keep trying to exert their influence until you die. Hence you are constantly surrounded by guardian spirits, and you can always turn to them for help, yet they are only permitted to help if you have established the bond with Me first, for it is the law that the beings of light only ever implement My will, that they only ever act in accordance with My will.

Thus a God-loving-person can live a truly carefree earthly life, because he will always be granted much loving support if he, after heartfelt prayer to Me, hands himself over to My helpers and also asks for their protection and support. These guardian spirits and guides are permeated by light and strength; consequently it is easily possible for them to shape your earthly existence such that it will be bearable for you. They are able to resolve adversities which confront you on an earthly level or which arise through the influence of evil forces.

These spiritual guardians are instructed by Me to take care of you as soon as you have established your bond with Me through your will, through your attitude, through labors of love and through prayer. Thus a person devoted to Me can always rest assured that he is protected by Me directly, and My heavenly servants merely implement My will. And My will always has your well-being at heart, since you have already given yourselves to Me and desire My protection.

And thus you know that you are never alone, regardless of how lonely or abandoned by the world you believe yourselves to be. You are surrounded by a host of helpful spiritual beings which, instructed by your spiritual guardian, take care of you and protect you from physical and spiritual harm.

But it would be wrong if you only made contact with these beings due to a certain sense of superstition, if you saw in them anything else but My servants who are only allowed to help you once you have established the connection with Me. For as soon as you call upon spiritual beings for help without faith in Me and without love for Me you will call upon adverse forces and place yourselves under their control. For these adverse forces, too, are in your vicinity and only waiting for the opportunity to take possession of you, and this opportunity always presents itself when I Am excluded from your thoughts, when you live and act without Me on this earth. In that case even your spiritual guide will be unable to take precedence, since your will does not allow for it.

And then the adverse forces will be especially busy, which you are just as able to feel around you as the good beings which work on My behalf. But you will invariably fall prey to these evil forces since they are very powerful and they will use this power because your will is giving them the right to do so. However, you need never fear these evil forces if your will only ever applies to Me and you commend yourselves to My protection. In that case I have numerous helpers at My side wanting to be of service to you. And then the path of your earthly life will always be under the protection of your spiritual guide, whom I placed by your side Myself from the time of your birth until your death.”
The Role of Guardian Angels

St. Azariah says: “People think the mission of Guardian Angel ceases with the death of the one being protected. It is not always that way. It ceases, as is logical, at the death of impenitent sinners, and with supreme pain on the part of the guardian angel of whoever did not repent. It is transfigured into festive, eternal glory at the death of a saint who goes from earth to Paradise with no stopover for purgation. But he continues as before, as a protection that intercedes and loves the one entrusted to it, in the case of those going from earth to Purgatory to expiate and purify themselves. Then we, the guardian angels, pray for you with charity before the throne of God and, along with our loving prayers, present the entreaties offered for you on each by relatives and friends.

Oh, I cannot say everything about how intense, active, and sweet the bond is which goes on linking us to you in Purgatory! Like mothers watching for the return of health in a child who was sick and is convalescing, like wives counting the days separating them from being reunited with her husband who has been held prisoner, so are we. Not even for an instant do we cease to observe divine, loving Justice and your souls that are cleansed amidst the fires of love. And we rejoice on seeing that love is increasingly assuaged in regards to you and you are increasingly worthy of its Kingdom. And when the Light orders us, ‘Go and pull him out to bring him here,’ we rushed forward quicker than lightning bolts to convey an instant of Paradise, which is faith and hope and comfort for those still remaining to expiate, there in Purgatory, and we clasp the beloved souls we worked and suffered for to ourselves and go back up with them, teaching them the Hosanna of Paradise.

The two sweetest moments and mission of the Guardian Angels are when Charity tells us, ‘Descend,’ for another man had been begotten and you must protect him like a gem which belongs to Me, and when we can ascend with you to Heaven. But the former is less than the latter. The other instants of joy are your victories over the world, the flesh, and the devil. But just as we tremble over your fragility from the moment you are taken under protection, so we always throb after every victory of yours, for the Enemy of Goodness is vigilant in trying to demolish what the spirit builds. Joyful, therefore, perfect in its joy, is the instant at which we enter Heaven with you. For nothing any longer can destroy what is now finished.

And now, soul of mine, I shall respond to an interior question of yours as to whether God is happy that there is another Guardian in your house. O you that never ask yourselves questions, but keep your spirit open, and your desire sometimes writes pressing queries thereupon, without your realizing, without your will, held back from asking by that worthy respect too few show towards the Supernatural bending down over you – you must know that it is sweet to reply to those who are like you and bring you comfort, soul dear to God and tormented by men.

Yes, God is happy. Happy because in your house there is an angel content to watch over a newly-created soul, a gem of God, and happy because Jesus is He who loved little children; And I shall say the rest to your soul, and let it be kept between the two of us, like a secret so beautiful that it is useless to reveal it to the world, which is unable to comprehend the joys of God and of God’s souls.
Another action by the Guardian Angel is to be constantly and wonderfully active in relation to God - whose orders he listens to and to whom he offers the good actions of the person being protected, presenting in supporting his entreaties and interceding in his afflictions - and in relation to the human being, for whom he acts as a teacher guiding along the straight path, without pause, through inspirations, lights, and attraction towards God.

Oh, our fires, which are the fires of Charity, which created us and assails us with its burning, channeled by us upon those protected, just as the sun does upon the earth enclosing a seed, to warm it and make it sprout, and then on the stem, to fortify it and make it become a stalk and a robust plant. With our fires we console, warm, strengthen, enlighten, teach, and attract you to the Lord. If, then, the stubborn ice in the soul and its obstinate hardness do not allow it to be penetrated and overcome by us and the charitable harmony of our teaching is not received, but rather fled from, to follow the deafening hellish music which stuns and maddens, we are not to blame. We are pained by the failure of our loving action upon the soul we love, with all our capacities, after God.

We are, then, always alongside those we protect, whether they are saints or sinners. From the infusion of the soul into the flesh to the separation of the soul from the flesh, we are close to the human creature whom the Most High Lord has entrusted to us. And this thought - that every man has an angel at his side - ought to help you to love your neighbors, endure them, and receive them with love and respect, if not for their own sake, for the sake of the invisible Azariah, who is with them and, as an angel, always deserves respect and love.

If you consider that over every one of your actions towards your neighbors, in addition to the all present Eye of God, there presides and observe two angelic spirits, who rejoice or suffer over what you do, how much better you would always be to your neighbor! Consider: you welcome and honor persons or you mortify them; you help them or reject them; you sin against them or pull them out of sin; you are instructed by them and instructed; you benefit them or are benefited by them. And two angels, yours and theirs, are present and see not only your manifestations, but the truth of your actions, that is, if you perform them with true love or pretended love, or with resentment or calculation, and so on.

Come on, a little effort, an ongoing reflection at all times - this one: to see, with the eyes of faith, the guardian angel who is at the side of every man and always act as if every action by you were being done to the angel of God, who will bear witness before God. He, the guardian angel of every man, I assure you, will say to the Lord, in union with yours, ‘Most High, he was always faithful to charity, loving You in man, loving the supernatural world in creatures, and because of this spiritual love he endured offensives, forgave, and was merciful towards every man, in imitation of your beloved Son, whose human eyes, though gazing at his enemies, saw the angels - their afflicted angels - at their side, with the help of his most holy spirit, and honored them, helping them in the attempt to convert men, to glorify You, Most High, with them, by saving as many creatures as possible from Evil.’

I want you - that rejoice because the Lord, on coming here, finds an additional angel to worship Him - in the same way as you believe in the presence of the angel of the child in the womb, to believe in my words and act towards all who come to you or with whom you have contacts of any kind as I told you to, thinking of their guardian angels to overcome weariness and anger, loving every creature with justice to do something pleasing to God and serving to honor the guardian angel.
Soul of mine, meditate on the way the Lord honors you and the way we angels honor you and give you a chance to help us - Him, the Divine One, and us, his spiritual ministers - with appropriate words to get your fellows back on the right track and, above all, with an example of conduct which is unvarying in Goodness. Unvarying, in the sense of not bending to indulgence and compromise so as not to lose human friendship, eager only not to lose that of God and his angels. It will sometimes be painful to have to show severity so that God’s glory and desires will not be trampled upon by man. It will perhaps provoke gesture of discourtesy and coldness. Don’t worry. Help your neighbor’s angel and you will find him, too, in Heaven.”

St Rafael the Archangel Speaks
MV N 1945-1950:291

Maria Valtorta is speaking: “I had to interrupt my thanksgiving for Holy Communion, received in honor of St Raphael, to whom I had turned, saying, ‘O good companion, tell me what I should do to proceed on the right way at all times,’ because he said to me:

‘Always walk on the banks of the great river of Grace. In that way you will always be able to obtain Grace, under the sun of Charity, on the green fields of Hope, tirelessly picking the white flowers of Faith to make yourself immortal crowns with them.

The sun of Charity will be light and warmth for you in order to comprehend God and love your brothers and sisters more and more. The flowering fields of Hope will attenuate bumps against the rough stones of selfishness and rationalism which brings you so much suffering, and you will be able to endure along the way as far as your goal, which is God. The white flowers of Faith will perfume your heart, displeased by so many things, cover your wounds, and above all, tell you that God is the Father and Love and that everything He promises is true and everything He has promised will be fulfilled. If they become beaded with tears and sprinkled with blood, they will be even more precious in the eyes of God. And when the Enemy, in the form of a fish or of seduction of every kind seeks to devour or seduce you, call me and pray. It is so sweet to come to the little Tobits! And it is so sweet for God to bend over those calling upon Him.

I have taught you the same way by which I led Tobit: a peaceful way because the eyes of God are upon it. A safe way, though not devoid of snares, because it is watched over by defenders sent by God: a triumphal way because it proceeds among virtues overseen by the Eternal Sun and flanked by Grace, which is all. I am returning to Him who sent me and leaves you the peace coming from Heaven.’”

Angels and their Missions

• Luke 15:10
"In just the same way, I tell you, there will be rejoicing among the angels of God over one sinner who repents."

• Hebrews 1:13, 14
But to which of the angels has he ever said: “Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies your footstool?” Are they not all ministering spirits sent to serve, for the sake of those who are to inherit salvation?

• Colossians 1:16
For in him were created all things in heaven and on earth, the
visible and the invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers; all things were created through him and for him.

- **Isaiah 6:1-3**
  In the year King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a high and lofty throne, with the train of his garments filling the temple. Seraphim were stationed above; each of them had six wings: with two they veiled their faces, with two they veiled their feet, and with two they hovered aloft. Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of hosts!

- **1 Peter 1:12**
  It was revealed to them that they were serving not themselves but you with regard to the things that have now been announced to you by those who preached the good news to you [through] the Holy Spirit from heaven, things into which angels longed to look.

- **Job 38:7**
  While the morning stars sang in chorus and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

- **Job 1:6**
  One day, when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, Satan also came among them. And the Lord said to Satan, “Whence do you come?” Then Satan answered the Lord and said, “From roaming the earth and patrolling it.”

- **Ephesians 3:9, 10**
  And to bring to light [for all] what is the plan of the mystery hidden from ages past in God who created all things, so that the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known through the church to the principalities and authorities in the heavens.

- **Luke 20:36**
  They can no longer die, for they are like angels; and they are the children of God because they are the ones who will rise.

- **Psalm 103:20, 21**
  Bless the LORD, all you angels, mighty in strength and attentive, obedient to every command. Bless the Lord, all you host, ministers who do God’s will.

- **Matthew 25:41**
  Then He will also say to those on His left, 'Depart from Me, you accursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels;

- **Luke 22:43**
  And to strengthen him an angel from heaven appeared to him.

- **Nehemiah 9:6**
  Then Ezra said, “It is you, O Lord, you are the only one; you made the heaven the highest heavens and all their host, the earth and all that is upon it, the seas and all that is in them. To all of them you gave life, and the heavenly host bow down before you.

- **Luke 1:10-13**
  Then, when the whole assembly of the people was praying, outside at the hour of the incense offering, the angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right of the altar of incense. Zechariah was troubled by what he saw, and fear came upon him. But the angel said to him, “Do not be afraid, Zechariah, because your prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear a son, and you shall name him John.”

- **Daniel 7:9, 10**
  Thrones were set up and the Ancient One took his throne. His clothing was snow bright, and the hair on his head as white as wool; His throne was flames of fire, with wheel of burning fire. A surging stream of fire flowed out from where he sat; Thousands and thousands were ministering to him, and myriads upon myriads attending him.
• **Daniel 9:21**
I was still occupied with this prayer, when Gabriel, the one whom I had seen before in vision, came to me in rapid flight at the time of the evening sacrifice. He instructed me in these words: “Daniel, I have now come to give you understanding.

• **Ephesians 1:18-21**
May the eyes of your [hearts] be enlightened, that you may know what is the hope that belongs to his call, what are the riches of glory in his inheritance among the holy ones, and what is the surpassing greatness of his power for us who believe, in accord with the exercise of his great might, which he worked in Christ, raising him from the dead and seating him at his right hand in the heavens, far above every principality, authority, power, and dominion, and every name that is named not only in this age but in the one to come.

• **Luke 16:22**
When the poor man died, he was carried away by angels to the bosom of Abraham. The rich man also died and was buried, and from the netherworld, where he was in torment, he raised his eyes and saw Abraham far off with Lazarus at his side.

• **1 Corinthians 4:9**
For as I see it, God has exhibited us apostles as the last of all, like people sentenced to death, to the world, to angels and human beings alike.

• **Matthew 4:10, 11**
At this, Jesus said to him, “Get away, Satan! It is written: ‘The Lord, your God, shall you worship and him alone shall you serve,’” Then the devil left him and, behold, angels came and ministered to him.

• **Exodus 3:2**
There an angel of the Lord appeared to him in fire flaming out of a bush. As he looked on, he was surprised to see that the bush, though on fire, was not consumed.

• **Psalm 34:7, 8**
In my misfortune I called, the Lord heard and saved me from all distress. The angel of the Lord, who encamps with them, delivers all who fear God.

• **Revelation 5:11**
I looked again and heard the voice of many angels who surrounded the throne and the living creatures and elders. They were countless in number, and they cried out in a loud voice: “Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power and riches, wisdom and strength, honor and glory and blessing.”

• **Matthew 18:10**
See that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that their angels in heaven always look upon the face of my heavenly Father.

• **Job 38:4-7**
Where were you when I founded the earth? Tell me, if you have understanding. Who determined its size; do you know? Who stretched out the measuring line for it? Into what were its pedestals sunk, and who laid the cornerstone, while the morning stars sang in chorus and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

• **Matthew 24:36**
"But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.
• 2 Kings 19:35
That night the angel of the Lord went forth and struck down one hundred and eighty-five thousand men in the Assyrian camp. Early the next morning, there they were, all the corpses of the dead. So Sennacherib, the king of Assyria, broke camp, and went back home to Nineveh.

• Luke 15:7
I tell you, in the same way there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous people who have no need of repentance.

• Colossians 2:18
Let no one, then. Pass judgment on you in matters of food and drink or with regard to a festival or new moon or Sabbath. These are shadows of things to come; the reality belongs to Christ. Let no one disqualify you, delighting in self-abasement and worship of angels, taking his stand on visions...

• Hebrews 13:2
Let mutual love continue. Do not neglect hospitality, for through it some have unknowingly entertained angels.

• Matthew 26:53
Do you think that I cannot call upon my Father and he will not provide me at this moment with more than twelve legions of angels?

• Acts 5:19
But during the night, the angel of the Lord opened the doors of the prison, led them out, and said, “Go and take your place in the temple area, and tell the people everything about this life.”

• James 2: 19
You believe that God is one. You do well. Even the demons believe that and tremble. Do you want proof, you ignoramus, that faith without works is useless? Was not Abraham our father justified by works when he offered his son Isaac upon the altar? You see that faith was active along with his works, and faith was completed by the works.

• Revelations 4:8
The four living creatures, each of them with six wings, were covered with eyes inside and out. Day and night they do not stop exclaiming: Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God almighty, who was, and who is, and who is to come.”

• Hebrews 1:6
And again, when he leads the first-born into the world, he says: Let all the angels of God worship him.” Of the angels he says: “He makes his angels winds and his ministers a fiery flame”

• Luke 12:8, 9
I tell you, everyone who acknowledges me before others the Son of Man will acknowledge before the angels of God. But whoever denies me before others will be denied before the angels of God.

• Judges 2:1
An angel of the Lord went up from Gilgal to Bochim and said, “It was I who led you into the land which I promised on oath to your fathers. I said that I would never break my covenant with you, but that you were not to make a pact with the inhabitants of this land, and you were to pull down their altars.”
• Zechariah 1:9
Then I asked, “What are these, my lord?”; and the angel who spoke with me answered me, “I will show you what these are.” The man who was standing among the myrtle tree spoke up and said, “These are they whom the Lord has sent to patrol the earth.”

• Matthew 28:2
And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, approached, rolled back the stone, and sat upon it. His appearance was like lightning and his clothing was white as snow.

• Hebrews 12:22
Moses said, “I am terrified and trembling.” No, you have approached Mount Zion and the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and countless angels in festal gathering, and the assembly of the firstborn enrolled in heaven, and God the judge of all, and the spirits of the just made perfect, and Jesus, the mediator of a new covenant, and the sprinkled blood that speaks more eloquently than that of Abel.

• Psalm 148:1, 2
Praise the Lord from the heavens; give praise in the heights. Praise him, all you angels; give praise, all you host.

• Matthew 22:30
Jesus said to them in reply, “You are misled because you do not know the scriptures or the power of God. At the resurrection they neither marry nor give in marriage but are like the angels in heaven.

• Daniel 12:1
At that time there shall arise Michael, the great prince, guardian of you people; it shall be a time unsurpassed in distress since nations began until that time. At that time your people shall escape, everyone who is found written in the book of life.

• Luke 2:13
And suddenly there was a multitude of the heaven host with the angels, praising God and saying: “Glory to God in the highest and on earth peace to those on whom his favor rests.

**Christ with His Angels**

Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

331 Christ is the center of the angelic world. They are his angels: When the Son of man comes in His glory and all the angels with him. They belong to him because they were created *through* and *for* Him: for in Him all things were created in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or authorities - all things were created through Him and for Him. They belong to Him still more because He has made them messengers of His saving plan: Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth to serve, for the sake of those who are to obtain salvation?”
Angels have been present since creation and throughout the history of salvation, announcing this salvation from afar or near and serving the accomplishment of the divine plan: they closed the earthly paradise; protected Lot; saved Hagar and her child; stayed Abraham’s hand; communicated the law by their ministry; led the People of God; announced births callings; and assisted the prophets, just to cite a few examples. Finally, the angel Gabriel announced the birth of the Precursor and that of Jesus himself.

From the Incarnation to the Ascension, the life of the Word incarnate is surrounded by the adoration and service of angels. When God “brings the firstborn into the world, he says: ‘Let all God’s angels worship him.’” Their song of praise at the birth of Christ has not ceased resounding in the Church’s praise: “Glory to God in the Highest!” They protect Jesus in his infancy, serve him in the desert, and strengthen him in his agony in the garden, when he could have been saved by him in his agony in the garden, when he could have been saved by them from the hands of his enemies as Israel had been. Again, it is the angels who “evangelize” by proclaiming the Good News of Christ’s Incarnation and Resurrection. They will be present at Christ’s return, which they will announce, to serve at his judgment.

“Let all God’s angels worship him”
Chapter 3: Creation

God the Father is speaking: “Anyone who lives a life of love also wants to escape the darkness, and the fire of love emanates the light of wisdom, everyone who is lovingly active will become knowledgeable, for I Am Love Myself, and a person who consciously allows for it will be educated by Me through the spirit. And the more illuminating knowledge I can bestow upon you, the more I delight in the spiritual state of people who have escaped the night and thereby also the prince of darkness, who would like to keep all people in spiritual darkness so that they will be unable to recognize Me, their God and Creator. But since I Am Love, since you all emerged from My love, I only ever want to make you happy. Yet this necessitates your unity with Me, it necessitates your will to draw close to Me again, and then you will also accept My gifts of grace, you will allow yourselves to be taught by Me and fulfill My will, which I proclaim to you through these instructions. Thus you voluntarily take the path which leads you back to Me, from Whom you once originated, because you already have a light within yourselves which illuminates the right path for you, since due to My instructions you have gained realization and know about the meaning and purpose of your earthly life. And the truth from Me will please you, you will request Me to speak to you if only you believe that I Am addressing you. And this belief will come alive in you through love. Thus you only need to live a life of selfless neighborly love and you will thereby intimately unite with Me, so that I can speak to you and guide you into the truth, as I have promised you.”
Did Creation actually take place in 7-Days?

The Catholic Church teaches the following: 337 – “God himself created the visible world in all its richness, diversity, and order. Scripture presents the work of the Creator symbolically as a succession of six days of divine “work,” concluded by “rest” of the seventh day.” However, some take the 7-days of creation literally for the following reason:

St. Augustine on the Days of Creation

Ref: St. Augustine of Hippo (AD 354–430) famous church father, early theologian and . . . old-earth creationist

“Perhaps we ought not to think of these creatures at the moment they were produced as subject to the processes of nature which we now observe in them, but rather as under the wonderful and unutterable power of the Wisdom of God, which reaches from end to end mightily and governs all graciously. For this power of Divine Wisdom does not reach by stages or arrive by steps. It was just as easy, then, for God to create everything as it is for Wisdom to exercise this mighty power. For through Wisdom all things were made, and the motion we now see in creatures, measured by the lapse of time, as each one fulfills its proper function, comes to creatures from those causal reasons implanted in them, which God scattered as seeds at the moment of creation when He spoke and they were made, He commanded and they were created. Creation, therefore, did not take place slowly in order that a slow development might be implanted in those things that are slow by nature; nor were the ages established at plodding pace at which they now pass. Time brings about the development of these creatures according to the laws of their numbers, but there was no passage of time when they received these laws at creation.

Even then the chronologies of Greek and Egyptian history do not agree; and since the former does not exceed the true number [of the duration of the world] implied in our Sacred Scripture, it may be accepted. Consequently, if this letter of Alexander [the Great] now so well known, is so far from authentic in its chronology, we can trust still less those other [pagan] documents, so full of mythology, which are cited in opposition to the established authority of inspired writings. The fact of the prediction that the whole world would believe and the fact that it has believed should prove that Sacred Scripture has given a true account of the past. Certainly, much that was predicted has been perfectly fulfilled.

I shall not dwell, then on the conjectures of men who “know not what they say” concerning the nature and origin of the human race. There are, for example, those who
hold the opinion that men—like the universe—have always existed. . . . Suppose the following questions are put to these men: If the human race has always existed, how, then do you vindicate the truth of your own history which records the names of inventors and what they invented, the first founders of liberal education and of other arts, the first inhabitants of this or that region and of this or that island? They will answer that at certain intervals of time, most of the land was so devastated by floods and fire that the human race was greatly reduced in size and that from this small number the former population was again restored; and that, thus, at intervals, there was a new discovery and organization of all these things, or, rather a restoration of what had been damaged or destroyed by the great devastations; and that, in any case, men could simply not exist unless they were produced from man. Of course, all this is opinion, not science.

Whoever, then, does not accept the meaning that my limited powers have been able to discover or conjecture but seeks in the enumeration of the days of creation a different meaning, which might be understood not in the prophetic or figurative sense, but literally and more aptly, in interpreting the works of creation, let him search and find a solution with God's help. I myself may possibly discover some other meaning more in harmony with the words of Scripture.

The secret in understanding the mystery of the “7-days of Creation” lies in understanding the real purpose of Creation which can only be revealed by God.

Purpose of Creation
Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church: 293

“Scripture and Tradition never cease to teach and celebrate this fundamental truth. ‘The world was made for the glory of God.’ St Bonaventure explains that God created all things ‘not to increase his glory, but to show it forth and communicate it,’ for God has no other reason for creating than his love and goodness: Creatures came into existence when the key of love opened his hand.” The First Vatican Council explains: ‘This one, true God, of his own goodness and “almighty power,” not for increasing his own beatitude, nor for attaining his perfection, but in order to manifest this perfection through the benefits which he bestows on creatures, with absolute freedom of counsel “and from the beginning of time, made out of nothing both orders of creatures, the spiritual and the corporeal . . .’

THE MYSTERY OF CREATION
Ref: CCC –Catechism of the Catholic Church

God creates by wisdom and love

295 We believe that God created the world according to his wisdom.141 It is not the product of any necessity whatever, nor of blind fate or chance. We believe that it proceeds from God’s free will; he wanted to make his creatures share in his being, wisdom and goodness: "For you created all things and by your will they existed and were created."142 Therefore the Psalmist exclaims: "O LORD, how manifold are your works! In wisdom you have made them all"; and "The LORD is good to all, and his compassion is over all that he has made."143 God creates "out of nothing"

296 We believe that God needs no pre-existent thing or any help in order to create, nor is creation any sort of necessary emanation from the divine substance.144 God creates freely "out of nothing".145 If God had drawn the world from pre-existent matter, what would be so extraordinary in that? A human artisan makes from a given
material whatever he wants, while God shows his power by starting from nothing to make all he wants.146

297 Scripture bears witness to faith in creation "out of nothing" as a truth full of promise and hope. Thus the mother of seven sons encourages them for martyrdom: I do not know how you came into being in my womb. It was not I who gave you life and breath, nor I who set in order the elements within each of you. Therefore the Creator of the world, who shaped the beginning of man and devised the origin of all things, will in his mercy give life and breath back to you again, since you now forget yourselves for the sake of his laws. . . Look at the heaven and the earth and see everything that is in them, and recognize that God did not make them out of things that existed. Thus also mankind comes into being.147

298 Since God could create everything out of nothing, he can also, through the Holy Spirit, give spiritual life to sinners by creating a pure heart in them,148 and bodily life to the dead through the Resurrection. God "gives life to the dead and calls into existence the things that do not exist."149 and since God was able to make light shine in darkness by his Word, he can also give the light of faith to those who do not yet know him.150 God creates an ordered and good world

299 Because God creates through wisdom, his creation is ordered: "You have arranged all things by measure and number and weight."151 The universe, created in and by the eternal Word, the "image of the invisible God", is destined for and addressed to man, himself created in the "image of God" and called to a personal relationship with God.152 Our human understanding, which shares in the light of the divine intellect, can understand what God tells us by means of his creation, though not without great effort and only in a spirit of humility and respect before the Creator and his work.153 Because creation comes forth from God’s goodness, it shares in that goodness - "and God saw that it was good. . . very good"154- for God willed creation as a gift addressed to man, an inheritance destined for and entrusted to him. On many occasions the Church has had to defend the goodness of creation, including that of the physical world.155 God transcends creation and is present to it.

The Process of Creation has taken Eternities

BD No. 8770 of 03/04/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: "The process of creation was not the work of a moment, even though it truly would have been within My power, but then creation would have missed its purpose, since it was intended to ensure a gradual development from the abyss to the pinnacle and therefore continued for an infinitely long time. Hence you humans should understand that the description in the Scriptures, in the Book of the Fathers, only informs you of this act of creation in a pictorial manner, because people who still lack deeper awareness would be unable to understand the true process, and it is only intended to teach them that creation once came forth from My hand, that it was and is the work of My will and My might.

Anyone who wants to delve deeper will also come to a more profound understanding. At first it is only necessary to know of a Power which brought everything into existence the human being can see around himself, as well as the creations he is unable to see. Before the far-reaching correlations can be explained to him he has to know about the original beginning of what
My strength of love emanated as independent beings (angels). *And he has to know about these beings’ apostasy from Me and the immense original sin with which the beings were then burdened. Only then can the emergence of creation and the process of return through creation be explained to him. But anyone with an unenlightened spirit will hold on to the letter and will never clearly understand it since he is not open to instructions by spiritually enlightened people either.*

Every work of creation required an infinitely long time of preliminary development which, however, always related to the spiritual substance which should progress within a work of creation. It had fallen so low that it also needed an endless length of time in order to ascend again within the various kinds of creations, from the most primitive to the most beautifully formed works brought into existence by My will in order to shelter the spiritual substance and enable its path of ascent. *And therefore the creation work Earth, too, was, in the beginning, a mere cluster of utterly immature spirits whose substances gradually condensed to form a mass which could not yet be described as hard matter but had to be understood as basic elements, without form but with tremendous effect of strength, for they contained totally uncontrolled spiritual substances. Yet My wisdom distributed everything in the right measure and used every element for My creative work, so that separate forms arose which had to comply with their destined purpose; and thus began the slow construction of the visible works of creation which continued for an endless time until the earth started to show vegetation and increasingly more mature spiritual substances were able to occupy those creations to travel the path of higher development in this plant world; Then followed the first living beings, creations, which could already perform a certain, albeit very small task, imposed on them by natural law.*

And, again, an infinitely long time of development passed from these minute living beings to the world of animals which included ever larger and stronger forms, in which many spiritual substances had already come together and united in order to keep fulfilling the task of cultivating the earth for the final crowning work of divine creation, for the human being, who had to pass through all those preliminary stages and whose soul now is the composition of all those tiny particles which belonged to a once fallen original spirit and which, in a dissolved state, had to go through all works of creation in order to gradually evolve again in this way.

Consequently, the human being could not have been created at the time of 'creating the world,' just as all works of creation have never been My instant work, precisely because the slow advancement had to proceed first or the whole of the creation work would have been meaningless and without purpose, *for it did not come into being for My sake but for the sake of My fallen living creations and thus was also meant to fulfill the purpose of leading the fallen spirits back to Me again.* And yet, every work of creation was My externalized thought which was always implemented when the spiritual substance had reached a certain degree of maturity and required a new form in order to continue its path of development. And thus different creations arose periodically. The plant world only became necessary when the world of rocks released the spiritual substance which then required a new and lighter form. And likewise small and minute living creations arose after the creation of the plant world. And only I knew when one was necessary for the other, and I also knew how much time the larger living creations, the animals up to the Pre-Adamites, would need to mature their embodied
soul-substances. Hence I also knew when the time had come that the individual tiny particles of the spiritual being had merged again in order to embody itself as 'soul' in the last form. Then I externalized a work of creation again, the human being, whose external shape is so skillfully created that a maturing to final perfection will be possible. And this creation of the human being also occurred an infinitely long time ago, which you humans cannot establish since your concept of time is still limited, but My work of return has already lasted for an eternity. And although eternities had passed before the appearance of the human being, before the earth with all its works of creation was ready for the human being to take possession of it for the purpose of his final maturing, this point in time is also very remote, because time and again periodical immense upheavals and changes occur on earth which make it impossible to calculate the duration of time since the beginning of earth and of the human being.

But this is certain; you humans will only be able to gain a real insight into My eternal plan of Salvation when you have attained the appropriate degree of enlightenment yourselves. For until then you will be intellectually incapable to envision the length of time for which the concept of 'eternities' could be applied. And for as long as your spirit is still unenlightened it has to be explained to you in an illustrative manner. Only an awakened spirit will be able to gain deeper insight, yet ultimate wisdom will only become explicable when it enters the kingdom of light where everything can be revealed because everything will then also be comprehensible.”

The Creation Willed by the Creator

MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135 -141

“There was no autogenesis and there was no evolution, but there was the Creation willed by the Creator. The reason, of which you are so proud, should convince you that the initial thing cannot form itself from nothing, and from a unique and initial thing cannot come everything.

Only God can put chaos in order and populate it with innumerable creatures which form the Creation. And this most powerful Creator did not have limitations in His creating, which was manifold, nor in creating already perfect creatures, each perfect according to the purpose for which it was created. It is foolish to think that God created, wanting to give a Creation of shapeless things and expecting to be glorified by these, when individual creatures and all creatures would have reached, the successive evolutions, the perfection of their nature so that they would be suited for the natural or supernatural end for which they had been created.

And if this truth is certain for the lower creatures, with a natural end and limited in time, it is even more certain for man who was created for a supernatural end and with an immortal destiny of celestial glory. Could one think of a Paradise whose legions of Saints, exalting around the throne of God, be an end product of a long evolution of beasts?

Present man is not the result of an ascending evolution, but the sorrowful result of a descending evolution, as the sin of Adam has forever marred the physical-moral-spiritual perfection of the original man. He so marred it that not even the Passion of Jesus Christ, though restoring the life of Grace to all those baptized, can annul the residues of the sin, the scars of the great wound, that is, of those foments that are the ruin of those who do not love God or who do not love Him much, and is the torment of the just who would want not to have even the most fleeting thought drawn from the voices of the foments and who combat the heroic battle all their life in order to remain faithful to the Lord.
Man is not the result of an evolution, just as Creation is not the product of an autogenesis. In order to have evolution, one always needs to have a first creative fount. And to think to have had the infinite (amount of) species from the autogeny of a single cell is an impossible absurdity.

In order to live, the cell needs a vital ground with elements that allow for and maintain life. If the cell formed itself from nothing, where did it find the elements in order to form, live, and reproduce itself? If it did not exist even when it began to exist, how did it find the vital elements: air, light, heat, and water? What is not yet, cannot create. And how then did the cell find the four elements at its formation? And who gave them to it, which fount had the seed of “life?” And when, supposing that this non-existent (cell) had been able to form itself from nothing, how, from its unique unity and species could there have come from it so many diverse species, as many as there are to be found in the sensible Creation?

Scientists close in on God particle, studies confirm: Published March 07, 2012
Associated Press

Researchers working at the world’s largest atom smasher in Geneva have found tantalizing hints of the tiny, elemental bit of matter that has been labeled “the brick that built the universe” and “the god particle” -- but stopped short of announcing the discovery of the tiny particle.

God the Father is speaking: “And to think to have had the infinite (amount of) species from the autogeny of a single cell is an impossible absurdity.”
Ref: MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135 -141

Stars and planets, clouds of earth, rocks, minerals, the varied and innumerable species of the plant kingdom, the even more diverse and numerous species and families of the animal kingdom, from vertebrates to invertebrates, from mammals to the oviparous (producing eggs that develop and hatch outside the maternal body), from the quadruped (four-footed) to the quadrumans (two feet), from amphibians and reptiles to fish, from ferocious carnivores to docile o’vines, from those which are armed and covered by hard offensive and defensive armors to insects that even the slightest thing is enough to destroy, to the gigantic inhabitants of the virgin forests, to the assaults to which none resist but those of their own equal colossal (counterparts), to all the classes
of anthropoids up to the protozoa and bacillus; all having come from a single cell? Everything from a spontaneous generation! If this were the case, the cell would be bigger than the Infinite One. Why did the Infinite One, the Without Measure in His every attribute, work for six days, *six epochs*, to make the sensible Creation by subdividing the creative work into six ascending, evolving orders of creation, this yes, towards an always greater perfection? Not so that He could learn how to create even more, but for the order which governs all of His divine operations.

This order would have been violated – and this would thus have made the survival of man, the last creature to be created, impossible – if man had been made first and before the Earth had been created in all her parts and made inhabitable through the order placed in its waters and in its continents, and made luminous, beautiful and fertile by the beneficent sun, from the shining moon and the innumerable stars, made into a home, a dispenser, a garden to man for all the plant and animal creatures which cover and populate it.”

**Cause and Origin of Creation**

BD No. 7158 of 07/03/1958 taken from book 76

---

God the Father is speaking: “*What occurred in the kingdom of the spirits was the reason for the origin of Creation, of the entire universe with all its manifold spiritual and material creations*. Prior to the emergence of these creations only the spiritual kingdom existed, which was a world of infinite beatitudes in which spiritual beings took pleasure in their existence and were able to create in possession of strength and light in accordance with their purpose. And this ‘creating’ involved spiritual creations again, they actualized thoughts and ideas which flowed to these beings from God and which they then implemented with immense bliss because the strength to do so was at their disposal and they were also able to freely use their will. And the spiritual beings’ state of bliss need never have changed, they neither had to fear a restriction of their strength nor a reduction of light as long as their love for their God and Creator remained unchanged and they were thus permeated by Him with the divine light of love. But then a situation arose which exposed the beings to a new point of view, when Lucifer, the bearer of light, the first created being, presented the Eternal Deity, because He was invisible, as
being doubtful, and presented himself as the one from whom all spirit-beings had emerged and also demanded their acknowledgment of him as god and creator.

This, however, caused a conflict in the beings because their love belonged to One Who created them, but Lucifer’s presentation confused them, in fact, it appeared more plausible, for Lucifer radiated in light and brilliance and they were unable to behold a superior being above him. Nevertheless, they were still permeated by the light of realization; consequently they also doubted Lucifer’s portrayal. But gradually their bright moments of insight began to alternate with moments of slight blurring, and the more the being entertained the latter the longer lasted the phases of darkened thinking, or otherwise, the thoughts clarified and the being most lucidly realized its true origin. And Lucifer was no longer capable of dulling the realization of the latter. The former, however, quickly became subject to his control, they joined him and looked upon him as their god and creator because they resisted their constantly recurring enlightened moments until their final fall into the abyss took place. Lucifer’s undiminished strength in the beginning had brought a countless host of most blissful spiritual beings into existence, and due to the abundance of his creations a wrong sense of self-esteem arose in him. He no longer saw the Source from Whom he had received this strength but only the 'evidence' of the strength which permeated him and he alone wanted to possess it, even though he knew that it also belonged to the One Whose strength he was allowed to draw upon. Yet he not only wanted to possess it, he also wanted to dull the beings' light which most distinctly revealed their origin to them. And thus he succeeded in causing a conflict in the beings which, however, also lessened their happiness and hampered their creative activity, until they finally decided to accept their lord and thus the beings as well as the bearer of light forfeited their strength and light and plunged into darkness.

And this spiritual process, which can only be roughly explained to you humans, resulted in the emergence of countless spiritual and physical creations. These creations are merely reshaped, fallen spiritual beings. Due to their apostasy from God, due to their infinitely great distance from Him, their substance became increasingly harder the further away it fell. This has to be understood such that the spiritual strength from God, which induces ever increasing activity, was no longer able to touch these spiritual beings because they resisted it themselves; and thus their activity came to an end, their mobility, their life solidified, and what remained was utterly hardened substance, which originally was indeed God’s emanated strength, yet it had become totally ineffective. But God’s love and wisdom had initially intended a different purpose for the spiritual beings: constant activity according to His will which, at the same time, was also intended to be the being’s will. The spiritual beings had acted in opposition to their purpose, they wanted to use their strength contrary to divine will yet were no longer able to do so, since due to their apostasy they had deprived themselves of their strength. At that moment God’s love seized the completely solidified spirits again, which were no longer able to recognize themselves and were no more than a cluster of God-opposing spiritual substances. His strength of love drove these substances apart and used them to let the most diverse works of creation arise. Thus He more or less reshaped His once emanated strength, He gave every individual work of creation its task which it then complied with in the law of compulsion, so that the dissolved spiritual substance was compelled to be active but without any self-awareness, which it previously possessed as a spiritual being. Consequently, the creations are nothing other than what originally had come forth from God, just in a completely different state as far as their perfection is concerned. For all creations are or shelter only imperfect spiritual spirits which are on the path of return to God. Perfect spiritual beings did not require material creations, they only externalized
The Transformation of the Original Spirit into Creations

God the Father is speaking: “My Word shall bring you clarity, it shall answer questions and solve problems which you are unable to solve intellectually yourselves. You shall become knowledgeable if you desire to know, you shall be educated in all truth, for I want to give you light and illuminate your spirit, so that you do not continue to live in darkness and damage your soul, for I want to save it for all eternity. My immense love only ever wants your soul’s salvation because I long for your return, for unity with you, which requires the perfection of your soul. You once came forth from Me in all perfection, for I created you as My images, as utmost perfect beings, as miniatures of Myself and yet of the same quality, because your fundamental element was love since you came forth from the original source of Love, Which created vessels for Itself in order to emanate Itself into the vessels, in order to let this strength of love continually flow into these created beings.

These beings, My images, were pure love. They were My radiated strength of love which could indeed perceive and behold each other but they were unable to behold Me Myself from Whom they originated, because I was the original fullness of strength of love Myself which they could not see or they would have ceased to exist. For I had externalized them as tiniest sparks, as independent beings, as I have already explained to you several times, although, as a purely spiritual process it will never be quite understood by you humans on earth. But since these beings were independent entities endowed with free will and a lot of strength and light at their disposal due to the fact that they were constantly permeated by the flow of My love’s strength, I could not prevent them from misusing their free will such that they turned away from Me, that
they, when faced by their test of will to acknowledge Me as their God and Creator, denied Me this acknowledgment.

They turned to My first created being, Lucifer, who was visible to them and whose beauty stood out in brilliant radiance, and rejected the emanation of My love’s strength, which meant that they distanced themselves ever more from Me as the primary source of light and strength. This process, too, has been explained to you humans time and again as far as I could make it understandable to you. But now you should know that although My externalized living creations could indeed change themselves into the opposite, they could not perish but continued to exist and will continue to exist for all eternity. The beings’ fundamental substance was love, thus strength which, according to eternal law, has to be active, it cannot remain inactive forever. **Due to the ever increasing distance from Me as a result of rejecting My emanation of love, My created original beings’ spiritual substance became solid, and thus these beings became incapable of working and becoming active.** And so I dissolved the original spirits, I transformed the beings which were My once externalized emanated strength, and creation came into being, in which the strength could work again, thus become active in accordance with My will.

Consequently, you can rightly say that the whole of creation consists of original spirits transformed by My will, the same strength which I emanated in form of self-aware beings were now changed into other forms, into works of creation of every kind. I then assigned a task to every work of creation, and thus the original spiritual substance, dissolved in particles, now passes through all creations and serves Me in the law of compulsion. The strength becomes active in relation to My will, because strength must become effective in line with fundamental law. Always consider that the first created spiritual entities were My emanated strength, irrespective of whether they were dissolved or joined together again after an endless time, the first created spirit will not cease to exist. It was bound in these creations and unable to resist, it had to be of service, but thereby was also able to reach the degree of development which gained it ever more freedom and finally also placed the spiritual being into the state of free will, from where it then has to decide whether it wants to continue its ascent or return into the abyss once more, for God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend.

On its path of return to Me it passed through all creations and finally enters the form of the human being, as his soul, the last brief stretch of the path when it has to achieve unity with Me again, when it has to consciously accept the emanation of My love again, because voluntary return to Me requires the original spirit to relinquish his resistance to the emanation of My love’s strength. Then it will once again be the Godlike living creation, My image, the fallen original spirit, the perfectly created being.”
God the Father is speaking: “My works of creation demonstrate My infinite love for you, My supreme wisdom and My omnipotence, because they solely originated for the sake of salvation, for returning the once fallen spirits. Thus the entire work of creation is the expression of My infinite love because it was especially intended for the spiritual beings which opposed Me, which therefore rejected My love and likewise were no longer worthy of My love. And yet, precisely these opposing spirits motivated Me to bring forth works of creation so that they might give up their resistance and return to Me again.

Hence love paid no attention to the resistance at first but imprisoned the fallen beings, i.e. My wisdom and might disintegrated the beings into countless tiny particles and the strength of My love encased them, it reshaped the once emanated strength of beings into works of creation and My wisdom assigned them their purpose again. Love, wisdom and power were constantly at work for the emergence of a work of creation; consequently, the creation was and is, in the true sense of the word, divine work which testifies of My fundamental nature and should appear to you humans as the greatest miracle, if you seriously think about it. And this creation will remain a miracle, for the works are not lifeless things but change constantly. The functions of the individual works of creation provide every thinking human being with the evidence of a living God full of wisdom, Whose strength of will and love is inexhaustible, Whose power is limitless, Who constantly creates forms containing minute particles which are of service within the works of creation through the law of compulsion. Since I withdrew these fallen spirits from My adversary's power, from the power of the spirit who once had caused their downfall, whom they once had followed voluntarily, even though they belonged to him, precisely because they had followed him voluntarily, he was deprived of his power over the spirits which My strength of love had turned into matter. These beings were removed from the adversary's influence and are now subject to My law. They were no longer free, since they had given up their freedom, but for their own sake I placed them into My law of service in a constrained state.
All of creation is a work of My love for this fallen, unhappy spiritual substance which travels the path through the creation in great agony. But once the previously fallen being has made its way through the creation and then lives on earth as a human being he will also recognize the work of creation to a limited extent and can rejoice in it, since his state of agony is over. Before him he will see the works of creation in all their glory, which will give evidence to him of the Creator’s love, wisdom and power as soon as he begins to abandon his last resistance to Me. He himself is indeed free to some extent but now he is subject to My adversary’s influence again, who previously had no power at all over the being. The human being still belongs to My adversary until he has voluntarily detached himself from him.

And thus you have to understand correctly: Creation can and will please you humans because it is My work, but I used the strength which emanated from Me in the shape of spiritual beings for its origin. I simply reshaped them into My love and wisdom’s most diverse creations, but they are nevertheless the fallen spirits in substance, thus part of My adversary, and they will remain so until they, entirely redeemed, return to Me again. You humans do not see the fallen spirit in creation but only see the works of My love, and you may enjoy them, you may recognize Me Myself therein and consider yourselves fortunate to have covered the path through My creations already and are nearing your perfection. But you should also remember that the real world is a spiritual world which can only be seen by someone with spiritual vision, that everything visible to you humans is but a pale reflection of this real spiritual world. You should remember that all matter is hardened spiritual substance and that this solidification was again only the result of the resistance to Me, the rejection of My strength of love. Then you will also understand that the material world in its substance is spirit in opposition to Me, which My love and wisdom merely oblige to be of service in order to break its resistance and to return it to its original state once again.

Hence the solidification of spiritual substance was caused by the beings’ apostasy from Me, and therefore the hardened spirit substance still belongs to My adversary until it is spiritualized once more. However, this does not prevent Me from removing his power over this spirit substance and reshaping it into all kinds of creations for the purpose of its final, voluntary withdrawal from him and return to Me. And thus creation always remains divine work, a work of My infinite love and wisdom which only I Myself, Who possesses all power and strength and Who can implement anything His love and wisdom wants and has recognized to be successful, was able to bring into existence.”

The ‘Big Bang’ - The Spiritual Strength of God
BD No. 7158 of 07/03/1958 taken from book 76, BD No. 8613 of 09/11/1963 taken from book 90

Where did matter come from and what caused the ‘Big Bang’

To begin, let’s review the mass-energy relationship as defined by Albert Einstein which will help us to understand the magnitude of the Lord’s words when He said, “My wisdom and might disintegrated the beings into countless tiny particles.”

An equation \( E=mc^2 \)
definition derived by the twentieth century physicist Albert Einstein, in which \( E \)
represents unity of energy, m represents units of mass, and c\(^2\) is the speed of light squared, or multiplied by itself. (The speed of light is 186,000 miles/second)

Because the speed of light is a very large number and is multiplied by itself, this equation points out that a small amount of matter can release a huge amount of energy, as in a nuclear reaction. In physics, mass-energy equivalence states that anything having mass has an equivalent amount of energy and vice versa, with these fundamental quantities directly relating to one another by Albert Einstein’s famous formula: \(E=mc^2\).

Now let’s review some of the words that the Father spoke in the previous message:

**The Reason for Origin of Creation**

God the Father is speaking: “**What occurred in the kingdom of the spirits was the reason for the origin of Creation, of the entire universe with all its manifold spiritual and material creations. . .** And this spiritual process, which can only be roughly explained to you humans, resulted in the emergence of countless spiritual and physical creations. These creations are merely reshaped, fallen spiritual beings. Due to their apostasy from God, due to their infinitely great distance from Him, their substance became increasingly harder the further away it fell. This has to be understood such that the spiritual strength from God, which induces ever increasing activity, was no longer able to touch these spiritual beings because they resisted it themselves; and thus their activity came to an end, their mobility, their life solidified, and what remained was utterly hardened substance, which originally was indeed God’s emanated strength, yet it had become totally ineffective. At that moment God’s love seized the completely solidified spirits again, which were no longer able to recognize themselves and were no more than a cluster of God-opposing spiritual substances.

Due to the ever increasing distance from Me as a result of rejecting My emanation of love, My created original beings’ spiritual substance became solid, and thus these beings became incapable of working and becoming active.

My wisdom and might disintegrated the beings into countless tiny particles and the strength of My love encased them, it reshaped the once emanated strength of beings into works of creation and My wisdom assigned them their purpose again. (If splitting an atom caused the atomic bomb, you can imagine what the explosion was like when
billions of angels were released from there harden state - E=MC2. It was at this moment that the ‘Big Bang’ took place and the works of creating the visible world began.)

Love, wisdom and power were constantly at work for the emergence of a work of creation; consequently, the creation was and is, in the true sense of the word, divine work which testifies of My fundamental nature and should appear to you humans as the greatest miracle, if you seriously think about it.”

**Battle of Light with Darkness**

BD 0198 24.11.1937, BD 0199 24.11.1937, BD 0200 25.11.1937

God the Father is speaking: “Listen, my child, it is God’s will to instruct you of teachings which correspond to your thoughts and therefore I want to let you know today how very fond our Lord Jesus is of you and how much your dedication pleases Him. If you ever feel a sense of abandonment, never be frightened, for One is always close to you, your Saviour, Who will help you carry your every worry. Confidently travel your path of life until the end in this knowledge and don’t be afraid! Not everyone is granted the same fate of being allowed to work physically and spiritually as the Lord and Saviour has intended for you, yet if you always lift your eyes upwards you will be able to live up to both and constantly feel the Father’s caring hand. Listen to us, who stay close to you, and try to understand:

•In the beginning of the world all spirit was united, it was a Being surrounded by the light of the eternal Sun. Elements whizzed through the universe which shied away from the radiance and tried to destroy the divine light. During the battle of darkness against light countless atoms lost contact with the light and the elements of darkness declared war on those tiny bodies of light which went astray in the universe in order to extinguish their abundance of light, which each of these small and smallest beings sheltered, and to draw these beings into the sphere of influence of darkness, thus, the battle between good and evil erupted, which will last for an unforeseeable time to come. And God gave every being of light the freedom to turn according to its own will. Nevertheless, these beings will continue to fundamentally belong to the divine light, even if the battle lasts for millennia, each one of the smallest components of the eternal Light will flow back to the origin of its purpose. This is the cycle according to God’s will, that every being should voluntarily turn to Him, with full use of its strength and supported by the love of the divine Father who generates all light, and thus find the path back to perfection and be permitted to stay close again to the heavenly Father, the eternal Light.

When your will applies to spiritual spheres you shall also receive the strength to pursue your goal. The assurance for your striving rests in your heart, you will feel in your heart that your contact with the Saviour will result in the flow of divine grace and, happily and with inner peace, you will be able to look forward to the future. Where the Saviour seeks to help His Own every day will bring you blessings, yet also thank the Lord for every day which instructs you of His Word. And thus begin:

•Where beings of light argue with darkness no grain will go astray, everything will arise anew, always aspiring to reach the light. The smallest beings will stay in the
universe and, depending on the duration of their life, will reshape themselves time and again, until they finally reach a state in which they can freely use their own discretion to do as they like, yet always subject to the Creator's will. At the onset of their own freedom of will they are also responsible for their further course of life and development, for the maturity of their soul. It is their purpose to return to the eternal light from whence they originated, yet the time they take to accomplish this purpose has been left up to them. Consequently, the light beings struggle incessantly against the power of darkness. Those who emerge victoriously from this battle in turn contribute towards helping those who are weak, and the most effective weapon in the battle against the opponent is love.

Oh, it is so pleasing for us to watch your endeavor! Anyone who strives towards the light like that cannot descend into darkness, therefore continue to receive our teachings so devotedly, after all, it benefits the salvation of your soul and that of many others. And thus today we want to give you the final conclusion to yesterday's work:

• Throughout short intervals of time and space numerous beings of light go through their period of development embodied in animal and plant life, and they, too, unconsciously strive time and again towards the light. After a long time, during which they continue to develop higher in various stages, they enter the last stage before their spiritual rebirth, the embodiment as a human being. At this stage the battle begins with the darkness, which would like to deprive this earthly being of its purpose and completely pull the soul down into obscurity. And since the human being has free will at this stage to make a personal choice for good or evil, for light or darkness, this battle carries tremendous responsibility, for his apostasy from the heavenly Father, the eternal Light, would signify a struggle which would last for thousands of years again until this soul is finally also redeemed thanks to the never-ending help of the enlightened spiritual beings' love. Countless beings would strive more persistently were they aware of this responsibility, yet the human being should find the path to God of his own accord, only then will he once again be able to become a part of that which he was at the beginning of the world, Where God’s omnipotence and love takes effect none of the tiny beings of light goes astray, this is why your attention is repeatedly drawn to the fact that, in infinity, every being takes its designated path, conducive to its development, in the care of the Father. The profundity of this law does not seem comprehensible to you, yet neither will you be able to grasp your heavenly Father’s infinite magnitude before you have become what your purpose is, to be as one with the divine Father."

The Beginning of Creation

God the Father is speaking: “The universe is no more explicable in its existence, as the nature of the eternal Deity can be made intelligible to people, as long as they themselves have not yet entered the realm of light. Because what you see in creation, is probably outward matter, basically it is spiritual, that’s to say, strength from God that
has condensed to form. But the condensing of strength to form is a process that has no parallel in earthly life, and therefore remains inexplicable for people, because strength is something spiritual. However, form is something earthly, where spiritual can be transformed into earthly matter made visible. This is beyond human comprehension and therefore is not comprehensible to people. God’s love is strength, His will is strength, and this will for love took shape. Also every work of creation is form, arose from divine will. Further it is the divine thought, which creates form. What God thinks and wants, that will happen, and therefore He puts all His thoughts as work in the universe. His creation is outgoing from His strength that has taken the form according to His will. It does not pass one second, when the divine creative will is not active; it does not pass a second, where no new creations are put into space, because His strength of love is constantly active. And everything created by God is continuously supplied with strength of His love. Consequently even God’s creation is immortal, although it changes the external shape and seemingly passes away. Nothing can be lost in space or dissolve into nothing, because everything is divine strength, therefore immortal. All creation is purchased through this same force and can never be destroyed. So the man apparently accomplishes a work of destruction, his free will turns against the will of God. God draws back His will from the outer form of His work of creation, and this form ceases to exist apparently, however it is only invisible by the eye of people, until God lets His will of love to be form again. At that the motive for destruction by human desire is deciding, to what extent such is injustice in the eyes of God. What God has created however out of the earth, is untouchable for a contrary disposed power to God. It’s only that subjected to a temporary change, partly by divine will, partly by human will, which is in contact with the earth. But even there are these works of creation, which the man can not comprehend and the origin of them lets him ponder. Only the earth alone contains beings, in which are inherent the drive for destruction, while all creations outside of the earth are not exposed to the will of destruction of immature beings. But the apparent work of destruction has the consequence, that divine strength is not always recognized as the original substance of creation. The consequence of this is, that the omnipotence of God is doubted; the consequence of this is, that one tries to explain the origin of this creation works as purely earthly, that one tries to deny the creating force of an essential divinity and they want to replace it with the people credible appearing elementary force, that is independent of a being and is required in itself. Any planned construction of the entire work of creation would be questioned. However, a being is denied who is unsurpassable and is the paragon of omnipotence, love and wisdom.”

**Genesis 1:1-5: The First Day of Creation**

In the beginning, when God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, while a mighty wind swept over the waters.

Then God said, “Let there be light,” and there was light. God saw how good the light was. God then separated the light from the darkness. God called the light “day,” and the darkness he called “night.” Thus evening came, and morning followed - the first day.
“Creation is the foundation of ‘all God’s saving plans,’ the ‘Beginning of the history of salvation that culminates in Christ.’” 280-Catechism

**Catholic Teaching: Creation - Heaven and Earth**

Ref: Catechism of the Catholic Church

326 “The Scriptural expression ‘heaven and earth’ means all that exists, creation in its entirety. It also indicates the bond, deep within creation, that both unites heaven and earth and distinguishes the one from the other: ‘the earth’ is the world of men, while ‘heaven’ or ‘the heavens’ can designate both the firmament and God’s own ‘place’ – ‘our Father in heaven’ and consequently the ‘heaven’ to which is eschatological glory. Finally, ‘heaven’ refers to the saints and the ‘place’ of the spiritual creatures, the angels, who surround God.”

The firmament refers to space itself, infinite in size as the creator Himself is infinite, and this is where the Earth and the rest of the created universe would dwell. The universe started with the creation of the Earth, and then came the planets, Sun, and finally the Stars. Once everything was in order, came life: plants, animals, and then finally man; the greatest of Gods creation.

**The First Stages of Creation**

Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans MV: 86

“He was creating everything from nothing; order from disorder; from the incomplete - more: from the shapeless - the complete, from the formed, with a most powerful law of wisdom. The universe arose from chaos. From the vapors charged with chaotic molecules, from the anarchy of the elements, ‘He created Heaven and Earth’ and immediately, His Holy Spirit ‘moved over the water.’

And little by little, as the successive works of Creation were being accomplished, ‘the Spirit of the Lord’ moved upon them with His laws of providences, with successive works and even more powerful. From chaos which separates and orders itself into, I shall say, families - solid parts with solid parts in order to form the globe of the planet Earth, humid parts with humid parts in order to successively form the seas, lakes, rivers and streams - to light, the first of things not only ordered with the elements already existing in the chaos, but created, with its own power, from nothing.

For light did not exist ‘and darkness was upon the face of the deep,’ that is, of the chaos in which confusedly the masses of gases collided, charged with humidity, gasses and molecules. And God created light, His light. He bestowed to the world, which was arising from nothingness through His will, the attribute, one of His attributes: light.”

**Sequence of Creation**

Ref: Conchiglia – San Juan Diego July 8, 2014

God the Father is speaking: “Many are the Suns in the Universe and every Sun is at the center of a Solar System. I am God the Father...Creator of Heaven and Earth but the time has come to say...as in Earth, so it is in Heaven rather than, as in Heaven, so it is on Earth. Why?

Because Planet Earth was the First Planet created. The first living cell of the Universe placed at the center of the Universe; firstling of all that was created. After Earth,
the Sun, after the Sun, the Moon, and there was light. The Earth is mother because she nourished and nourishes you. God from God, Light from Light, and now I say, Earth from Earth. Earth has given birth to several other Planets. They were born from her, duplication of the Earth’s cells. As from a cell is born, from the mother a child and many children are born. And hence: Humanity of yesterday, of today and tomorrow.

From Planet Earth many planets, and hence the Solar System, and like this the Universe...and so many Universes. Planet Earth is the oldest, more beautiful and more complete of the Universe, virgin and innocent, in which I Am well pleased to create Man in My Image and Likeness of Love.

Now is there a more clear reason why Satan wants’ to destroy and extinguish Man for possession of Planet Earth? All that I contain is comparable to a huge dandelion and in every Solar System each Planet is in its place as established by Me. Each Planet is immovable and rotates only on itself dancing for Me.

All Planets are huge living cells and are attached to each other as on a spider web through astral-cosmos roads well-defined and precise. Everything in the Universe is stationery. But on their own space they move upon itself both in rotation and in rhythmic pulse and as many children are different from each other, also Planets are different from each other. But do not coincide with each other.

It is the artificial stars, that are huge spaceships, that move in the deep Universe and in star wars for power and conquest, as remote controlled objects hurled to various objectives-Planets since evil now spread, always tries to stand up and rise to detriment of Good, without however, being able to succeed.

So many children, so much Humanity, so many Planets, so many Solar Systems and so many Universes. Come, it is the time to unite all that has been revealed about the Universe and its inhabitants. And you, children, read it and re-read attentively. Study, meditate, reflect, be not superficial and treat with love and respect these My Words which transmit to you ‘higher values’ about the My Creation in its share and form. Soak up the high morale and high spirituality that I present you for as I Am Rhythm in Myself in My emanations of Love, you are too. Everything is rhythmic in Creation, starting from your heart beat, from your breath. Also your personal conversion is rhythmic. In fact, initially you have to reverse your behavior and then as a consequence you have to reverse your mentality and your thinking so that in a new bottle I can pour new wine. In fact, My Son Jesus said, ‘behold I make all things new’

**Matter and Spirit**

BD No. 2494 of 10/04/1942 taken from book 33

God the Father is speaking: “What is the world and its matter, this question occupies many people and yet they are unable to solve it by virtue of intellectual thought. *Everything visible is matter, i.e. substance that has solidified as a form.* The substance, as it were, only became visible due to hardening since previous to that it was invisible, that is, spiritual substance. *Spiritual substance is God’s emanated strength which, in accordance with His will, becomes what it is as soon as God has intended it to become a specific form.* This form, in turn, is the unification of innumerable substances; hence it is a structure that can be dissolved to release every single substance again, if it is God’s will. Consequently, *any form can be destroyed, matter is something that has no eternal existence because it is merely the cover for spiritual substances which are intended to evolve and as a result don’t stay in these covers forever.* Although matter itself is also spiritual substance, i.e. in accordance with God’s will solidified spiritual strength, it develops by means of continuous dissolution, dispersion and re-shaping so that it can, after an infinitely long time, occupy such a form itself too. Thus everything
visible is spiritual strength that is still at the beginning of development, whereas the more mature spirit is invisible to the human eye and uses a visible form to live in.

Hence, in every form lives something spiritual, a being which is unconscious of itself but which longs for the unification with similar beings to increase the fullness of strength with this union, since every being strives for perfection. As soon as matter dissolves, i.e. when a form disintegrates, the released spiritual being strives towards equal spiritual beings which merge to give life to a new form. This process forms the basis for the uninterrupted becoming and passing in nature, it is therefore the cause of constant life and death in nature. The spiritual substances pass through the whole of creation, partly alone, partly merged in immense numbers. Corresponding to these are the size and kind of the forms that surround them. Everything that encloses these spiritual beings is matter. But matter itself consists of spiritual substances which are at the beginning of their development and thus can be visible to the human eye because only the already more mature spirit is invisible. Consequently, everything visible must be considered to be imperfect, i.e. spiritual substance which is very distant from God, which is starting its way of development. The spirit concealed within the visible form has already travelled this way and now strives towards God. Therefore a destruction, i.e. a passing away or dissolution of the form, or the transience of matter, corresponds to God’s will because it enables the spiritual substance to continue its development.”

Origin of the Creation Work 'Earth'

BD No. 7942 of 07/15/1961 taken from book 83

God the Father is speaking: “The path of the spirits across the earth will extend into eternity. For the spirits themselves became the matter which earth and all its creations consist of, God’s will turned solidified spiritual substance into matter, thus the whole of the creation work earth, as well as all creations in the entire universe, is God’s once emanated strength which He externalized as a 'being' but which so changed itself that it finally became mere hardened substance, which was then transformed into creations of all kinds.

This took place over an infinitely long period of time, because the 'transformation' also occurred in lawful order, the rise of what is now visible as 'inhabited earth' happened during countless phases of development, it was not an instantly externalized work of God’s creative power, since even the slow development served its purpose. Time and again minutely disintegrated spiritual particles were captured and reshaped, the process took an inconceivably long time before earth had formed itself into a work of creation which could serve as an abode and sustain physical life for the constantly maturing spiritual substance, as it was designated by God’s eternal plan of Salvation. And even this spiritual substance took an endless time before it reached the degree when it was allowed to live as a human being on earth for the purpose of its final perfection.

This last earthly progress as a human being is but a moment in time compared with the infinitely long period of the earth's preliminary development. Although the creation of every form was indeed the work of an instant for God, because His will and His strength externalized every thought as an existing work, yet the resistance of the once fallen spirits determined the length of time until their physical transformation. For God did not force this spiritual substance but His strength of love captured it until its resistance had somewhat subsided in order to then encase it in accordance with His plan, to then shape it into various forms where it would perform some kind of activity which was so minimal that, again, an infinitely long time passed before these forms could gradually disintegrate and change.
The rise of what is now visible as 'inhabited earth' happened during countless phases of development, it was not an instantly externalized work of God's creative power.

The development of earth took ages until it could be inhabited by living beings, and these, in turn, prepared the earth for yet another inconceivably long time to become suitable for serving human beings as a last place of development. The tiny individual particles of the human soul, however, had passed through all creations. The fall from the highest pinnacle into the abyss had taken so long that thus an equally long time had been necessary to ascend from the abyss to the point when the being could receive its self-awareness again, that this final perfection then made it possible to travel the last path of ascent. But for the time being the creation had emerged, and this incorporates the innumerable fallen spirits whose return to God will subsequently also take an infinitely long time, hence an end of creation cannot be foreseen as yet.

Nevertheless, the 'creations' exist and everything will take its lawful course. They are brought to life by ever new minute particles of spirit whose higher development takes place by way of constantly changing their outer form, and thus a continuous developing and disintegrating of every material creation can be observed. All works of creation repeatedly renew themselves in this manner and thus serve the inherent spirit to achieve maturity, just as they serve humanity’s continued development by safeguarding their physical life on earth. As long as the spirits bound in the creations do not have free will their path of higher development proceeds in accordance with God’s will, the constrained spiritual substance serves in some form or other and thereby matures gradually. But as soon as the spirit lives on earth as a human being it is once again in possession of free will and then it is able, instead of continuing to ascend, to stop its development or to regress again. During the final period of its process of development it is able to fail. And this regression can lead to the result that the spirit in the human being, the 'soul' or the once 'fallen original spirit,' will return again to the abyss.”
The Creation of Earth – centrifugal force

Ref: MV “The Victim-Souls”:69-70

Jesus is speaking: “When the Creator made the Earth, He drew it out of nothing, uniting gases of ether (the upper regions of space: heavens) into a mass, which, in rotating, became solid like a meteoric avalanche which continually grew around a primitive nucleus.

Even your Negation – a term I give to that Science which wants to explain things without God – admits the centrifugal force, which allows a body to rotate without losing parts of itself, or rather it attracts all parts to its center. You have machines, which however grandiose, still repeat in a microscopic way the centrifugal force created by God to create worlds, and force them to rotate around the sun, a fixed pivot, unable to leave the Heavenly path assigned to them; otherwise they would disturb the order of creation and provoke cataclysms with incalculable destruction.

How many good forces you still do not know, you who are the masters at discovering and using wicked forces! This latter you ask from the Evil one, and he teaches them to you, to torture you and make you torturers of your fellow men, in his name, and in his service. But you refuse to ask for the good forces from Goodness, who would teach you paternally, just as Him, the means and the ways of how to use them during their existence on the Earth.

There are still beneficial sources and healthy juices which you do not know, and which would be so useful to know. Also there are some you know about, but you do not want to use them, preferring instead true drugs of hell, which destroy both your soul and body.”

It was during this event that centrifugal force was created and the force of gravity was established. Thus allowing the earth and planets to form and grow in size and density.

Primitive Earth

Ref: MV - Lessons on the Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 90-93

Jesus is speaking: “Look first from the solid molecules, from the disordered vapors and fires which were the primitive nebula, the Earth and the waters are formed, and in the Earth and in the waters still mixed with the future seas, lakes, springs and rivers, the minerals become the crust and furnace to the internal fires, to the internal sulfurs and metals and the bottom of the waters. The atmosphere purifies itself for some time, freed as it is in part by that which made the original nebula heavy, the chaotic nothing, and the Earth, launched into its trajectory, still naked, sterile and mute, passes through the silent [regions of] space with the bald ridges of its mountains just emerging from the dark waters of the future basins.”
Earth’s Rotation around the Sun - surface

Jesus is speaking: “This rotation of the earth affects the earth’s surface insofar as a crust is being formed which is a suitable growth medium for vegetation, therefore a continuous habitation of the earth’s surface is only possible due to its perpetual rotation, due to the generation of a force which affects the ground, that is, which does not spread outward and dissipates but works from the outside towards the interior of the earth. This force is life-giving but cannot be explained by human intellect, precisely because it arises and is effective beyond the law. Were the earth to stop its velocity all life on it would solidify (to become compact or firm), on the other hand, however, an increased velocity would encourage abnormal growth but also penetrate and affect the interior of the earth and bring about eruptions which would endanger the earth’s core and jeopardize its continuation.” BD No. 4355 of 06/27/1948 taken from book 5

The Heavenly Path Assigned to Earth and Planets

Ref: MV “The Victim-Souls”:69-70

The Solar System is part of life. Think about this while racing through space at 70,000 km/hr.

Jesus is speaking: “The Earth, thus getting its form during its course as a nebular projectile, which solidifies itself crossing space, had to rob, even by force, also emanations and elements which came from other sources, and which remained locked up in it under the form of volcanic fires, sulfurs, waters, and diverse minerals. These appear on the surface giving testimony of their existence and of the mysteries, which with all your science you do not succeed in explaining with exact truth, the mysteries of Earth, a planet created from nothing by God, My Father.”

Jesus continues to speak: “Oh, my child, behold the firmament, in the splendor of its sparkling stars, not one of them is independent of the Creator’s will, and not one can take a path other than that which the Lord has determined.” Ref: PMG

Earths Trajectory through Space

Science Theory: “The Sun is not the center of the Galaxy! The planets revolve in a spiral. The analysis of this motion shows that the planets move independently of the Sun. The Sun revolves around the galactic center. The natural and trajectory of the rotation indicate the existence of invisible energy, causes the object to rotate. This energy is rotating in a spiral, carrying away for itself material objects. Planets in the Solar System rotate under the action of invisible energy.” Ref: www.djsadhu.com

What is this invisible energy?
The Invisible Energy Holding the Universe Together

Ref: Conchiglia Aug 24th, 2010

Jesus is speaking; “What I want to talk about today is an extremely delicate topic. Here Conchiglia, prepare your heart to welcome the new one coming because through you I would like to come up to the farthest confines of the Earth then again invoke the Holy Spirit.

Conchiglia, you were created free from every human constraint to bring to fruition the Project of the Father for these Last days. You have already been told, you are a door that many will cross. What is a door?

First of all, a door opens or closes is defined by a precise area puts boundaries in a given environment, separates an inside from an outside and through it you enter or exit. As I said the topic is extremely delicate, again invoke the Holy Spirit.

You are Our spring Conchiglia, why Our, because from it flows purely, cool, clear water that flows inexhaustible to quench all the children of the Earth who want to drink. When the water is pure it gets into joyful movement within all cells of the body and mind and feels full of vigor to face life.

Now daughter, imagine this scene and place yourself on top. Then look down. See the planet Earth, draw it here. Now draw a door on planet Earth. Now from where you are open that door and exit. Well, now you see yourself from the act of going out that door. So what is out there? The void! Apparently, your eyes see the void but the void does not exist since God is absolute fullness in everything that was created then the void is annulled in the fullness.

Scientist should see the Universe and Multiverse as an incalculable cobweb where from every single point extends into another cobweb, and so onto an infinitum so many spider webs made of energy and light. The Suns can be compared to spiders forming spider webs. Planets can be compared to small insects trapped in these energy webs.

In the small, Scientist can see the great in the microcosm, the macro-cosmos and the multi-cosmos. At each point of these energy cobwebs each planet has its place. Each strand of spider web is a road which leads to another road made of energy and light. The Sun emits energy and light with its rays; many Suns and so many rays of light. The light beam as it expands into the Cosmos the source is thin and then widens as cone shaped and surrounds and permeates everything that incurs within the light cone so that the light surrounds every planet and its surroundings.

The cone resembles a triangle, about this I have already spoken. The beam is energy. The light comes from the energy, it is a by-product then it moves through the
Cosmos it is necessary to turn our gaze and attention, to the energy and not towards the light.

The energy consists of many rays of various Suns represent the tracks on which to travel. Out of these tracks are derailed within those tracks you travel in a linear fashion from station to station from Planet to Planet, navigating the Cosmos.

Listen Conchiglia, I, Jesus, your God of Love, I bless you and bless every child that God loves and who loves Me.”

The Cosmic Wheel-web

Ref: Conchiglia July 12th, 2014

God the Father is speaking: “The vacuum does not exist. The ether exists and is formed by atoms. Each atom is like a conglomerate, of so many spider webs superimposed on each other. Each “cosmic wheel-web” is composed of many “spoke-filaments” therefore “many spider webs” “many cosmic wheels” within them “many strands” …“many cosmic paths” through which you are traveling in each precise and linear direction from one Planet to another.

Planets which like so many flies on the spider web are still. Now look carefully for within simplicity I created the “Cosmic Conchiglia” which contains as a form and not by size and space … all Universes parallel to each other. And I contain the Cosmic Conch.”

Position of the Sun

Our Lord assigned a fixed trajectory of the planets to prevent them from crashing into each other which would disturb the order of creation and provoke cataclysms with incalculable destruction. The Sun was created after the earth and planets and was placed in the exact position to fully support life on earth; its huge gravitational field began to purify our galaxy by collecting all the stellar debris in space to itself. The planets move independently of the sun, according to the Lord’s will, the heavenly bodies in the universe always orbit the sun at the same distance and in eternally repetitive regularity. Every creation in the universe depends on the solar system.

The Earth was created first and the Sun was created after, meaning the sun was positioned in the exact spot to support life on Earth. This places the earth in the only habitable zone of our Galaxy: 5 percent closer to the sun and we would all burn up, 20 percent further from the sun and we would all freeze to death.

If the Sun came first, the elements to form the earth and planets would have been drawn to the Sun by its huge gravitational field and nothing would have formed. Because it was formed after the earth and planets, the Sun’s gravitational field would begin the process of gathering up all the left over stellar debris from the formation of planets. This event would add more energy and size to the Sun and the planets, as their orbital path passed through the debris field.
Catholic Teaching: The World was created for the Glory of God

Ref: CCC - Catechism of the Catholic Church

Scripture and Tradition never cease to teach and celebrate this fundamental truth: "The world was made for the glory of God." St. Bonaventure explains that God created all things "not to increase his glory, but to show it forth and to communicate it, for God has no other reason for creating his love and goodness: "creation came into existence when the key of love opened his hand." The First Vatican Council explains:

This one, true God, of his own goodness and "almighty power," not for increasing his own beatitude, nor for attaining his perfection, but in order to manifest this perfection through the benefits which he bestows on creatures, with absolute freedom of counsel "and from the beginning of time, made out of nothing both orders of creatures, the spiritual and the corporeal."

The ultimate purpose of creation is that God "who is the creator of all things may at last become 'all in all,' thus simultaneously assuring his own glory and our beatitude."

What is the World/Earth?

BD No. 8919 of 01/28/1965 taken from book 93

God the Father is speaking:

"Thus you can look at the world with all its creations as a kingdom belonging to My opponent, for it shelters all fallen spiritual substances, it is just that he is deprived of them during the time when they embody one form after another. And yet the world was created by My love, wisdom and might and My adversary has no part in it, despite the fact that it belongs to him he has no control over his world. And it has arisen in all its beauty, sheltering the most marvelous creations of all kinds. My love, wisdom and might can be noticed everywhere, and although I constrained the rebellious spiritual substances within these creations the act of creation was a happy one for Me which enabled My once emanated strength to become active again, because the strength I externalized as a 'being' refused to be active and by rejecting My strength of love also rendered itself incapable of it.

And thus I gave this strength a task again, by bringing a world into existence with all its innumerable creations, but also with participation of the beings that had remained faithful to Me for they, too, had the power to create. They knew My thoughts, My plan of Salvation and experienced their working with Me as exceptional happiness. Their love concerned their fallen brothers whom they wanted to help lift out of the abyss. The fact that this process required an infinitely long time from a human point of view did not bother them, for they were perfect and therefore lacked all concept of time. Nor did the concept of time exist before the stage of the human being. It only started when the human being entered the creation as a self-aware being and it will not lose this concept of time and space again until he becomes perfect once more. And this concept of time can be seen in all creations, where every form, be it in the mineral, plant or animal world, always has a limited time span at its disposal and thus higher development always depends on certain periods, which thus also explain the perpetual changes which
constantly can be observed in nature and which subsequently also determine the perpetual return of the seasons, of spring, summer, autumn and winter.

Everything took place in unsurpassed wisdom, which always and forever will remain unchanged as long as creation exists, for everything proceeds according to divine law. And the various different worlds are subject to different laws again. Yet each one contributes towards higher development, and each one takes the already achieved degree of maturity into account. This is why I look upon My creation with pleasure because I don’t see in it the fallen spirits but only the means for their ascent, and I consider all means as an expression of My love and wisdom which one day will accomplish the return of the fallen spirits to Me. And you humans may take pleasure in My creation, for it offers you works of wonder which you are unable to create yourselves. You can only ever see and marvel, but you carelessly take no notice of what testifies to your Creator’s wisdom, love and might. And yet this whole world only came into being because of you, and you are its crowning glory, you are the once fallen spirits which are on the last short path of return. Everything you can see around you served to achieve your degree of maturity; you have merely overcome all these forms already.

But in the last stage as a human being My adversary has power over you again which I cannot deny him but which you can take away from him yourselves by directing your will towards Me. And once more all beings of light will stand by you in order to support you in your battle against him, for they all want you to become free from him, who alone was the cause of the origin of the earthly world because he had pulled you down into the abyss. You, however, must decide for yourselves which lord you want to join, and this decision alone determines your fate in eternity.”

**Time Concept of Earth’s Evolution**

BD No. 8252 of 08/26/1962 taken from book 87

God the Father is speaking: “The evolution of earth required an infinitely long time. Even if you humans want to set up a concept of time for this you are unable to think that far back because it exceeds your intellectual capacity. Yet you should know that the apostasy of the beings I created took place during an equally long period of time but that the concept of ‘time’ is not applicable for this slow developmental stage of earth because this concept only exists for the self-aware being in its stage of imperfection, since the concept of time no longer exists for the perfect being. This is why people will only ever be able to estimate the individual stages of the creation work ‘earth’ but never even come close to the truth, unless they apply the concept of ‘eternities.’ For the apostasy from Me has taken eternities, and the same period of time will be needed to return the spirits which had deserted Me.

And if you humans now considered that you are close to joining Me again completely, if you considered that these eternities are already behind you and that you can soon finish your ascending process of development and succeed in completely liberating yourselves from the form, if you considered that your apostasy from Me happened eternities ago and that you can now lessen this immense original sin and become completely released from it with the help of Jesus Christ, then you would truly only be moved by the one thought of sincerely giving yourselves to the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ and appeal to Him to grant you the strength to establish your final unification with your God and Father, Whom you can now recognize in Jesus Christ and for this reason entrust yourselves to Him in love and humility in order to cancel your past sin of arrogance and heartlessness.

Your thinking will only ever move within limitations, and thus you cannot understand that an endless time has passed in which you were constrained by My will,
which had removed you from My adversary’s control so as to enable your higher development. And you cannot be granted the retrospect of this endlessly long path, because it would no longer be possible for you to continue your path across earth in free will, since you would be driven by fear to live according to My will, and then you would never be able to become perfect, as this requires free will. However, if you know about your soul’s process before its incarnation as a human being, your sense of responsibility will be stronger and then the results of people’s research will also be of value, who think they can prove that the evolution of earth and its inhabitants took thousands of years and which should make you wonder how long you have been on earth already, albeit not as self-aware beings.

Yet then you will also know that the whole of creation shelters spiritual beings on their upward process of development in order to once again become what they had been in the beginning: free, self-aware beings, able to be active in strength and light as they were intended to be when I created them through the strength of My love, It can only ever be believed since evidence of it cannot be given, but even faith can become a conviction if the human being in his last stage on earth tries to bring his nature into line with that of his God and Father, if he changes himself to love and thereby unites himself with Me. For as soon as I can be present to him because I Am love Itself he will also be able to believe with certainty and know that he only lives on earth in order to complete his task after his infinitely long path. And he will wholeheartedly strive towards Me and thus find unification with Me, his Father of eternity, and be inconceivably happy.”

The Earth is Alive
Ref: Conchiglia – San Juan Diego March 4, 2015
God the Father is speaking:
“The Earth is a miracle in itself on her everything births and everything dies, and everything is renewed on a continuous cycle. On the penitential day of the Ashes, you have been told, you are dust and to dust you shall return. The earth contains everything within her. The Earth is alive. The Earth is made up of specks of dust. Everything you think you throw away, returns to her and regenerates, the material is always the same, is a continuous recycling, many substances, forming substance only transformed.

If you take a rock and reduce it to dust and then take the bone of human remains and reduce them to dust visually you will see the same thing, and that is dust. If you take both powder and mix with water you would not have anything but a compact mass to which you can give the form.

The Earth contains in itself all the dusty remains of billions and billions of living beings since the beginning of Creation of the Earth to date. You are unique and different Souls covered by the same material making up the Earth and you have the same essential elements of the Earth, minerals that you need to restore you.

By polluting the earth you pollute yourself since it is the fruits of the Earth that you feed. When I speak “to you” I mean the human being in general for he who loves God does not pollute the Earth, in fact is the Enemy of God that does this with the intent to destroy you.
The Enemy of God knows he does not have the Holy Spirit of God that distinguishes the sons of God from any other meat which has in itself the only breath of life. I, that Am the Holy Spirit, I permeate you of Me infusing your interior life with the knowledge of God Who is Love and Who gives Life.”

Enter the real World – seven levels
Ref: Conchiglia March4th, 2013

Jesus is speaking: “In front of you daughter, you see another Dimension, and in this Dimension you see Me with the eyes of the Soul.

I am Jesus your God of Love that invites you to enter the real world, in the world of the infinite sky to describe the wonders that no one knows and no one expects because no one has said it before. Feel your heart beat faster, no, is not the emotion although it is, is normal. The fast heart beat depends exactly on New Dimension into which you enter. The Dimension exists at multiple levels in your same space because space does not really exist. No, it is not science fiction, but Science revealed, explaining and illustrated that only ‘who’ have to hear, let him hear. Each Dimension represents the evolutionary status of consciousness that has become self-aware.

You did not say, ‘But in what world does he live?’ when you have to indicate an individual who does not seem to understand and apparently does not know how to do what seems simple to understand and to do? And you said it well because the fellow lives in a different and lower dimension.

Your World, may well be represented by an onion that layer by layer browse many dimensions. If an onion was inhabited there would be ‘beings’ living in a layer and others on another layer and so on, yet it is the same onion. So it is out of the onion, so it is out of the World.

If you look to the sky, the void does not exist. I have already said it; the invisible to your eyes just means that as a result of the genetic modification to your eye sight you do not see what exist in a different Dimension. If you had the original eye sight you would see that the Heavens seen by the Saints, the sons of Mine, the first Heaven, second Heaven, and so on.

Perhaps you heard the expression ‘I am in seventh heaven’ when you want to express your utmost happiness? And then you can only imagine what happiness is and I do not say that contentment is in other Dimensions? Each Dimension is a true place where there is true and real life as you live it on Earth today.

What separates one Dimension from the other it just pure energy. The light-years are not to be taken into consideration to calculate the distance and the time that as time does not exist. The energy, as thought, flickers from one extreme to another extreme in only an instant nullifying in fact every distance and every time. If your thoughts would turn now to when you were a child you would not have any barriers of time and space and years passed.

The same is true if your thought, now you would turn to when you are in another Dimension, yes, because we go, to this Dimension may be either higher or lower level depending on how you have lived on Earth. Blessed are the clean of heart, for they shall see God.”
Genesis 1:3: The Creation of Light

Genesis 1:3: Then God said, “Let there be light,” and there was light.

Mysterious Light
Ref. MV-Lessons on the Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 91-92

“Then there was light. Not solar, nor lunar, nor stellar light. The Sun, moon, and stars are creatures younger than the terrestrial globe. After their creation, the sky, that is the elements of ‘air,’ was cleansed of every residue of the primitive cloud, and the stars and planets shined by giving vital elements to the terrestrial globe with their splendor.

However, light existed before them, a particular light, independent from every other source that was not of the will of God. A Mysterious light which only the angels saw work its mysterious operations in favor of the terrestrial globe. Because none of the things created by God are useless, nor has anything been created without a reason of perfect order. Thus, if before there was light and not the stars and the planets, it is a sign that the Perfection wanted this creative order for a useful and sensible reason. Then came: the sun, the moon, and the stars.”

The Lord reveals to us that a light, a mysterious light, which only the angels could see, working its mysterious operations in favor of the creation of the terrestrial globe, Earth. This light existed before the sun, moon, and stars. This mysterious light was the light of Christ, who is the Light of the world.

Genesis 1:1-3: The earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, while a mighty wind swept over the waters. Then God said, “Let there be light,” and there was light. God saw how good the light was.
Let there be Light

PMG 4:565

Jesus is speaking: “I am the Light of the world because I am the Son of the Father, Who is the Father of the Light. A son is always like the father who begot him and is of the same nature. Likewise I am like and have the same nature as He Who begot Me. God, the Most High, the perfect and Infinite Spirit is, Light of Love, Light of Wisdom, Light of Power, Light of Goodness, Light of Beauty. He is the Father of Lights, and he who lives of Him and in Him can see, because he is in the Light, as it is God’s desire that men should see. And He gave man intelligence and feelings, that he might see the Light, that is, God Himself, and understand and love it.”

Since the earth was already created when the first recorded command of God was given, let there be light would pertain to the creation of the Sun. “And He gave man eyes, that he might see the most beautiful of all things created, the perfection of elements, through which Creation is visible and which is one of the first actions of God Creator and bears the most visible sign of Him Who Created it: light, the incorporeal, bright, beatific, consoling, necessary light, as is necessary, the Father of all: God Eternal and Most High.” PMG 4-565 It is the first time that the Word shows Himself: “Let there be light, and there was light.” PMG 4:465

“As light on the shapeless earth made possible plants and animals, so My Light makes eternal life possible for spirits. I, being the light that I am, create Life in you and I preserve it, I increase it, I re-create you in it, I transform you, I take you to the Abode of God along the ways of wisdom, of love, of sanctification.” PMG 4:565

The Mystery of “the two Light’s”

From the very beginning of creation, the angels saw in the heavens this mysterious light that was moving about in space as the elements, and later the planets, were being formed. They didn’t fully realize the significance of this light until they heard, for the first time, a very powerful voice echo like thunder through space that said, “Let there be light.” And there was light. This light is the greatest resemblance of Him who created it: God our Father who dwells in unapproachable light.

“And He gave man eyes, that he might see the most beautiful of all things created, the perfection of elements, through which Creation is visible and which is one of the first actions of God Creator and bears the most visible sign of Him Who Created it: light, the incorporeal, bright, beatific, consoling, necessary light, as is necessary, the Father of all: God Eternal and Most High.” (PMG 4-565) It is the first time that the Word shows Himself: “Let there be light, and there was light.” PMG 4:465

Perhaps the mystery of the light is the fact that there are two lights, one in front of the other: Jesus, who is the visible image of God, shows himself as the spiritual Light of the world, while the Sun being visible to man, is the physical light of the world.
“For in him the darkness is passing away and the real light has already begun to
shine ... Jesus is identified with the creative command that set history and creation in
motion: Let there be light!” - St Thomas Aquinas Summa Theologiae: 64-65

I am the root and stock of David: I am the morning star. Psalm89:39-53
How long, O Lord? Will you hide yourself for ever?

If you hold up the Eucharist to the sky, next to the Sun, you will find that they
are very similar in size. Do you think this is a coincidence? Especially since the sun is so
enormous. Is the Sun a sign that has been leading man to the Eucharist from the
beginning of Creation? The similarity of the two lights exists because the Eucharist is the
Word that became flesh in Jesus Christ who is the visible image of God who is the Light
of the world, and the Sun which bears the most visible sign of Him who created it, is
light.

Light of the World
PMG 4:565

Jesus is speaking about the light: “By an order of His Thought God created the
firmament and the earth, that is, the mass of the atmosphere and the mass of dust, the
incorporeal (having no material body or form) and the corporal, what is very light and what is
heavy, but both still barren, void and shapeless, because they were enveloped in
darkness, devoid of stars and lifeless. But to give the earth and the firmament their true
features, to make of them two beautiful things, useful and suitable for the continuation
of His creative work, the Spirit of God hovering over the cosmos shouts, and it is the first time that the Word shows Himself: ‘Let there be light’ and there was light, good, beneficial, strong during the day, dim at night, everlasting until the end of time. (This is the creation of the sun)

If at the beginning of creation God wanted light on His works, if to make light He used His Word, if God grants those, whom He loves, His most perfect likeness: light, material joyful incorporeal light, wise sanctifying spiritual light, is it possible that He has not given the Son of His love what He is Himself? Really, the Most High has given everything to Him in Whom He is well pleased from eternity, and He wanted the Light to be the first and the most powerful of everything, so that without waiting to ascend to Heaven men might know the wonder of the Trinity, that makes the blissful heavenly choruses sing because of the harmonious joy they admire, and that angels enjoy contemplating the Light, that is, God, the Light that fills Paradise making all its inhabitants blissful.

I am the Light of the world. He who follows Me will not walk in darkness but will have the light of Life! As light on the shapeless earth made it possible for plants and animals, so My Light makes eternal life possible for spirits. I, being the light that I am, create Life in you and I preserve it, I increase it, I re-create you in it, I transform you, I take you to the Abode of God along the ways of wisdom, of love, of sanctification. He who has the Light, possesses God, because the Light is one thing with Charity and he who has Charity has God. He who has the Light possesses Life, because God is there where His beloved Son is welcomed.”

John the Baptist sees the Miracle of the Sun
MV Vol. 2:104

“John is a man. But the Grace, which the Fire of God communicated to him, purifying him in his mother’s womb, as the lips of the prophet were cleansed by the Seraph, so that he might precede the Messiah without leaving the stench of original sin along the royal way of Christ, that Grace has given John the wings of an angel and Penance has made them grow, suppressing at the same time the human weight which his nature of a man born of a woman had retained. John, therefore, from the cavern where he preached penance, with his spirit married to Grace burning in his body, can ascend to the top of the arch beyond which is God, the Most High Lord our God, and dominating the past centuries, the present day and the future, with the voice of a prophet and the eye of an eagle that can stare at the eternal sun and recognize it, he can announce: ‘There is the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world.’”
The Mysterious Light of Creation Shows Himself

Now you will see before your very eyes the sun being transformed into the Son as the mysterious Light of creation shows Himself.

The white line going across the picture is the atmosphere of the earth. Above this line is space, below this line is the planet Earth. Science was filming the atmosphere of Earth while the sun was rising. At the same time, you will see the sun transform itself into the Son!

Then God said, “Let there be light,” and there was light. God saw how good the light was.

The sun bears the most visible sign of Him who created it: Light. PMG 4-565

The Eucharist will be the source from which will burst forth all His divine power, and it will become the new sun, which will shed its bright rays in hearts and souls and then in the lives of individuals, families, and nations, making of all one single flock, docile and meek, whose sole shepherd will be Jesus.

“When the Warning comes, people will see and believe that there are two suns. This event will be seen by humanity, and there will be heard the sound of thunder, and it will seem that the two suns will collide.”
Ref: MariaDivineMercy 4/6/2013

The Sun being transformed into the Son; Jesus is the Eucharistic Sun

The Lord is revealing to us that the descent of the New Jerusalem – The City of God, is close at hand.
God the Father is speaking: “The grace of the word reception ensures you also My protection, and you don’t need to be afraid, to labor under a mistake, because I know your desire for truth and don’t give you wrong teachings, though you are surrounded constantly by forces of darkness, that would like to dim or extinguish the light from above. But they are powerless against the light, that is beaming them and they flee, because they recognize its source. But again and again they will try to embarrass your thoughts, which I however straighten right again and again, because it is your task, to serve Me in My vineyard and thus to spread the truth, which I Myself transmit you from above, because you people need it for your maturing. I alone can only teach you right and likewise the beings of light too, through them flows the same light of love, that emanates from Me, and therefore they always can only emit the same light, that they take in reception by Myself, to let it radiate in the darkness. And so you are allowed indubitably to take on everything approaching you from above. You only have to know, that it is hard, to reveal secrets of creation to you, as long as you’re still quite ignorant in it. For you don’t know the laws of nature, even to know their effects, and even you know less about the divine spiritual laws. You don’t know about the sources of light in the universe, which have a purely spiritual origin and yet their effect can be seen by the earthly eye. And therefore you can not be given a clear explanation, whether and when the rays of the sun experience a reduction in their radiation force, whether and when the radiation force is entirely abolished. Human calculations are not applicable, although alleged evidences believe to justify them. The radiation area of the sun is also limited, because it is a spiritual light stream that is interrupted, when the lawful order is not complied, where the fundamental principle of eternal order turns off an efficacy, what you people can not recognize and understand in your limited state. Spiritual processes in the cosmos will always correspond with earthly or apparent processes, because everything is in closest relationships with one another. And so there would be no obstacles or limitations for the irradiation of sunlight, if not by a certain resistance of the still immature spiritual, from that the world bodies exist in the universe more or less, the light force or radiation force would be reduced or prevented. But the nature of the world bodies is just caused in the composition of immature spiritual substances, and the degree of their completion determines also the degree of illumination, and so even more perfect creations are self-radiant heavenly bodies, because they can get light from the original source, without finding resistance, and therefore also those light sources can emit light again. So also any dark star can be illuminated, and it is also illuminated in the proportion, as life must be ensured on those stars. But a permanent illumination would rather endanger life, therefore these floodlighting must also be kept within limits, which explains the alternation of day and night in the spiritual sense. However all processes in the universe can be explained earthly, but a certain requirement for understanding must be there. People must know, that all the stars in the region of the sun also receive the light of this, but always in the explained manner before, that they only get light, that is necessary for life and existence, according to the mental state of its inhabitants, and that this illumination of light can be seen sometimes by inhabitants of other heavenly bodies. But in no way a world body, a star, prevents or limits the illumination of one another, as you humans imagine, for every star is the sun accessible in the same proportion, but its illumination is determined by the star itself, which so characterizes the spiritual state of its substance. Because the sunlight is spiritual radiation, the sun is a self-luminous heavenly body that is constantly fed by the source of the original strength
and the light and forwards the strength and lightning stream constantly. It is well visible in the firmament, but already a creation of spiritual nature, where perfect spiritual engages in the preservation of the works of creation, which are in the range of this sun. Now spiritual radiation penetrates everything, also each matter, but it stops in its efficiency, where a resistance offers in form of unspiritual substance, as any matter is meant. But this substance would never hinder or stop floodlighting, to meet other stars again, that is a false idea that a star could prove to be a shadow for another. But laws exist according to divine order, and these laws will also endure eternally, as long as there a material creation exists. And where it is only possible, I will inform you people also of that, when the maturity of your souls allows this and when I consider it salutary for you and your soul.”

Sun Systems: Fire-spewing Mountain - Eruptions
BD No. 0495 of 07/05/1938 taken from book 10

God the Father is speaking: “The whole of the solar system is also in accord with the great work of Creation. Were you to envision all the sun systems, your intellect would truly be unable to cope, for these dimensions would surpass the human being’s thinking ability! You deem the measurements of Earth alone considerably more extensive than you can rationally take in. Yet the Earth can be called tiny compared to the size of the smallest sun systems. But countless such sun systems exist in the infinite space which differ in their dimension, composition and kind from each other, yet in their final purpose they all serve the same objective of furthering the steady higher development of the beings which, having emerged from God, separated themselves from God and shall return to God again. Every solar body is an infinitely enlarged similar work of creation as Earth. Only a few people can understand that the sun can be compared to a fire-spewing mountain. However, this comparison will only be understandable if one considers the fact that the Creator very wisely also designed the interior of such a mountain so that it can be the abode of countless beings, and that the activity of these beings consists of producing endless eruptions through which the whole composition of the mountain undergoes constant changes again, so that a proportion of beings can shed their cover again and open up their path to other regions on and above the earth. Consequently, such eruptions happen with the Creator’s full approval, and the activity of anyone who loses his earthly life due to such occurrences is limited and they will move on to a different opportunity for development. The solar worlds are likewise creations which the Lord has placed into space for the purpose of constantly new arising heavenly bodies. Every sun is continually active. In its interior rage unimaginable forces whose elementary power continuously throws parts of their interior into space, these are seized again by spiritual beings and shaped into entirely independently active heavenly bodies which are equipped with everything that is required by the living creations which are intended to live there again. However, each of such heavenly bodies will always be in a certain connection with the sun from which it had emerged. Just as the mass thrown out by a fire-spewing mountain always falls back to the earth’s surface again due to gravity, so will the released matter from the sun always remain within the vicinity of this sun due to this sun’s gravitational pull, and will also be constantly nourished by this very sun with light and warmth, without which no heavenly body in the universe would be able to survive. Merely the purpose of each world will vary, insofar as
constantly different living conditions will also result in constantly different achievements, and such an abode is precisely what is required by those spiritual beings which, in a certain sense, need to continue their development, which are sent there by the Creator of Heaven and Earth in realization of what they are lacking. The universe is endless, countless spiritual beings exist, and thus time and again the opportunity must be offered to all of them to attain their set goal. Space is infinite, infinite is the power of God, and infinite is His love for His living creations. For this reason everything has been created out of God’s love and power.”

Cosmos – Moon - Part 1
BD No. 7957 of 08/04/1961 taken from book 83

God the Father is speaking: “Even the slightest lack of clarity has a negative effect, for it causes doubt in a person and darkens the light which should illuminate his heart. Nevertheless, an influx of light will always occur when the heart opens itself to accept its rays. Where lack of clarity exists, an explanation needs to be given, for I do not want a person who wants to think correctly to get confused. But neither do I want error to be spread where only serving the truth is wanted. Yet, no need for any of you to worry about this when I instruct your thoughts to Myself and you only pass on what I Myself Am telling you? The fact that you yourselves cannot intellectually grasp everything need not alarm you, for as long as you are not perfect as yet, your thinking will still be limited and unable to reconcile your previous convictions with the explanations I give to you, if they concern areas which science believes to have disclosed. However, even science cannot deny the fact that many still unexplored things exist in the cosmos. And what it believes to have explored lacks proof, for the evidence it produced is wrong. This also includes the calculations they made about the distance and the relationship of the Moon’s position to Earth, and it is difficult to give a right explanation to those of you humans who have acquired the knowledge you believe you can prove. By merely considering the constant rotation of Earth around its own axis, you will have to realize that the Moon is indeed a satellite of Earth but nevertheless an entirely independent star from Earth, which circles within the region of the same Sun as the Earth, thus it also receives continually light from it. The Earth is neither able to stop this flow of light nor to restrict it. Yet the inhabitants of earth can more or less see the Moon, according to the position of Earth, which it occupies during its rotation around itself. The illumination of light takes place in lawful order, and the stars also take their orbit in lawful order. Therefore the same events occur in intervals, the same natural cycle of day and night. But you humans should not forget that everything is in motion, that nothing stands still in the whole universe and that these movements also happen according to law and yet the stars which appear to be constant in the sky can be observed by you humans, which might, purely physically, make a constant rotation of Earth debatable. And yet the Earth rotates around itself, but it will remain an eternal mystery which you human will never be able to solve. You can certainly always assume and believe to produce proof, but this proof will never be right, on account of which you will never succeed in taking possession of other
stars whose laws are entirely different to those on Earth and which therefore also exclude the possibility that you humans can 'live' there, after all, the living conditions differ on each heavenly body and are only suitable for the beings living there and correspond to their spiritual state. Every law is known to Me alone as well as to all spirits of light who receive this knowledge from Me. But you humans will only know everything when you have entered the kingdom of light and your thinking is no longer limited.”

Cosmos – Moon - Part 2

Ref: BD No. 7960 of 08/07/1961 taken from book 83

God the Father is speaking:
“The moon constantly accompanies the earth on its orbit, but it is not constantly within the range of the Sun’s light because spiritually it is further away from the Sun than the Earth. The Earth circles the Sun and, due to its own revolution; the rays of the Sun will always affect a different part of Earth, thus resulting in light and darkness. Although the moon’s orbit is the same, it nevertheless takes longer to circle, in other words, it cannot be exposed to the Sun’s rays at the same time. Instead, they will only ever affect that part of the moon which, during its course as the Earth’s satellite, can catch the Sun’s light. This is because its distance from Earth results in the fact that it requires more time to complete its orbit and so it cannot be affected by the sun's rays at the same time but in intervals instead, depending on the Earth’s position in relation to the Sun. Thus the Earth does not stand as a shadow between Sun and Moon, instead, the Earth reflects the light it receives from the Sun during its rotation and which can be received by the Moon depending on its position to the Earth, and this always changes because, although the Moon accompanies the Earth as a satellite, its velocity is not the same as the Earth revolves around itself. It accompanies the Earth in the universe but it does not rotate at the same speed, therefore it cannot always be visible to the inhabitants on Earth either. However, it will always be able to receive the sun’s rays of light, which cannot be restricted by any other planets. The Moon certainly always accompanies the Earth, but on account of Earth’s constant rotation it is, from time to time, not visible to the inhabitants on earth, it cannot be seen, not because the Sun does not shine on it or because it happens to be within the shadow of Earth, but because the inhabitants on earth themselves happen to be on the other side of Earth in relation to the Moon due to the Earth’s rotation and because, on the other hand, they can also see the Sun and the Moon at the same time if this side of the Earth faces the Moon, the latter of which is possible during the day as well as at the night, but this does not depend on the Sun’s illumination, instead, it depends on the position of the Moon in relation to the Earth.”
Genesis 1:6-8: The Second Day of Creation

Then God said, “Let there be a dome in the middle of the waters, to separate one body of water from the other.” And so it happened: God made the dome, and it separated the water above the dome from the water below it. God called the dome “the sky.” Evening came, and morning followed - the second day.

Vacuum in Space – Atmosphere

God the Father is speaking: “Thus, outside the earth is a vacuum, the determination of it is, to capture the spiritual beings, so that they return back for the shape they want to escape, and therefore have to be in the immediate vicinity of earth. This space is a separation from all, that still remains in the matter and of the matter itself, and the spiritual realm out-of-matter and will already therefore externally isolate the earth completely in the space of all creation, that is indeed the same way as the earth is alive, but is moving in completely different laws of compulsion, as they are understandable for the inhabitants of the earth. Therefore it is impossible in any way to overcome this vacuum of human hand and to make it passable through inventions of any kind, because whose task is taken spiritually, to roll back all from the earth outgoing to earth again, but taken earthly this space would not save the necessary fluid for human life, which is indispensable for the body of people. An attempt to conquer the limit drawn by God’s will, will inevitably also mean the earthly end of the attempter, because everything can remain living, beings and matter, as long as it is in the area of such a life and matter sheltering earth, but outside this the conditional elements of life are missing, out again wise thoughtful welfare by the creator for everything spiritual, that seeks to escape his destiny and would prolong his way of purification just endlessly. The air-void dominant spiritual world is in a certain state of maturity, in which it resides with the function for such defiance of all earthly things. The farther the beings develop themselves, the more responsible richer is its task, but this is always based on the welfare of the take care of beings and therefore is achieved with zeal and love. But never the man as such will succeed, to get a usable area, which completely contradicts the nature of the earth and therefore also does not offer the slightest possibility of life, and all research of this area will stay unsuccessful, respectively will result in the physical end of the researchers.”

Creation of the Sky

The creation of the sky was no small event. Let’s examine the sky/atmosphere God created for a better appreciation of His Mighty work:

With the temperature of space being -455°F (the temperature at which molecules themselves stop moving) the water covering earth cooled and entered into its first ice age. It literally became a planet of ice.
God created the dome over the earth, which he calls the sky. Under the dome contains the atmosphere of the earth which separated earth from every other planet. The atmosphere, one hundred thousand feet thick, is absolutely necessary in order to sustain life on earth. It wasn’t until the atmosphere was created that the earth was delivered from its current state as a planet of ice.

Even the solar radiation of the sun wasn’t enough to melt the ice on earth because the solar rays were reflected back into space. What the earth’s atmosphere needed was carbon dioxide. When we look at Venus, we will see that it’s the carbon dioxide in the atmosphere and its location from the sun that causes the planet to heat up to extreme temperatures of about 900°F.

Carbon dioxide was provided on earth by a series of volcanoes that were set off when the plate tectonics started to move. These volcanoes were strong enough and hot enough to break through the icy crust of the earth. Large amounts of carbon dioxide entered the atmosphere which would cause escaping infrared radiation to reflect back to the earth and begin the process of heating its surface. In time, over millions of years, the atmosphere and the water would begin to purify themselves, which would make the earth habitable for life.

Was the atmosphere actually created this way? I don’t know. Is it possible that it happened this way? Yes. The important point here is for you to think! In the scripture it says, in one sentence, that God made the sky. But, as you can see, this was no small event. Only God could create with such perfection the atmosphere that fully supports life on earth. It would be absurd to think that something of this complexity could happen by random chance.
Where does the oxygen come from that fills the atmosphere? Robert Frouin, a research meteorologist with the Scripps Institution of Oceanography in La Jolla, California, said "understanding the process by which phytoplankton obtains ocean nutrients is important to understanding the link between the ocean and global climate. Phytoplankton needs two things for photosynthesis and thus their survival: energy from the Sun and nutrients from the water. Phytoplankton absorbs both across their cell walls. In the process of photosynthesis, phytoplankton release oxygen into the water. Half of the world's oxygen is produced via phytoplankton photosynthesis. The other half is produced via photosynthesis on land by trees, shrubs, grasses, and other plants."

The atmosphere holds the oxygen which was produced from water and vegetation so man could breathe. It separates one body of water from the other: the water in the atmosphere from the water of the sea. It prevents the upper atmosphere of water from evaporating into space. The atmosphere combined with the magnetic field of the earth provides enough protection to dissolve most meteorites from hitting the earth surface. It also allows just enough infrared radiation to maintain an average Earth temperature of 61°F.

[For a better appreciation of God's creation, let's journey into space and take a look at the atmosphere on other planets within our cosmic neighborhood.]

**Our Cosmic Neighborhood**

"From our small world we have gazed upon the cosmic ocean for thousands of years. Ancient astronomers observed points of light that appeared to move among the stars. They called these objects "planets," meaning wanderers, and named them after Roman deities—Jupiter, king of the gods; Mars, the god of war; Mercury, messenger of the gods; Venus, the goddess of love and beauty, and Saturn, father of Jupiter and god of agriculture. The stargazers also observed comets with sparkling tails, and meteors or shooting stars apparently falling from the sky."
Since the invention of the telescope, three more planets have been discovered in our solar system: Uranus (1781), Neptune (1846), and, now downgraded to a dwarf planet, Pluto (1930). In addition, there are thousands of small bodies such as asteroids and comets. Most of the asteroids orbit in a region between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter, while the home of comets lies far beyond the orbit of Pluto, in the Oort Cloud.

The four planets closest to the sun—Mercury, Venus, Earth, and Mars—are called the terrestrial planets because they have solid rocky surfaces. The four large planets beyond the orbit of Mars—Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, and Neptune—are called gas giants. Tiny, distant, Pluto has a solid but icier surface than the terrestrial planets. Nearly every planet—and some of the moons—has an atmosphere. Earth’s atmosphere is primarily nitrogen and oxygen. Venus has a thick atmosphere of carbon dioxide, with traces of poisonous gases such as sulfur dioxide. Mars’s carbon dioxide atmosphere is extremely thin. Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, and Neptune are primarily hydrogen and helium. When Pluto is near the sun, it has a thin atmosphere, but when Pluto travels to the outer regions of its orbit, the atmosphere freezes and collapses to the planet’s surface. In that way, Pluto acts like a comet.” Ref: NASA/JPL

The following planetary information was obtained from www.planetsalive.com

**MERCURY**

Mercury: the closest planet to the sun and its range in surface temperature is so great, it can melt lead.

Mercury is the innermost planet in the Solar System. It is also the smallest, and its orbit is the most eccentric (that is, the least perfectly circular) of the eight planets. It orbits the Sun once in about 88 Earth days, completing three rotations about its axis for every two orbits. Mercury’s surface is heavily cratered and similar in appearance to Earth’s Moon, indicating that it has been geologically inactive for billions of years. Mercury has a weak magnetic field and a trace of atmosphere—a trillionth the density of Earth’s atmosphere and composed chiefly of argon, neon and helium.

Due to its near lack of an atmosphere to retain heat, Mercury’s surface experiences the steepest temperature gradient of all the planets, ranging (872° F) on Mercury’s sunlit side to (-298°F) on the dark side. This range in surface temperature (1170°F) is the largest for a single body in the solar system and is enough to melt lead.

Mercury’s axis has the smallest tilt of any of the Solar System’s planets, but Mercury’s orbital eccentricity is the largest. The seasons on the planet’s surface are caused by the variation of its distance from the Sun rather than by the axial tilt, which is the main cause of seasons on Earth and other planets.

“Detailed maps of Mercury’s cliffs and ditches show the solar system’s innermost and smallest planet Mercury has lost much more of its size due to cooling over four billion years than scientists thought.” Edited by Bonnie Malkin
VENUS

Venus is a living hell with temperatures of 900°F and a cloud cover of sulphuric acid. At high altitudes, winds reach speeds as high as 225 mph. Venus is the second closest planet to the Sun and our nearest planetary neighbor. It can be very easily seen from the Earth. It is often called the Evening or Morning star and is often the brightest object visible in the sky. We cannot see the surface because it is shrouded in thick clouds of sulfuric acid.

Venus has an atmosphere which, at the surface, has a pressure 90 times that of the Earth’s. Unlike the Earth’s atmosphere, which is mainly composed of nitrogen and oxygen, Venus’s atmosphere is made up of 97 percent carbon dioxide with most of the remainder being nitrogen and argon.

Less than half of the infrared radiation is released back to space. The effect is to raise the temperature of the planet by a massive (900°F). Compare this to Earth, where its own ‘greenhouse effects’ raises the temperature by only (63°F).

EARTH

Earth is estimated to be 5-10 billion years old—man approximately 6-15 thousand years old.

From the perspective we have on Earth, our planet appears to be big and sturdy with an endless ocean of air. From space, astronauts often have the impression that earth is small with a thin, fragile layer of atmosphere. For a space traveler, the Earth’s distinguishing features are the blue waters, brown and green land masses, clouds set against a black background. Many dream of traveling in space and viewing the wonders of the universe. In reality, all of us are space travelers. Our spaceship is planet earth, traveling at the speed of (67,000 mph).

Earth is the 3rd planet from the Sun at a distance of approximately 93 million miles. It takes 365 days for the earth to travel around the Sun and 24 hours for the earth to make a complete revolution. It has a diameter of 7,973 miles. Our atmosphere is composed of 78 percent nitrogen, 21 percent oxygen and 1 percent argon, water vapor and other constituents. Earth is the oldest planet in the universe and the only planet in the solar system to harbor life. Our planet’s rapid spin and molten nickel-iron core give rise to an extensive magnetic field, which, along with the atmosphere, shields us from nearly all of the harmful radiation coming from the sun and other stars. Earth’s atmosphere protects us from meteors, most of which burn up before they can strike the surface. Earth’s average temperature is 61°F

The Earth’s interior is composed of four layers, three solid and one liquid—not magma but molten metal, nearly as hot as the surface of the sun. The deepest layer is a solid iron ball, about 1,500 miles (2,400 kilometers) in diameter. Although this inner core is white hot, the pressure is so high the iron cannot melt. The inner core is predicted to
have very high thermal and electrical conductivity, a nonspherical shape, and frequency-dependent properties; also, it may be partially molten. It may be essential for the existence of the magnetic field and for polarity reversals of this field.

The earth’s interior is made up of: the outermost layer of the earth (20-30 miles) thick under the continent and (3-6 miles) under the ocean. The mantle, a layer of denser melted rock, is 1800 miles thick. The core is made up of an outer fluid layer and a solid inner iron region.

Magnetic fields are generated by planets with molten inner or outer cores. The strength is determined by the size of the core and rotation rate of the planet. For example, the Earth has a strong magnetic field because it has a large core and high rotation rate. Mercury has a weak field since it has a large core, but very slow rotation rate (56 days). Venus has almost no magnetic field because even though it has a large core, its rotation rate is extremely low (243 days).

MARS

Mars’ diameter is only slightly more than half of Earth’s.

Mars is the fourth planet from the sun and the last of the Terrestrial planets. Its axial tilt is similar to Earth’s, which leads to a pattern of seasons similar to our own. Yet it also exhibits a more elliptical orbit which contributes to a greater range in temperatures.

Differing values have been reported for the average temperature on Mars, with a common value being \(-55°C \, (-67°F)\). Surface temperatures have been estimated from the Viking Orbiter Infrared Thermal Mapper data; this gives extremes from a warmest of \(27°C \, (81°F)\) to \(-143°C \, (-225°F)\) at the winter polar caps. Actual temperature measurements from the Viking Orbiter range from \(-17.2°C \, (1.0°F)\) to \(-107°C \, (-161°F)\).

Mars’ diameter is only a little more than half of Earth’s. The Martian surface is very old and cratered like the Moon’s. Many scientists believe that current conditions on the planet, including ultraviolet solar radiation, very low levels of moisture, and its specific soil chemistry make life there impossible.

Carbon dioxide predominates at 95 percent, with nitrogen and argon also present in measurable amounts. Throughout its year, Mars is host to numerous dust storms, and as Mars nears the sun at perigee (the point in any orbit nearest to the body being orbited), its temperatures and wind speed rise to extremes and the whole planet can become enveloped in flying dust. Ref: Wikipedia Encyclopedia
JUPITER

Galileo launched a probe to land on the surface of Jupiter. The probe boiled away when it entered Jupiter’s lower atmosphere.

Jupiter is the fifth planet from the sun and the largest in the solar system. It is more than 10 times the diameter of the Earth and more than 300 times its mass. In fact, the mass of Jupiter is almost 2.5 times that of all the outer planets. Jupiter rotates at a dizzying pace – once every 9 hours and 55 minutes. The massive planet takes almost 12 Earth years to complete a journey around the Sun. The visible surface is, in fact, the uppermost layers of clouds of methane and ammonia. The temperatures in Jupiter’s atmosphere are very cold about (-250°F) at the top of the clouds. When you descend nearer to its core the temperature rises to an estimated (50,000°F). The atmospheric pressure of Jupiter is 10 times greater than that of Earth.

SATURN

It’s a beauty with a mean streak

Saturn is the sixth planet from the sun and its diameter is approximately 85 percent of Jupiter, the largest planet. Saturn’s surface is broken into atmospheric bands similar but fainter than Jupiter’s. Like Jupiter’s Great Red Spot, Saturn also has long-lived cyclonic storms within its bands. Near the equator wind speeds reach an estimated 1100 mph.

Its atmosphere is 96.3 percent hydrogen and 3.3 percent helium. It has multiple cloud layers, including blue clouds of water ice and water vapor and higher clouds of ammonium hydrosulfide crystals, dark orange in color. Still higher, are white clouds of ammonium crystals. The temperature at the top of the gaseous clouds average (-285°F) and (-20°F) near the surface.

Saturn is a massive frigid ball of gases with ice rings hurling around at 40,000 mph. It has the most violent weather of all the planets with a solar storm bigger than the entire USA. Lightning is a million times more powerful than anything on earth. Saturn is 250 times larger than the mass of the earth and takes 29.5 years to rotate once around the sun.
URANUS

Uranus has no solid surface to stand on.

Uranus is the seventh planet of the Solar System. It has a mass 14.6 times that of the Earth and orbits the Sun every 84 years and is nearly 1.8 billion miles from the earth. Uranus is so far away that scientists knew comparatively little about it before Voyager 2. The average temperature on Uranus is -350°F.

Uranus is four times larger than the earth. With an axis of 98°, the planet is spinning on its side. Thus, one half of the planet is in the sun for 42 years while the other half spends its 42 years in darkness. There is no solid surface to stand on and no internal heat source to change its weather pattern. The debris that makes up Uranus rings travel around the planet at 45,000 mph.

NEPTUNE

Neptune is 2.68 billion miles from Earth!

Neptune is the eighth planet from the sun and the fourth largest. Like the other gas giants, it has an atmosphere rich in hydrogen and helium, but also contains nearly 1% methane which is responsible for its blue color. Neptune is 2.68 billion miles from earth and 4 times its size. One year on Neptune equals 164.8 earth years. This means it takes Neptune 164.8 years to make one trip around the Sun. Day length is 16.1 earth hours. Some of the highest winds recorded in the solar system have been recorded on Neptune at 1,000+ mph. Neptune has an interior heat source that causes these winds. The average temperature is (-240°F to -330°F).

PLUTO

Pluto’s surface conditions are equivalent to Dry Ice.

Temperatures on the surface of Pluto range from (-387° to -369°F). Pluto is believed to be 50 percent to 75 percent rock; the rest is composed of ice. Ninety-eight percent Nitrogen, solid methane and carbon monoxide make up its surface.

Because the orbit of Pluto is so strange, Pluto is sometimes close enough to the Sun for the ices on its surface to sublimate. Sublimation describes what happens when a frozen material changes to a gaseous state. (Evaporation describes what happens
when a liquid changes to gaseous state).

The most common example of sublimation is that of dry ice, which is the common name of frozen CO2. When dry ice is exposed to air, it begins to sublimate, or change to vapor, before your very eyes. This happens to dry ice because at room temperature the frozen gas would rather be a gas than a frozen solid.

When Pluto comes close enough to the sun, the surface of solid Nitrogen sublimates to produce a substantial atmosphere with winds and clouds. Because the planet is so small, however, it does not have enough gravity to bind an atmosphere for very long. Thus Pluto’s atmosphere is being rapidly produced and rapidly lost at the same time. This means that the atmosphere is not in equilibrium.

Pluto is beginning to leave the neighborhood of Neptune and drift further away from the Sun in its orbit. As it gets further from the Sun it will no longer produce an atmosphere. Thus it will soon be too late for humankind to study Pluto’s unique environment. Pluto is about 3.5 billion miles from earth.

‘Planet X/Nibiru’ the 10th Planet
Ref: JOHNTHOMAS DIDYMUS JULY 17, 2015

“There is evidence of an ongoing resurgence of the Planet X (also known as Nibiru) cataclysm conspiracy theory following the publication of new scientific studies in 2014 claiming evidence of a mysterious unnamed planet lurking beyond Pluto. The scientific claims were based on observations of gravitational influences on a group of space bodies termed the ‘extreme trans-Neptunian objects’ (ETNOs) orbiting our Sun beyond the planet Neptune.

A slew of messages and YouTube videos currently being circulated in the conspiracy theory blogosphere claims that a NASA study published in 1988 revealed details about the mysterious Planet X/Nibiru with an estimated orbital period of more than 1,000 years.

The study, according to conspiracy theorists, demonstrates that NASA and the U.S. government have been aware for decades that the rogue Planet X is coming with catastrophic consequences for humanity.

According to conspiracy theorists, recently leaked secret NASA ‘Planet X’ files reveal that the agency is aware that the gravitational influence of Planet X had disrupted the orbits of other planets during a previous passage into the inner solar system hundreds of years ago; and that the next disruptive passage into the inner solar system is imminent.
The approach of the mysterious Planet X is currently sending waves of charged ‘plasmatic energy particles’ through our solar system. The flow of energy will finally disrupt the ‘core flows’ of the Earth and trigger catastrophic changes in Earth’s climate.

We have been feeling the disruptive effects of the inbound rogue Planet X since 1996 in the form of increased seismic and volcanic activities, freak weather patterns, and natural disasters.

NASA, the Pentagon, and the CIA are aware of the approaching rogue planet. The Vatican has also been briefed, but the public is being kept in the dark about the impending apocalypse. But despite efforts to keep the information secret, there have been leaks.

The comprehensive report submitted to the White House estimates that about two-thirds of humanity will be wiped out when Planet X induces a pole-shift. Two-thirds of survivors will perish over another six months due to starvation and exposure to the elements.

Although some conspiracy theorists insist that the Planet X mentioned in the NASA files is not linked with Zecharia Sitchin’s planet Nibiru — the alleged planet of the alien Anunnaki that makes a close approach to Earth as it passes through the inner solar system on its orbital path once every 3,600 years — many conspiracy theorists insist that that NASA’s ‘Planet X’ is Nibiru.”

The Milky Way Galaxy

Light Year (LY) definition: Light travels at 186,000 mi/second = 5.88 Trillion miles/year = 1 LY. This speed would be the equivalent of traveling around the earth 7 times in one second! To travel across the Milky Way Galaxy, which is about 100,000 light years wide, you would have to travel at the speed of light.

There is no place in the Milky Way Galaxy that will sustain life except in the exact location of Earth, which can be seen in the lower picture where the bright Star is shining (upper center).

The Star shows where our Solar System is located within the Milky Way Galaxy. It is the only place in the Milky Way that will support life. Man’s lifespan is not long enough to travel through the Milky Way Galaxy into deep space.
**Solar Storms**

As you can see, there is no planet in our solar system that has an atmosphere that can support life like that of earth. The fact is, these planets were never designed, from the beginning, to support life. Another reason planets do not have much atmosphere can be related to the solar winds of space, which range from 250,000 mph to 1,000,000 mph. Once these winds sweep across the Sun, they pick up between one billion and one trillion tons of matter from the trailing edge of the Sun’s surface eruptions and slam them into planets, reducing what little atmosphere they may have.

The flame off to the right of the sun’s surface is what the solar winds pick up. It contains approximately a trillion tons of matter. Smaller image – eruption took place in 2015.

What about the earth? Do solar winds affect the earth’s atmosphere? The large magnetic field of the earth, which extends far out into space, combined with the earth’s atmosphere, protects the earth from the full force of solar storms. When a major solar storm penetrates the atmosphere of the earth, it can cause serious electromagnetic disruptions all over the world: including, electronic devices which rely on the Earth’s magnetic field to function properly. Under the right conditions, solar storms can last for days.
A solar storm is an event in which activity on the Sun interferes with the Earth’s magnetic field. Solar storms occur as a result of events such as solar flares and coronal mass ejections. These events generate a so-called “solar wind,” a gust of charged particles which can slam into the Earth’s magnetic field in hours if the solar wind happens to be traveling in the direction of Earth. The collision can generate quite a light show as a geomagnetic storm erupts, and the storm can last for several days under the right conditions.

The most severe solar storm in recorded history occurred in 1859. Known as the Carrington Event, this solar storm caused electromagnetic disruptions all over the world, including auroras over the equator and interruption of scientific devices which relied on the Earth’s magnetic field to function properly. Lesser storms were also recorded in 1958, 1989, and 2000, and these events were associated with interruptions of the electrical grid and damage to satellites.

Concerns about solar storms revolve around their ability to disrupt electrical systems. A severe solar storm could effectively knock out the electricity grid across a large swath of the world, which would have very serious consequences, as it would be necessary to replace large portions of the grid. Solar storms can also disrupt communications and satellites, and they can be very dangerous for astronauts if astronauts happen to be in the way of the solar wind.

In the event of a major solar storm, however, there is little that could be done to prepare or prevent damage.

**Aurora Borealis**

When solar storms strike the magnetic field of the Earth, they produce a phenomenon that is visible on earth as an Aurora Borealis which is also referred to as the Northern Lights. When a major solar storm penetrates the earth’s atmosphere, it causes very serious electromagnetic disruptions all over the world.
God the Father is speaking: “Over the course of time changes occurred on earth, both in the interior as well as on the surface of earth. These are the result of the uninterrupted rotations around its own axis which caused shifts, and the elevations and depressions they created are still changing even now, that is, they are still shifting locally. Thus the Earth does not retain its external shape but has already gone through the most diverse alterations, even though its structure has remained the same. In contrast, the Earth’s interior is constantly active and also triggers changes on the surface of the earth from within. This can be noticed in the vegetation which, throughout millennia, has also changed and will never remain the same, even though these changes do not happen over a short period of time and therefore cannot be observed by people during their life on earth. These changes generally occur so slowly and are barely noticeable to the eye, and therefore require a very long time. However, every now and then unbridled activity erupts in the interior of the Earth and sudden transformations manifest themselves which cause immense destructions on the Earth’s surface and signify fear and horror for people. In that case the hitherto solid form dissolves and, incapable of withstanding the elements violent activity inside the Earth, is pushed with enormous force from the inside of the Earth to the surface where it spreads out and, in a completely new environment, tries to adapt itself to the existing mass of earth or to creations in nature. Such elementary eruptions also understandably result in a complete transformation on the Earth’s surface. They destroy the existing environment, revoke people’s established order and result in inconceivable chaos which causes severe confusion and anguish in people because they are unable to cope with such eruptions and are thereby thrown into entirely different living conditions. However, a transformation of the Earth’s surface has become necessary, although it can only be spiritually explained, since, from an earthly point of view, there is no recognizable progress in such a transformation, only a destruction and annihilation of what exists. But spiritually it is hugely significant.

The spiritual substance from within the Earth pushes upwards; it wants to start its process of development in the form. And it will need to live through countless phases
until the spiritual substance can reach the final stage of its embodiment on earth. Having been bound in the hardest form for an unimaginably long time, the still undeveloped spiritual substance is given a certain amount of freedom so that it can release itself from this solid form, which it subsequently does with elementary force. People experience this manifestation of strength as a natural disaster which is, depending on its extent, more or less devastating for them. Although all spiritual substances will be constrained again, at first they will nevertheless inundate the plant and animal world and, to an even greater degree, people, by disturbing their tranquility and posing a grave danger to them. It takes a very long time before such a change on the Earth’s surface takes place, because it cannot happen arbitrarily, but only with God’s permission, which He gives when the higher development of the spiritual beings grinds to a halt. That is, when the being is in possession of free will and free will is no longer made use of. Then a balance must come about, and this happens when the still immature spiritual substance pushes the already further advanced spiritual substance into further phases of development, so that the latter will soon attain possession of free will. For this reason the Earth will always have to expect such changes from time to time and in different places, which have their natural origin in the constant activity of the elements in the interior of the Earth. Hence, the enlightened person understands natural disasters, for he not only realizes the earthly, but also the spiritual necessity for this very same occurrence, and will always look upon them as God’s reign. He is aware of the necessity for higher development of the spiritual substances as well as of the beings low spiritual state, which animate the earth in the final external form, and of the opportunity for their deliverance. Yet such natural events, which result in immense destruction, are incomprehensible to unenlightened people and neither do they recognize the spiritual nor the earthly value. Consequently, they will be horror-struck when the Earth’s interior begins to move and they find themselves utterly helpless and at the mercy of the raging of the elements. Nevertheless, that which was decided from the very beginning will come to pass without fail as soon as the Creator of Heaven and Earth deems the time to be right.”

The Earth’s interior is constantly active and also triggers changes on the surface of the earth from within.
God the Father is speaking: "In order to make the spiritual substance feel its banishment, it must become aware of both its own state of restraint as well as the freedom of will. It must experience the first as pain and regard the other as worth striving for, then it will always participate to release itself from the first state in order to attain freedom of will. So the beings of light must transmit the latter to works of creation whose spiritual substance still lingers in darkness. These must find the ray of light agreeable and constantly desire more. Hence, it must want to ascend to where there is an abundance of light. However, every emanation of light is the result of helpful activity, that is, in some form or other the activity of being of service must come first before emanations of light can happen on a regular basis. Although every external form is exposed to the emanation of light, yet the entirely hardened spirit turns away from it and takes an infinitely long time before it opens itself to the light, i.e., until it allows itself to be affected by it. But then the desire for it will burst through with elementary power. Then everything that previously was down below will push towards the surface and strive for light, and the spiritual substance desiring it will be released from its long captivity through eruptions and will continue its process of development in a different external form. And such a powerful eruption is approaching the Earth, whose bound spiritual beings long for liberation, for light and helpful activity. And the spiritual substance languishing down below in darkness especially strives upwards when the spiritual beings on earth fail to make use of the abundance of light it receives and effectively ignores it. Then the immature spiritual substances will seek to acquire this abundance of light and strive for it with elementary power, which manifests itself through natural disasters and creates fundamental changes with regards to spiritual currents. For then the spiritual substance, having reached the earth’s surface, will detect every spiritual current to a large extent and will therefore withdraw spiritual strength from already higher developed beings which disregard this strength and make no use of it, which often signifies these beings’ physical death on earth. The immature spiritual substance avails itself of spiritual strength by considerably changing its external form, that is, by having provided access for the light. From then on this spiritual substance can continue its process of development on earth, thus freely strive towards the light, it only must use the strength at its disposal through helpful activity. However, once the longing for light has awakened in the spiritual substance, it will no longer resist being of service in some way or other, for it experiences this activity as a means of receiving more light and at the same time feels the loosening chain of its external form, and although the process of development now corresponds to the law of compulsion the being is nevertheless willing to take it, its own will, albeit inhibited, concurs with divine will.”
Springs of Fire & Plate Tectonics

MV “The Victim-Souls”:70

Jesus is speaking: “Will these springs cease to exist, springs in which the salts are dissolved, the salt taken from minerals enclosed in the womb of your planet; the springs which appear from stratum and through veins of ground on the surface, either freezing or boiling, tasteless, colorless, odorless, or with taste, with color, with smell perceptible to your senses? No. They continue being made inside the Earth, by a process of continual assimilation and transformation, like that when food in your stomach becomes blood, nourishing the tissue and marrows, the organs and cells, which in turn produce the blood. They continue trickling, just as sweat seeps out through the tissues of the body. They obey. If this were to stop, there would be many terrestrial explosions, and the Earth, like a boiler without any opening, would explode, killing all of life.”

Plate Tectonics

These plates can collide with each other forming orographic regions such as the Himalayas; they can also cause ocean trenches, volcanic islands, and mountain ranges to form. If they move away from each other, rifts occur. In the ocean this process is called seafloor separation, and on land rift valleys are formed. When two plates slide past each other, there are faults. The boundaries of these plates are regions of large seismic and volcanic activity. Plate tectonic activities produce very visible effects on the Earth’s crust. Features such as volcanoes and earthquakes exist mainly along plate boundaries.
Genesis 1:9, 10: God Creates the Great Basin

Then God said: Let the water under the sky be gathered into a single basin, so that the dry land may appear. And so it happened: the water under the sky was gathered into its basin, and the dry land appeared. God called the dry land “the earth” and the basin of water he called “the sea.” God saw how good it was. Then God said, “Let the earth bring forth vegetation: every kind of plant that bears seed and every kind of fruit tree on earth that bears fruit with seed in it.” And so it happened: the earth brought forth every kind of plant that bears seed and every kind of fruit tree on earth that bears fruit with its seed in it. God saw how good it was. Evening came, and morning followed—the third day.

It was during this event that the earth really began to be transformed into the world as we know it. In order for this basin to form, much had to happen. You could say, chaos on a grand scale came over the earth. The earth actually had to split open from the result of Plate Tectonics to create a basin large enough to drain and capture the surface water of the earth. Some parts of this basin were several thousand feet deep which caused water to pour into the volcanic gushers being formed under the sea. This opening up of the earth caused other areas extreme pressure, which forced the earth to be pushed out of the ground to form mountains several thousand feet high, some as high as 28,000 ft+

Oceanic trenches, the result of Plate Tectonics, are deep depressions in the Earth’s crust, and they comprise the deepest part of the ocean. The largest of these trenches are in the Pacific Ocean, where numerous active subduction zones have been identified, but smaller trenches can also be seen in the Indian and Atlantic Ocean. The deepest ocean trench is the Mariana Trench which measures over 36,000 ft deep and 1,580 mi long.

It was through these events that land started to emerge and the process of changing the entire surface structure of the earth began.
The following images will give you an idea of the chaos that the earth experienced while the sun began the process of melting the frozen earth. At the same time, the plate tectonic began to expand and shift the earth’s floor below the sea to form a basin that would allow the enormous volumes of surface water to drain into while the surface of the earth was formed.

And so it happened: the water under the sky was gathered into its basin, and the dry land appeared. God called the dry land “the earth” and the basin of water he called “the sea.” God saw how good it was.
The Sea
PMG 2:562

Genesis 1:9 Jesus is speaking: “God’s power, stretched out over the shapeless empty earth, and over the sky where the waters wandered, one of the free elements in chaos, and wanted the firmament to separate the disorderly wandering of the waters between the sky and the earth, so that it would be a velarium (amphitheater) for paradisiac (befitting paradise) splendor, a limit to superior waters, and thus floods would not descend upon boiling metals and atoms, washing away and disjoining what God was uniting.

Look at the sea and consider it for what it is. It is not a separation but a bridge between peoples who live on other shores and although they cannot be seen and are unknown, one must believe that they exist, simply because the sea exists. *God does not make anything useless.* He, therefore, would not have created the seemingly infinite sea, unless it were limited by other lands beyond the horizon, which prevents us from seeing, lands which are populated with other men, who have all come from God, and by God’s will have been carried there by storms and currents, to people continents and regions. And the sea sends remote appeals through its waves, through the voice of its waves and its tides. It is a link, not a separation.

Look at the sea with eyes full of light. You will see lands strewn round its shores, at its limits, and other lands inside it and a cry will reach you from every one of them: ‘Come. Bring us the Light that you possess. Bring us the Life given to you. Speak to our hearts the world with which we are not acquainted, but we know is the foundation of the universe: love. Teach us to read the word that we see written on the infinite pages of the firmament and of the sea: God. Enlighten us because we feel that there is a light, which is more real than the one which reddens the sky and makes the sea glitter like gems. Bring to our darkness the Light that God gave you after generating it through His love, and He gave it to you on behalf of all peoples, as He gave light to the stars so that they might give it to the earth. You are the stars, we are the dust. But form us as the Creator formed the earth with dust, so that man might appreciate it adoring Him now
and forever, until the hour comes when there is no earth, but the Kingdom comes. The
Kingdom of light, of love, of peace, as the living God told you it will be, because we are
children of this God as well, and we ask to become acquainted with our Father.’

Whatever the intellectuality of man is or his faith or disbelief, in front of this page,
in which a particle of infinity, which is God, shines, and in which there is the evidence of
His power, man is obliged to believe, because no human power and no natural
settlement of elements can possibly repeat such a wonder, not even in a very small way.
Man is obliged to believe not only in the Lord’s power, but also in His goodness, as
through that sea He gives food and ways of communication to man, He gives
wholesome salt, He mitigates the heat of the sun and gives space to winds, and seed to
lands remote from one another, and causes it to roar like storms to call the ant-man to
the Infinite One, his Father, and He gives man the possibility of elevating himself to
higher spheres, contemplating higher visions.

Three things speak most of God in creation, which is entirely a witness of His
power; the light, the firmament and the sea. The astral and meteorological order, which
is a reflection of the divine Order; the light, which only God could create: the sea, the
power which only God could confine within firm limits, after creating it, and He gave it
motion and voice, without, however, damaging, as a turbulent disorderly element, the
earth, which bears the sea on its surface.”

Three things speak most of God in creation, which is entirely a witness of His power; the
light, the firmament and the sea. Man is obliged to believe not only in the Lord’s
power, but also in His goodness.
Genesis 1:11: The Third Day of Creation

Then God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation: every kind of plant that bears seed and every kind of fruit tree on earth that bears fruit with seed in it. And so it happened: the earth brought forth every kind of plant that bears seed and every kind of fruit tree on earth that bears fruit with its seed in it. God saw how good it was. Evening came, and morning followed: the third day.

What came first, the tree or the seed? You can answer this question if you understand what would please God the most. Creating the tree that produces seed is far more pleasing to God, as the Creator, than creating a seed that takes time to produce the beauty of His creation. Let the earth bring forth vegetation: every kind of plant that bears seed and every kind of fruit tree on earth that bears fruit with seed in it.

Genesis 1:14: The Forth Day of Creation

Then God said: Let there be lights in the dome of the sky, to separate day from night. Let them mark the fixed times, the days, and the years, and serve as luminaries in the dome of the sky, to shed light upon the earth. And so it happened.

The Stars! So distant and so near! Millions and Millions of meters away, flying like birds of fire through the boundless fields of the sky, and yet so visible to man’s eyes, as to say to him, believe in God.

The Stars
MVN 1944:380

Jesus is speaking: “The Stars! So distant and so near! Millions and Millions of meters away, flying like birds of fire through the boundless fields of the sky, and yet so visible to man’s eyes, as to say to him, believe in God. We, too, are a proof of his existence. One would say that they seem so close on certain evenings that with little effort they could be reached and touched. And yet anyone who thought he could do so, even by climbing to the highest peaks in the world, would be foolish. Whether man views them from the flattest plain or raises his gaze to them from the peaks of the Asian mountains, where the air is so rarified at that height that even the eagle finds it hard to live, or, rising even higher in one of those vehicles which are proof of human intelligence,
but which you are unable to use except to serve ferocity and thus pollute with hellish hatred - he can never see them at closer range and much less reach them. The more he rises, the more they sink into the ether and go on pulsating, saying, ‘We the daughters of God are not for you, for you contaminate us with your fallen humanity. We, creatures of God, are only a spark in that ocean of light which is the Kingdom of God. To reach the true Star, to know his Light, you have only to strip yourself of all your humanity. You will thus know God, for He reveals Himself to those who love Him and in love consume themselves as men and make themselves reign as souls, and you will then possess Him, after this brief life, for eternal Life. We, the millenary stars, shall experience death. You will not experience it if you make yourselves children of God.’

No man, by any means, can reach the star nearest to the earth, the humblest one in its burning. But God grants that you - because He loves you and you love Him - may reach it, know it, and immerse yourself in its Fire. And consider that there is less distance between the earth and the stars than between the stars and the throne of God. They are the immense floor of the Heavenly City, the foundations, even more than the floor, high up, much higher up, at inconceivable heights, for they do not correspond to human measures, is that blessed Reign ruled over by the Trinity, where a place is prepared for those who love. But since God’s loving haste knows no delay, He, ahead of time, breathes you into Himself in spirit and gives Himself to you with his Fire.

Higher than the highest peak, more powerful than the most powerful vehicle, with its strength, unlimited because it is spiritual, love joins you to God and brings you to know Him. It suffices for you to be concerned about loving completely, about making love the only effort in your lives. Do not lose yourselves in other kinds of seeking. Try to possess love and cultivate it. Make it grow and grow by nourishing it, without indolence or fear.

Turn it into a pyre (a heaping mass of material for burning). The flame rises: the flame shines: the flame sings, rise towards God. Shine in the love igniting you. Sing out your love. Give God back what He has placed in your hearts to make you like Him: the capacity to love.”

The stars we see in our night sky are all members of our Milky Way galaxy. All of these stars are moving through space, but they’re so far away we can’t easily see them move relative to each other. That’s why the stars appear fixed relative to each other. And it’s why, for the most part, we see the same constellations as our ancestors. So when you’re talking about stars “moving” or staying “fixed,” remember ... they are all moving through the vastness of space. It’s just the relatively short time of a human lifespan that prevents us from seeing this grand motion.

Consider that there is less distance between the earth and the stars than between the stars and the throne of God!
Diversity of Stars - eruptions

BD No. 1823 of 02/21/1941 taken from book 27

God the Father is speaking: “The natural law applicable to the universe is the indestructibility of everything in existence. Nothing can cease to exist instead; it can only ever change according to God’s will. And this change, in turn, happens in the way that something becomes invisible in order to appear in a visible state elsewhere again. This law is inherent in even the tiniest work of creation, so that the apparent disintegration merely signifies a transformation of that which existed previously. Consequently, even large works of creation, such as stars, can take on different shapes; nevertheless, this process occurs over an extremely long time span, over thousands of years according to earthly time, so that they can never be observed by people, as far as it concerns the fundamental change of a work of creation. Then the eruptions of individual works of creation are mainly the cause for shaping new creations from similar creations of smaller dimensions. These new creations exhibit the same characteristics and composition as the work of creation they emerged from. Thus, in the vicinity of a sun stars always exist with the same substances and natural laws that demonstrate their affiliation with this very sun. From a worldly point of view, the sun therefore cannot be anything else but an infinitely enlarged formation of the same composition as its surrounding planets, since these are works of creations which emerged from it. As a result, all these stars should also be populated with the same beings. But this is where enormous differences become obvious. Not one work of creation harbors the same living organisms as another, and therefore the external structure of each star differs as well, and always in relation to its living inhabitants. And this, in turn, also excludes the same material composition. Hence, only the core of each star is the basic substance, the external cover, however, corresponds to the living beings assigned to it. Everything that exists within the vicinity of a sun has emerged from this sun, that is, it was spewed out by it, but from the moment of its independence it assumed the properties which correspond to the living beings to which this work of creation shall serve as an abode. The infinitely varying degrees of maturity of the still imperfect spiritual beings also necessitate infinitely many creations of different structures, and herein lies the reason for the diversity of the stars.”

Ref: picture - Supernova Explosion
God the Father is speaking: “Cast all your worries upon the Lord, I Am truly your Father to Whom you should talk to as My children when you are downhearted, in a spiritual or earthly way. I said to you Myself ‘Come unto Me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.’ And I will truly take every worry from you because I love you. My love for you wants to prove itself time and again, so that you will reciprocate it and thus return to Me. For once you rejected My love, and therefore I constantly pursue your love which will bring you back to Me. In order to gain your love I will also let you experience difficulties at times, which should make you call upon Me, then you will gratefuly accept My help and recognize the all-merciful Father in Me, Who is manifestly present to you and your hearts will lovingly turn to Him. And that is all I strive for. Accept the spiritual proclamations as they are offered to you, for they come from the kingdom of light and will truly not cause darkness. However, that which does not enlighten you, which leaves you in the dark, need not come from the kingdom of darkness, because I repel these forces when they want to express themselves. Yet it will always be possible for Me to enlighten your spirit providing you unreservedly believe that only truth can come forth from Me and that you will therefore also write down everything that was conveyed to you. (relates to proclamation 7955). The will for truth guarantees the same, and even if a person's maturity has not yet reached the highest degree, I will nevertheless be satisfied with his will for truth in order to protect him from error. And although you humans think that you can conduct scientific research, the laws in the universe are not yet completely known to you, for this reason you will also have to accept something that appears to be absurd if it is explained to you by Me Myself, for your alleged 'facts' are only 'assumptions' which can be disputed. The Sun’s range of illumination is limited by law, because the heavenly bodies are more or less hardened spiritual substance, that is, material creations. And the harder the spiritual substance is, the more immature the spirits these creations shelter are and the more they also prevent the illumination. Thus rays of light will not reach them, because it is the law of eternity that resistance reduces the radiance of My light of love or even neutralizes it entirely. The law is not known to you humans, yet it takes effect in the universe, in other words: Everything in the universe is subject to this law, therefore it determines the spiritual state of maturity of the various stars and, for their inhabitants, also the degree of illumination and the degree of resistance of light. Thus the Sun can shine with brightest intensity and yet stars can repel its radiance or reject it on account of the unspiritual state both the works of creation as well as their inhabitants find themselves in. This is particularly the case with the Moon, which can be considered a star of lowest-developed spiritual beings even in its consistency. It is not excluded from the illumination by the Sun, yet it does not always allow for its effect. Yet even the beings inhabiting the Moon are capable of changing, on account of which their state is not always the same and thus the Sun’s influence on the star also varies. These are always ever spiritual
explanations, but they can nevertheless also result in understanding earthly processes, but which the scientists on earth will not include in their investigations and therefore also look for earthly-understandable explanations which are, however, not entirely free from error. Yet you should grant credence to My Word that you humans will never get to the bottom of it, for the Earth is one of the tiniest creations in the universe, and its inhabitants still have far too little knowledge about the correlations as to be able to fathom the universe with all My works of creation which I control and direct in My love, wisdom and power and which I let arise as a means of returning the spirits to Me which, having once fallen away from Me, also lost all light, all knowledge, and will only regain these when they have concluded the process through Creation and then be brightly enlightened as well.”

**Stars - Natural Law - Research to no Avail**

BD No. 0254 of 01/10/1938 taken from book 5/6

God the Father is speaking: “Dear child, it is a fundamentally wise law that, according to the Lord’s will, the heavenly bodies in the universe always orbit the sun at the same distance and in eternally repetitive regularity. Every creation in the universe depends on the solar system. Not a single star can exist without the luminosity of the sun, for the purpose of each heavenly body consists of being the abode for countless more living beings, and yet the composition of each one differs. If you want to ascertain this you must take hitherto unknown laws into account. The Earth is a completely independent star, that is, from other heavenly bodies, with its own specifically designed natural laws, and therefore you can only explain the stars you see in the firmament according to these natural laws. Yet you do not come close to the truth in this way, the laws of earth apply to all inhabitants of earth, nevertheless, they deviate from the laws of other stars. Consequently, it will never be possible for you to establish principles and rules about them, for you are not in control of the laws of the universe. It is roughly the same as if you tried to explain to the creatures in the animal kingdom that every individual person thinks differently, just as every spirit shapes its own life and that these lives can be totally different, and the animal would be unable to understand the spiritual sphere in which the human being exists. Although man lives on the same earth as the animal, so all stars differ from one another, despite the fact that they all move within the universe and are subject to the same will. Hence the final answer will remain unknown to you, it is therefore entirely pointless to establish scientific research about areas and questions mankind will never be able to solve. For even if you have found an answer, who wants to prove that this answer is right? Your calculations and conclusions will only ever be in accordance with the applicable laws for earth, yet the universe hides such great secrets that researching them during your earthly existence will be a futile effort. Who gives you the guarantee that the Lord’s creation has taken place in the same way on all stars, who on earth will say things, the proof of which he is powerless to ascertain? Just as planets are worlds apart from each other, so is every star’s purpose different for its assigned beings, and the laws these heavenly bodies are subject to were given by the Creator of the Universe according to His wise judgment, yet they are utterly incomprehensible for the inhabitants of Earth and not inexplicable for the human intellect. All beings shall recognize the Lord’s greatness by His work of Creation, and if the human being only once considers the fact that he merely knows a very tiny part of Creation and that he cannot even thoroughly explore this part, the Earth, in its whole composition, then a slight sense of the infinity of the universe has to come to him, of the inconceivable magnitude of the Creator. And he must begin to realize that everything has been created according to a wisely devised divine plan and that the human being, as a
part of this work of creation, was placed into it in order to likewise fulfill a task which has to be the purpose of his life on earth. And the result of a person’s contemplation about trying to investigate the Earth and its surrounding heavenly bodies should be the wish to serve the Lord of the world. For vast is the universe and tiny is the human being.”

Other Worlds
MVN 1943:261

God the Father is speaking: “I would be a very small and limited God the Creator if I had created only the Earth as an inhabited world! With a beat of my will I have brought forth worlds upon worlds from nothing and cast them as luminous fine dust into the immensity of the firmament. The Earth, about which you are so proud and fierce, is nothing but one of the bits of fine dust rotating in unboundedness, and not the biggest one. It is certainly the most corrupt one, though. Lives upon lives are teeming in the millions of worlds which are the joy of your gaze on peaceful nights, and the perfection of God will appear to you when, with the intellectual sign of your spirits rejoined to God, you are able to see the wonders of those worlds.”

Firmament
BD No. 0205 of 11/28/1937 taken from book 5/6

God the Father is speaking: “Oh, my child, behold the firmament, in the splendor of its sparkling stars, not one of them is independent of the Creator’s will, and not one can take a path other than that which the Lord has determined. All believers heed God’s call each time they behold this wonder in the universe. If therefore the Lord harbors a
great number of beings on every one of these stars you can form an impression of the infinity of the universe, of the endless number of spiritual beings subject to His will, and of His constant reign and activity regarding these beings, all of which are part of the eternal light. Oh, you won’t believe how inconceivable it is for you human children, you, who cannot even form a remote concept for, if you could, the magnitude, the scale of the regions in the beyond, would overwhelm you. Yet even the smallest event is arranged by the Father Himself, the tiniest being is cared for according to His will, and countless highly developed spiritual beings are supporting Him in order to accomplish everything that the plan of divine Creation comprises. Words cannot describe this to you; faced by this momentous realization you can only humbly bow down before the Lord’s greatness and omnipotence, in your present state on earth you are incapable of anything else. If the Lord bestows upon you the grace of having just the smallest insight into His reign, into His kingdom and His activity, you are inconceivably blessed already, for a child that takes no interest in such spiritual experiences will find it incomparably harder to accept God’s obvious activity as long as it does not recognize God’s will in even the smallest occurrence.”

Heavenly Bodies - Spiritual and Earthly Substance

God the Father is speaking: “Only that man gets closer to the problem of the creation of the world, whose thoughts are turned to God, because he thinks about the origin of the universe, about the infinity and the Creator of all things. He will not draw fast conclusions, he will presume and ask questions in mind, and mentally the response will be sent to him, as he pays attention to his thoughts. The slightest willingness to be thought by knowing strengths, God rewards in the way, that He commissions them to guide man’s thoughts in the right path, and also his thinking will correspond to the truth, and he will take wisdoms from himself. He is taught by the Spirit of God, and therefore man is in truth. The world is the product of the divine will to love. It is the thought of God which has become a form. All tangible and earthly visible belongs to the earth, the realm of matter. But out of this the spiritual world is not visible to the human eye, but also comes from the divine creative strength. Because the universe has innumerable creations, whose elementary bodies are spiritual substance, that can not be perceived by the human eye, because this can only see earthly matter. Could the human watch these spiritual creations, he would get a great knowledge, but his free will would be in danger, because what he would see, would be decisive for his whole life on earth. But the knowledge for that reason must remain hidden for him, so that he can walk his earthly life completely unaffected. God’s will, wisdom and love purchased creations continuously, that appear to man only as very distant heavenly bodies, so he supposes them in the same nature as the earth. However these heavenly bodies are of such diverse design and for the habitants of the earth completely inaccessible. Nevertheless the human mind can rove into these creations and he takes down to earth, what he sees and hears. And this is an extraordinary grace of God, for man as such will never be able to get into that realm, and therefore the knowledge would lack him completely. But his spirit teaches him in the following manner:

There is nothing in the universe that does not have its origin in God. Consequently everything must proclaim the divine wisdom, that’s to say, it must correspond to a plan, designed by God in His wisdom. So nothing is useless in space, though it may appear to man. Now the heavenly bodies correspond to their purpose exactly like the earth, although they are designed differently. Everything in the universe gives the still un-free spiritual possibility, to develop to the height. That is the only
purpose of any work of creation. But now there is by no means to accept, that therefore all works of creation exist from the same substance, so that only the earthly substance, the matter, can be the admission station of the undeveloped spiritual, because this assumption would imply, that everything in the universe is from the same earthly substance. It would also require that all the stars were inhabited by the same beings, by people, but this always means persistence in the same state, that’s to say in the undeveloped state lifelessness, meaning inaction. It would also mean constant darkness, and so should be all the stars lightless creations. But the higher developed beings would feel this creation as unbearable compulsion, for they would find no receiving willing beings for their output of light, so the pursuit of God would never find fulfillment, if the being would not be released from his earthbound condition and would come into free regions, where an action without cover of compulsion is possible. So also creations must exist, which mean no compulsion for the being. But every earthly substance is a compulsion for the spiritual therein, consequently (this must be eliminated), and there must be creations, that can only be explained purely spiritual, because they are only purely spiritual substance. They exist, but not visible to the human eye, but perceptible only with the spiritual eye. Therefore they are to be regarded as spiritual creations, which means, they can be beheld only after the earthly life, that they contain the spiritual beings, which have travelled the earthly life and should develop higher. But the state of ripeness of the beings is different; consequently the creations must be different, which now serve the beings to stay.

For the higher development of the spirit the serving activity is the decisive factor, namely a certain activity is required by the being according to the domicile, and this again corresponds to the nature of the heavenly body, that has those beings as inhabitants. Earthly visible and tangible substance conditions also an activity, that achieves visible and tangible substance again, and therefore the soul, the spiritual, must be in a wrapper, that is tangible and visible. But activity can exist also only in a purely intellectual working, that means not be bound to any form or earthly creation and yet likewise be a serving in love, so the being comes to perfection. Consequently the maturing of these beings does not have to be made dependent by earthly creations, which means material creations. Rather the upward-development can be able to go ahead faster and easier in spiritual regions. However the activity in a spiritual environment is hard to describe to people. It is not to make them understand, because the human can not imagine life without physical exterior shape, but with God nothing is impossible, and therefore He created things, that appear unacceptable to the human mind, which should be explained as non-existing by human terms, but they are not possible to imagine out of the universe and therefore are also not to be denied. And these are the heavenly bodies that are visible by the people as stars in the sky. These stars are endless lengths away from each other; they are always a world of there own. God’s omnipotence, wisdom and love attests each creation, but man does not comprehend the nature of the stars, as long as he is on earth, it is nothing imaginable for him, what is not made of earthly substance. But the spiritual in man is also a completely independent substance from the earthly matter, and this leaves behind all material tangible or visible on the earth, as soon as it comes in the spiritual realm through the gate of eternity. And so the stay of the soul after physical death is not a creation of earthly substance, but the countless stars are meant to it, that are visible for the human eye as luminous celestial body, but in reality they can not be seen by the human eye, because they are no earthly creations, but they were still created by God for the higher development of the imperfect spirit.”
My Father’s House
Ref: John 14:2,3
In my Father’s house there are many dwelling places. If there were not, would I have told you that I am going to prepare a place for you? And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back again and take you to myself, so that where I am you also may be.

In My Father’s House are many Mansions – Part 1
BD No. 5449 of 07/26/1952 taken from book 60

Jesus is speaking: “In My Father’s house are many mansions. Can you understand the meaning of My Words? That I promise you a dwelling in My Father’s house but at the same time want you to know that a suitable abode is prepared to accommodate every one of My living creations, that I want to tell you, that what you have not yet achieved on earth you can still strive to achieve in My kingdom, because I have countless possibilities to improve your development in the spiritual kingdom. I have not just the earth at My disposal, but all My creations are places to attain full maturity for the still imperfect soul until it has finally developed to the point that, in heavenly bliss, it will be able to take possession of the most magnificent spiritual creations, for wherever it stays is in ‘My Father’s house’, in the sphere of My infinite love, and it will always stay where the Father has prepared a dwelling place which corresponds to its degree of love and its ability to reign and work in the realm to which it was assigned by Me.

In My Father’s house are many mansions. No being is homeless, the eternal home accepts all souls, yet this home has many different aspects, it can exhibit the most magnificent flower gardens and wonderful palaces, but it can also include infinitely vast barren regions which take ages to wander through, yet even in these barren regions paths branch off which lead to areas full of flowers, and it just depends on whether the ramblers pay attention to these paths, whether they attentively try to find a way out from this barren region and also take this way out. Everyone will be accepted in My eternal home, and everyone has the right to take ownership of a dwelling. But what it consists of is entirely subject to their will.

And therefore I say: In My Father’s house there are many mansions. For every human being, every being, prepares its own place of abode depending on the degree of its perfection. Yet no matter how poor his dwelling is, through his will and his work it can really quickly be transformed, and the most delightful homesteads can arise if only the soul has the desire for it and diligently strives for fulfillment. In that case it will be supported by countless helpers who will create and work with the soul, and it can become a paradise-like dwelling place where previously was a barren and bleak region. One day every soul will return to its true home, but as long as it is still imperfect it will feel homeless, although it will have already entered the kingdom from whence it once had come. However, I have many schoolhouses, and higher development will advance for sure, even if it often requires a long time. One day the lost son will return home and reside in the mansion he once owned, he will stay in the Father’s house where all children are gathered around the Father, he will be lovingly received by the Eternal Love, Which will give him a seat next to Himself.

Yet infinite times will still pass by until all My children have found home again, until they can take up residence in My house; infinite times will still pass by, yet I will
not abandon any one of My children. The Father’s love attracts them, and not one of My children will be able to resist this love forever.”

In My Father’s House are many Mansions – Part 2
Ref: BD 7601 16.05.1960

Jesus is speaking: “Countless heavenly bodies circle the universe, and they all have the task of helping immature souls reach maturity.

So now you can understand the Words: 'In My Father's house are many mansions' and every star receives the souls whose state of maturity is suitable to its conditions; in other words, the potential for maturity differs on every star and the souls are placed accordingly. But the living conditions, too, are always different, because the stars' nature and consistency vary. A detailed description cannot be given to people on earth because much would be incomprehensible to them and requires spiritual knowledge in order to be understood. But for all souls, whatever their degree of maturity, suitable stars exist for maturing, where souls of good will are able to ascend. For even there the spiritual beings' free will is taken into account, even there spiritual constraint is not applied, although the respective living conditions constrain the beings to the extent that they have to accept them or they could not survive in their world. And everywhere the beings will receive a light which reveals the purpose of their existence. Whether they accept and utilize the light is up to them but it is decisive for their ascent. And all these works of God's creation are 'mansions in the Father's house.'

Hence all spiritual essence will one day achieve the degree of maturity which will enable it to exchange physical creations with purely spiritual ones, which you humans are unable to perceive with your physical eyes. Because everything that is visible to you are creations which shelter beings which are still immature, since perfected beings are active in the kingdom of light and no longer require 'visible' creations for their abode. But the distance between all these works of creation is vast and they are not within reach of each other either. The inhabitants of all these worlds are tied to their planet, to the star on which they live. They are only able to change their abode after reaching a certain degree of maturity, and not arbitrarily but in line with God’s fundamental law, to which all His creations must submit, including the beings who are allocated to them. It is therefore foolish to assume that the inhabitants of these worlds could arbitrarily depart from them and approach other worlds without fearing their own destruction. Because the living conditions are different on all stars and these cannot be excluded arbitrarily. However, during the last days even such plans are being worked on.”
Stars - dwelling place for Souls

BD No. 0258 of 01/14/1938 taken from book 5/6

God the Father is speaking: “Behold, today we proclaim to you in the Saviors’ name that which will introduce you to infinity. There are times when you are drawn to observe the splendors of the stars; do you ever consider the glories that might hide behind them? And no matter how many million stars you see in the firmament, it is nevertheless only a part of infinity, it is merely a fraction of Creation and does not even begin to give you an idea as to how many more of such stars in the universe are still invisible to you. This myriad of celestial bodies is only governed by one Spirit, one Light, and one Deity. Over thousands of years it has been the Creators will to offer completely free beings the opportunity for advancement on these stars, and to gradually prepare them for the state in eternity where they shall be illuminated by an abundance of light which far exceeds all the light of the stars in the universe. Yet even the abundance of light on each of these stars differs in intensity, the sizes of the suns, which give light and warmth to these stars, are, in turn, so different that no-one on earth would be able to imagine them, because these areas are inaccessible to human research and would only lead to wrong conclusions. Nevertheless, everything in space is so well arranged that from eternity to eternity nothing of this wise order of worlds can be revoked, that no star would ever be able to leave its designated orbit and take a different path. And thus listen: The Lord created space for the perfection of all His beings and for the duration of the earthly course of life, for instance, the human being has a number of years at his disposal during which he can attain a degree of perfection which will place him into bright surroundings. The soul shall continue to develop to ever higher realms and be offered ever more opportunity. And the purpose of every star is to offer the countless beings a space that suits their spiritual state where the spiritual beings’ activity shall be continued. It is incredibly difficult to explain this to a person, for he can only grasp this with his human intellect and is incapable of imagining the multitude of stars which are subject to God’s will and which time and again offer countless beings the opportunity to mature fully again.”

Other Worlds - Diversity of Stars

BD No. 8838 of 08/08/1964 taken from book 93

Jesus is speaking: “You are requesting clarification about the creations in the universe, and I want to provide it for you as far as you are able to understand it. The creations are partly of a spiritual and partly of a material kind, but these cannot be regarded as earthly-material, for My creative will is incredibly versatile and you should never assume that other stars have the same composition as earth. However, you have to consider that it is not just earth which is sheltering solidified spiritual substances, but that the innumerable stars visible to your eyes were called into being by Me to help the ascent of all human souls which have not yet reached the degree of maturity needed in order to continue their development in the creations of the beyond.

The whole of creation is My emanated strength, and the earth is the most miserable creation because it consists of coarse matter. Thus anyone covering the process through its creations would be able to completely spiritualize what as 'soul' gives life to the human being. Yet the attained degrees of maturity in which the soul departs from earth after the death of its body are very different. And thus it will be
received by other creations which, as far as it is concerned, certainly also exist in the 'beyond' but which by no means can be called purely spiritual creations, since their substances are likewise solidified spiritual essence, strength, which once emerged from Me as a being and failed to become active in accordance with My will. However, this matter is far lighter and more compliant, so that the souls staying there are impelled into eager activity and mutual helpfulness, thus they continue to progress ever more. Thus it can be said that this matter is easily dissolvable and yet it also shelters spiritual substance which had once become unfaithful to Me but which does not suffer to the extent as is the case on earth, which gladly is of service in facilitating the souls' further development, which (this matter) therefore will disintegrate again as soon as it has fulfilled its task.

The creations on these stars are inhabited by beings, which can also be called human beings, who likewise have the task of supporting these souls' further development, consequently material creations have to exist as well, yet they should not be imagined such like those on earth. The beings (souls) are now in a world which offers them incredible things and yet it is a tangible world, because everything is permeated by My spiritual strength and it will remain a tangible world until the complete spiritualization of all beings has taken place, which then will no longer require a material world.

But since this shall continue for an eternity and the stars in the firmament are thus visible to you humans, you are instructed to the effect that all these worlds are My will which has taken on shape, that I have emanated strength which more or less was deeply fallen spiritual essence, that this strength manifested itself, thus it is and remains visible for the respective inhabitants of these stars, who merely possess different degrees of realization and are thus also able to admit inhabitants from earth in order to help them further their development. Then you humans will exist 'beyond' earth and yet in My kingdom, and depending on your maturity you will change your abode in order to enter ever more spiritualized creations.

Yet whatever your eyes behold as heavenly bodies in the firmament are creations which were brought into being by My will; and these creations are the original spirits which had once deserted Me, they were given a task by Me that they now fulfill, hence they more or less acknowledge Me again, consequently, they didn't descend quite so low but nevertheless require material creations in order to fulfill their task therein. Yet it cannot be said that it is earthly matter, since this spiritual essence had fallen into the deepest abyss which the human being on earth has to overcome over an infinitely long period of time, rather, those material creations were given to people for their happiness and to delight in them. For a visible star must also exhibit visible creations which should illustrate to the already more mature spirits their Creator's magnitude and power and also offer the spiritual substances still in need of maturing the opportunity to be of service. This problem is not easy to explain to you because you only understand what exists on your earth, and even here your knowledge is limited, but how other stars have an effect on your thoughts will remain hidden to you as long as you are incapable of seeing spiritually. Then, however, this realm will be open to you and you won't be able to stop marveling at the creations on the individual stars. Yet all My works have their reason and demonstrate My love and wisdom and might.

And whatever seems inexplicable to you will become known to you the more your soul's maturity advances, then there will be no more questions which could not be answered for you. And this wealth of knowledge will make you very happy, even if it is at the moment still concealed from you."
Jesus is speaking: “Vast distances separate the creations which you behold as stars in the firmament, distances, which you humans cannot estimate and therefore not conquer either, because every single star is a world in its own right and these worlds are hermetically sealed in so far as that they have entirely different atmospheres which are always appropriate to the consistency of the planet itself as well as to their inhabitants. You humans should not believe that My creative spirit could not create and design versatile enough. You should not believe that you will find the same living conditions as on the earth you inhabit on other celestial bodies again, and you should even less believe that these celestial bodies could offer you the same living facilities that are necessary for your survival, if you ever reach the vicinity of such a star. Yet it would be a futile venture, you will never even succeed in establishing contact with other celestial bodies unless it happens on a spiritual level via thought transmissions from these worlds which will always only serve your spiritual progress but never concern humanly intended worldly research.

You humans can indeed develop considerable abilities, you can productively create and design on earth, you can ascertain the forces of nature and utilize them in every conceivable way; by virtue of your intellect you can deeply penetrate the laws of nature and then become prominent with all your knowledge. Yet your sphere of activity is and always will remain the earth, and if you then try to utilize your intellectual findings for the benefit of your fellow human beings My blessing will also support your work, your activity, for then My law of eternal order will be upheld. But you also have to stay within this order, you have to observe the laws I Myself have decreed and which are distinctly recognizable in all works of creation. And this also includes the cosmic distance of celestial bodies from your earth; it includes the isolation of every single star from the other which is characterized by a vacuum, by the stratosphere, which makes it impossible to support human life in this space and therefore should also make it distinctly obvious to you that I have isolated you Myself.

For even if you believe that you can overcome such ‘obstacles’, these attempts will fail, you will perish if you dare to enter regions which were closed to you by Me. Thereby you only prove that you are spiritually very arrogant in believing that you can render divine natural laws ineffective, you prove that you neither acknowledge these laws nor the Lawmaker, and you prove that you humans are ready for the total transformation of this earth because you lack the most important realization: that Someone is above you Who has the last Word, that you do not recognize this One or you would not undertake something that you, as inhabitants of this earth, are not entitled to do: to make other worlds the goal of your research, which are and will always remain totally inaccessible to you, because every star serves to mature the spiritual beings whose degrees of maturity are so different that they all need different creations. Creations, in which you humans cannot survive, and therefore there can never be contact between two worlds. My creative spirit and My creative will has truly done nothing without wisdom, but you humans will never be able to ascertain what exists outside your earthly sphere other than that the existence of countless celestial bodies and planets will be established by you with certainty, because this evidence is not harmful to your souls, but any further knowledge can only be spiritually disclosed to you.”
The Father creates other Worlds that no man will ever explore

Hubble finished color images are actually combinations of two or more black-and-white exposures to which color has been added during image processing. The colors in Hubble images, which are assigned for various reasons, aren’t always what we’d see if we were able to visit the imaged objects in a spacecraft. We often use color as a tool, whether it is to enhance an object’s detail or to visualize what ordinarily could never be seen by the human eye.

Ref: http://hubblesite.org
Saturn

God the Father is speaking: “Worldly scholars will struggle in vain to obtain a clear picture of the inner structure of extraterrestrial works of Creation. It is not enough to establish the numerical size ratio of other planets in comparison to Earth, nor is the intention of establishing the sun’s influence on these planets and the measurement of luminosity sufficient. Rather, the research of these planets requires people with enormous knowledge, and such knowledge can only be acquired by spiritual means. No connection exists between Earth and other planets, and no such connection will ever be established even if eternities pass by. On the other hand, however, spiritually, no limitations exist which separate one planet from another. The vast space between two planets does not prevent spiritual beings from communicating with each other and exchanging information about the world they inhabit and its structure. Providing a clear picture of the most related planet to Earth, Saturn is the task of one of the elevated spiritual beings inhabiting it by giving you humans on Earth a description which offers an undeniable explanation to a person desiring such information. As yet no mortal has succeeded in establishing the dimensions of this planet, for it is not possible to calculate its size because people possess no criterion for the circumference of Saturn. It goes beyond all earthly estimates and is almost an infinite concept for you humans. The basic material of this planet is not the same as that of Earth either; it consists of transparent, brightly sparkling metal with an inconceivable luminosity. The state of all beings within the vicinity of this radiant matter is in harmony with this brilliant light. They are exceedingly sensitive to all spiritual currents and are relatively far advanced spiritual beings which, however, did not reach their state of light through conscious striving but are highly educated through God’s will. The task of these beings includes taking care of the spirits on earth. Like on earth, they also live a similar physical life, except that the size ratio of the external shells they occupy is humanly incomprehensible, but accordingly their spiritual power is indescribably effective. Nevertheless, the beings also have to fulfill a function and this is in harmony with their respective embodiment, for these beings also exist in various external shapes on the planet’s surface, but their ability to change far surpasses that on earth, insofar as that they are not animating some external shape as imperfect spiritual beings, but that they can, as it were, change their shell at any time so as to be able to accomplish their set task better and easier in a different shell. Consequently, Saturn shelters living beings, nevertheless they possess a certain degree of maturity or they would not be suitable for this planet since the abundance of light presupposes a specific receptivity to light. These beings are difficult to describe to people on earth because certain laws need to be taken into account which are unknown to people on earth. It would indeed be possible to portray them to you, albeit only in a metaphorical way which illustrates the beings’ activity. And this activity is, in a way, just as necessary for people on earth, for the beings have the task of constantly animating the entire flora, nevertheless, the correlation of this cannot be fully understood by you as yet. Amongst each other, the beings lead a similar life as on earth, in total harmony and spiritual unity, so their dwellings are accordingly and magnificent creations of their own intelligence shaped the surface of the planet into an exceedingly charming abode. Creation consists
of countless stars and yet each one differs from the other both in its surface arrangement as well as in the living conditions of its inhabiting beings. In the same way their basic materials are always of a different kind too, yet all these creations are governed and directed by one Deity according to His will. And thus God provides countless opportunities for a being so that it can receive and likewise distribute bliss for eternity through lively activity in accordance with its perfection."

AVATAR – Who knew!

Odds of Cosmic Chance - Genesis1:14

God made the two great lights, the greater one to govern the day, and the lesser one to govern the night; and he made the stars. God set them in the dome of the sky, to shed light upon the earth, to govern the day and the night, and to separate the light from the darkness. God saw how good it was. Evening came, and morning followed - the fourth day.

This scriptural verse is a summary of the events that have been put in order to support life on earth. The earth is now ready to receive sea life, animal life and man. Let’s take a brief moment to review these events that the Creator has put in place in order to support complex life. The odds of all this happening by cosmic chance are about one in a trillion-trillion. Do you still think all this could happen by chance?
**Genisis 1:20-23: The Fifth Day of Creation**

Then God said, “Let the water teem with an abundance of living creatures, and on the earth let birds fly beneath the dome of the sky.” And so it happened. God created the great sea monsters and all kinds of swimming creatures with which the water teems and all kinds of winged birds. God saw how good it was, and God blessed them, saying, “Be fertile, multiply, and fill the water of the seas; and let the birds multiply on the earth.” Evening came, and morning followed- the fifth day.

The following images represent a small sample of the joy and wonders of the Creator at work. Each is its own creation with its own DNA signature. No examples of randomly designed species could be found! It’s important to note that when God created the fish of the sea, animals, and man, they were created complete, in their finished state, which would give the greatest glory to the creator.

**Genesis 2:4-14: The Sixth Day of Creation**

Then God said, “Let the earth bring forth all kinds of living creatures: cattle, creeping things, and wild animals of all kinds.” And so it happened: God made all kinds of wild animals, all kinds of cattle, and all kinds of creeping things of the earth. God saw how good it was. Again in Genesis 2:18-24, “So the Lord God formed out of the ground various wild animals and various birds of the air. . .” Then God said: “Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. Let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and the cattle, and over all the wild animals and all the creatures that crawl on the ground.” Evening came, and morning followed- the sixth day.

None of these animals are part of the big bang theory of evolution. The Lord made it clear that the first animal types were all brought forth from the earth. In fact, since all animals breed only within their animal type and contain unique DNA for that type, it stands to reason that the first animal had to be created. Thus, all animals were created complete, in their finished state. There is no recorded evidence of any animal evolving into anything other than what it was originally created as.
Genesis 2:5: God Creates the Garden of Eden

At the time when the Lord God made the earth and the heavens – while as yet there was no field shrub on earth and no grass of the field had sprouted, for the Lord God had sent no rain upon the earth and there was no man to till the soil, but a stream was welling up out of the earth and was watering all the surface of the ground. The Lord God formed man out of clay of the ground and blew into his nostrils the breath of life, and so man became a living being.

Then the Lord God planted a garden in Eden, in the east, and he placed there the man whom he had formed. Out of the ground the Lord God made various trees grow that were delightful to look at and good for food, with the tree of life in the middle of the garden and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

A river rises in Eden to water the garden; beyond there it divides and becomes four branches. The name of the first is the Pishon; it is the one that winds through the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold. The gold of that land is excellent; bdellium (a gum resin similar to myrrh obtained from various trees) and lapis lazuli are also there. The name of the second river is Gihon; it is the one that winds all through the land of Cush. The name of the third river is the Tigris; it flows east of Asshur. The fourth river is the Euphrates.

The Spiritual Garden of Eden is within Adam and Eve - Gen. 2:5


“The ‘Water depicted in the four rivers represents the ‘Water of Life’ which is evidently grace that will spread to the four corners of the earth that the faithful will eagerly seek after for its real value. This water is more than clear and transparent; it is free from all impurities, thus it shines like a diamond, which signifies its divine origin and power as a supernatural gift. It has in this respect the same quality as the walls of the New Jerusalem, which are the divine truth revealed through the prophets and apostles.

The fruits confer spiritual immortality, sanctity, virtue, and perfection. The tree of life in Paradise conferred only immortality of the body. Those who continually wear the robe of innocence and are free from all willful attachment to sin are citizens of the Spiritual Kingdom of Christ and may enter the Holy City through the open gates whenever they choose. They have free access to the holy sacraments, the right to instruction and enlightenment in the religion, and protection against errors and vices, so they may know God’s ways and be enabled to walk in His path.

Both the River of Life and the Tree of Life are supernatural creations but are transplanted into this natural world to sustain supernatural life – food and drink. The name and idea of the tree mentioned in Genesis (2:5; 3:22). What mankind lost in Paradise is re-instated in the world by Jesus Christ, which secures for man the constant real Presence of God, the exhaustless Source of life.”
Genesis 1:26-31: God Creates Man

Then God said: “Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. Let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and the cattle, and over all the wild animals and all the creatures that crawl on the ground.

God created man in His image, in the divine image he created him; male and female He created them.

God blessed them, saying: “Be fertile and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it. Have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and all the living things that move on the earth.” God also said: “See, I give you every seed bearing plant all over the earth and every tree that has seed-bearing fruit on it to be your food; and to all the animals of the land, all the birds of the air, and all the living creatures that crawl on the ground, I give all the green plants for food.” And so it happened. God looked at everything he had made, and he found it very good. Evening came, and morning followed - the sixth day.

Genesis 2:1-4: The Seventh Day of Creation

Thus the heavens and the earth and their entire array were completed. Since on the seventh day God was finished with the work He had been doing, He rested on the seventh day from all the work He had undertaken. So God blessed the seventh day and made it holy, because on it He rested from all the work He had done in creation.

Such is the story of the heavens and the earth at their creation.

The Seventh Day of Creation - Commentary

Jesus is speaking: “I want to have you observe the first chapter of Genesis. A sentence which is repeated six times, one for each day of creation: ‘And God saw that it was good.’ On the seventh day God rested on the goodness of what had been made by Him.

Goodness. One of God’s main attributes. He, who is good, does only good things. And, happy, He rests on them, for He considers that his children are enjoying those good things.

Always consider this, my faithful soul. Evil creeps in, but it does not come from God. From God what is good comes. Therefore, when things are wicked for you, do not accuse God. But turn to the Father to receive help. Consequently, moreover, to understand whether something comes from God or from what God is not – the enemy of goodness, with many names, raging from that of Satan, the father of all evil, to those of war, abuse of power, cruelty, envy, calumny, and so on – observe in yourself and your
neighbor the reactions it produces. If with pain there is peace, then it is a proof that it comes from God. If in pain there is torment, but the soul remains united to its Lord and weeps on his breast, then it is something permitted by God. If in pain, and, more than in pain, in joy, in tangible success, in wellbeing, and in triumph – for this happens in such a case – there is restlessness and detachment from God, then it is an event coming from Evil.

Evil always comes in the ephemeral and deceitful robe of human gain. Never be fooled. True gain is the supernatural. Trials are coins with which this gain is acquired. Peace is God’s caress for his faithful one who has been put to the test.

Weep. You are a creature and must undergo the weakness of your human nature. But remain in peace. God is with you and from this pain will be able to give you something good, for He thus medicates the wounds inflicted by the Enemy of his children and Himself: Drawing from evil a reason to give you greater eternal good and his blessing, beginning now.”

“And God saw that it was good”

**Language of Nature - Creation and Creator**

BD No. 2834 of 08/01/1943 taken from book 37

God the Father is speaking: “Let nature speak to you, it illustrates indescribable works of wonder and constantly reveals My love and omnipotence to you. Listen and behold. Look at each creature and become aware of My creative will and My strength, and of Myself in all My works of creation. See, how uniquely delightful and varied these creations are and how meaningful each one fulfills its intended purpose and how the purpose of every work of creation is the preservation of all creation. Let Me speak to you Myself through nature and listen to My voice, then you will recognize My omnipotence, love and wisdom and bow before it, then you will know that you are the greatest work of creation on earth made by My hand and understand how infinitely much I care that you remain within Me.
Since each work of creation only came into being because of you, it is a mere preliminary stage from which you evolved into what you are now, into free, independent creations which can become infinitely more than they are now.

Observe nature and see its development, its progression, which can be recognized in all creations of nature. The tiniest being is My work, the tiniest blade of grass is My thought which took on shape. And every creature obeys My will, it does what I have assigned it to do and serves the human being again by ensuring his existence. Nothing is without purpose and aim, nothing happens without My will, everything is based on My wisdom and love. Should My wisdom not be evident to you because you don’t know of the relationship between all works of creation then recognize My love, which consistently expresses itself in the wonders of nature.

See how everything around you grows and flourishes how it matures and bears fruit, see, how the same process repeats itself over and over again, for you, to protect you human beings and to preserve everything that is alive on earth. I shaped innumerable creations of most diverse proportions, of most diverse forms and purposes, and if you open your eyes and ears nothing escapes you and My infinite love and wisdom has to become evident to you. Because I give so that you can receive, I create so that you can benefit from it, I maintain and care for the creation so that your heart can rejoice in it and you recognize Me, Me, Who I Am since eternity and whose existence you doubt. Whose will and being you want to exclude and whose creations you regard as having evolved by themselves.

You blindly pass by all wonders of creation and don’t understand the language of nature, you see the creation but not the Creator within; indeed, you see the effect but not the cause, the will, which is the foundation of every creation. You believe yourselves to be full of wisdom and able to discover the origin of all things yet your knowledge is patchwork as long as you don’t acknowledge Me as the primary origin of creation. I move close to you in every work of nature, it is the expression of Myself, it is a thought that took shape in accordance to My will; every natural creation is proof of My existence because nothing would exist without Me, because My will alone called into being what you see and what surrounds you. And nothing can be or become without My will, nothing can exist if My will and My wisdom do not approve. But My will, My love, My wisdom and My power must also teach you to believe in an Entity, they must make you realize that they belong to a Being which also wants to speak to you through the wonders of nature, which wants to be closely united with you because you, also being His work of creation, are the sole reason for the origin of all creation.

I want you to become aware but then you have to listen to the language of creation, to the voice which expresses itself in nature, you have to communicate with Me, the intrinsic Creator of all things, and I will answer your questions and give to you according to your will to seek the truth, providing you acknowledge Me as the provider of truth. I Am near to you at all times, as soon as you desire to hear Me, as soon as you send just one thought upwards to Me. And therefore you shall find Me wherever you are, but more likely if you look for Me in solitude, where everything around you reminds you of the Creator, Whose will created heaven and earth, because His love decided to give the essence, which formerly had separated from Him, the opportunity to come closer to Him once again. And the knowledge of this shall be given to you human beings, the knowledge of this you shall desire yourselves, and therefore you should listen to the language of nature because through it I speak to those of you who want to hear Me.”
Chapter 4: The Soul and Life of Adam

Catholic Teaching: Body, Soul and Spirit

Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

363 In Sacred Scripture the term “soul” often refers to human life or the entire human person. But “soul” also refers to the innermost aspect of man, that which is of greatest value in him, that which he is most especially in God’s image: “soul” signifies the spiritual principle in man.

365 The unity of soul and body is so profound that one has to consider the soul to be the “form” of the body: i.e., it is because of its spiritual soul that the body made of matter becomes a living, human body; spirit and matter, in man, are not two natures united, but rather their union forms a single nature.

366 The Church teaches that every spiritual soul is created immediately by God – it is not “produced” by the parents – and also that it is immortal: it does not perish when it separates from the body at death, and it will be reunited with the body at the final Resurrection.

367 Sometimes the soul is distinguished from the spirit: St Paul for instance prays that God may sanctify his people “wholly,” with “spirit and soul and body” kept sound and blameless at the Lord’s coming. The Church teaches that this distinction does not introduce a duality into the soul. “Spirit” signifies that from creation man is ordered to a supernatural end and that his soul can gratuitously be raised beyond all it deserves to communion with God.

368 The spiritual tradition of the Church also emphasizes the heart, in the biblical sense of the depths of one’s being, where the person decides for or against God.

QUESTIONS: It is clear from this definition that the Church does not have a clear understanding of the relationship between the body, soul and spirit. What the soul really is and where, when and how it was created. Also, the distinction between soul and spirit needs to be properly explained. The mysteries that are hidden in God can never be known unless they are revealed by God. God the Father is now going to reveal deeper mysteries of the soul:

Body, Soul and Spirit - Explanation

BD No. 4757 of 10/09/1949 taken from book 54 also (Galatians 5:1, 13-18)

God the Father is speaking: “People cannot understand the relationship between body, soul and spirit, which makes it difficult to explain to them the working of the spirit. The spirit is in opposition to the body, whereas the soul finds itself between both, thus it effectively has to side with either the body or the spirit but it can never pay attention to both. In the beginning of embodiment as a human being the soul is totally attached to the body. Hence it endeavors to fulfill the body’s every desire, that is to say thought, feeling and will, the human soul, are wholly focused on the body which, still consisting of matter itself, also seeks to unite with matter. Thus the person will long for material possessions because they epitomize the body’s satisfaction. Therefore the spirit will not come into its own, the soul ignores the spirit’s demands, the spirit cannot find acceptance because the body is still stronger and completely occupies the soul, thus dominating its thoughts and aspirations. However, the soul can also recognize the worthlessness of earthly things, it can consider its bodily wishes to be unimportant, it can demand more of earthly life than mere material goods, then the spirit comes into its own. Then it will express itself and be listened to by the soul. The soul will start to move
in a different direction, it will no longer ask for the body but strive for spiritual values. It will accept being taught, that is, it shall willingly accept what the spirit conveys. Indeed, it will feel happy and pay consistently less attention to the body, or it will try to incline the body to do what the spirit demands of the soul, to renounce earthly matter in exchange for spiritual knowledge. Now the spirit will be victorious over the body. Both spirit and body try to win the soul for themselves. And as soon as the spirit has succeeded in displacing the desires of the body, it is the stronger.

But what is meant by spirit? The spirit is the Divine in the human being; it is that which identifies the human being as God’s living creation, the spirit is the bond which connects the human being to the eternal Father-Spirit. It is the human being’s realization that he will always be in contact with the Father of eternity. The human being only recognizes himself as God’s living creation when the spirit becomes active, until then he will merely be conscious of himself as a living being who wants whatever life has to offer. But once the human being recognizes himself, the world will no longer mean anything to him. Then he will search for higher values, then his thoughts will be directed towards the spiritual kingdom, then he will try to make contact with the One Who gave him life, then his thoughts will be right and his wishes and actions in accordance with divine will. Then the spirit of God will be working within the person. The soul subsequently will give itself to the spirit to be guided and taught so that body, soul and spirit unite at last and seek unity with God, because the human being’s spirit constantly strives towards the Father-Spirit to whom he is, and remains, inseparably joined for eternity."

**Food – body and soul**

God the Father is speaking: “I want to enlighten your spirit if you ask Me for it: The soul’s actual task during its life on earth is to attain full maturity, for at the beginning of its earthly existence its substances are still more or less immature. It still has to tackle many instincts which it brought along from its previous embodiments and will always have the opportunity during its earthly life to master them, providing its will is good and directed towards Me. Nevertheless, it is passing through the satanic realm, which means that it has to wage a constant battle which lasts as long as it lives on earth. Time and again it will come into contact with spiritually immature substances, which it also consumes in the form of food in order to keep the body fit, and these substances must be spiritualized by the soul too, that is, it has to try to bring everything into the right order. Hence these spiritual substances will join the body; they serve the growth and preservation of that which was given to the soul as an external cover, in which the soul itself should attain full maturity. The spirits, the substances contained in food, are therefore of service and thereby slowly ascend as well, irrespective of whether they come from the plant or animal kingdom. The nourishment needed by the body as sustenance is spiritual substance in the process of maturity too, which has achieved various degrees of development. The body can also consume something unhealthy, that is, nourishment which still contains too many immature spiritual substances, which then might not only bother the body but also the soul, and manifest itself in the form of diseases. However, a strong soul is able to put these immature substances in order but it must already have achieved a high degree of spiritual maturity to be able to exert a redeeming influence on the still immature spiritual substance. The correct preparation of food can therefore promote faster maturing by eliminating virulent spiritual substances before it comes into contact with the human body. For all spiritual substances still constrained in creation have a low degree of maturity but they can be redeemed faster if
they willingly serve the human being. Then their path can be shortened, which is the case when the body submits to the soul's will, when the body does not prevent a soul's conscious striving towards attaining perfection and when these spiritual substances also support the soul by subordinating themselves to the body and thus let themselves become spiritualized too. But this only happens if the food the body consumes is pure, healthy and beneficial for the body's continuation. For once the soul succeeds in making the body compliant by submitting itself to the soul's will, the body's spiritualization will soon take place, providing the soul has united itself with the spirit within itself, thus consciously strives towards spiritual perfection.

If, however, the soul has no bond at all with its spirit then it will allow itself to be determined by its body i.e., all unspiritual substances of its external cover will strongly predominate and control the soul. In that case, its thoughts and intentions will only aim to increase its physical well-being and then a high intake of food and drink will also prevent its spiritual development. The body will consume an excess of unspiritual substances which pull body and soul down, for then everything of a satanic nature will push itself into the forefront and find no resistance, thus endangering higher development if not preventing it altogether. And once again it follows that the prayer for blessing of all nourishment is the best means to avoid this danger. I can and will transform everything that is detrimental for your soul if only you always think of Me before you eat your food, which will always contain more or less immature spiritual substances, because everything passing through the works of creation is still earth-bound whatever degree of development it may have achieved. Your will to attain perfection on earth is valued by Me, and a prayer for blessing everything you consume always proves your will to Me and I shall always comply with it. However, that which serves the maintenance and growth of the body fulfils its actual task of service, and in this way you must always look at the consumption of food. The fact that certain moderation has to be observed, that you must not merely satisfy your physical cravings, speaks for itself, for then you will avoid the danger of your body being harassed by harmful spiritual substances. You don't need any special clarification as to which foods are useful and which are detrimental to you, for your will to live in My eternal order will also give you the right feeling in the choice of your meals, and each one can be of use to you, just as each one can harm you if you don't keep to the right amount or if base cravings incite you into satisfying them. For you must know that only your free will determines to what extent you resist the temptations of the adversary, of your soul's enemy. And he will always make use of everything that can become a danger to you. He will arouse cravings in you, he will use the body to influence your soul and put it under pressure wherever it is possible for him.

He himself is incapable of forcing you, just as he has no direct influence on the spiritual substance which is still bound in matter; but he can incline your will towards him if you accept the thoughts he transmits to you through cravings and you comply with them yourselves, by either satisfying these craving or by being careless in the choice as well as the amount of your food or even consciously sin against My order which you, however, know full well and can also observe with good will. Hence in a sense you contribute towards the redemption of immature substances within matter by consuming the right amount of food and drink, because the maturing process of these small spiritual particles involves their being of service, and as soon as you enable them to 'serve' you are helping them to mature. I Myself assigned this serving function or duty of service to every work of creation, and if the human being himself lives within divine order he will never prevent the spirits' higher development, in whatever form they are still bound. For I also created the human being with all his needs, and it is up to him to
always observe moderation and to make use of that which I assigned to him in love and wisdom. And anyone who does not consciously want to sin will also make use of all creations I designated for him, on whatever spiritual level they may be, according to My intended order. And in unity with Me he will always appeal for My blessing and then also contribute towards the fact that his body’s still immature spiritual substances as well as those the body consumes for its upkeep will be guided into the right order, that they will mature during earthly life according to My will.”

The Soul - A
Ref: MV Vol. 1:634

Man falls into error when considering life and death and applying these two nouns. He calls “life” the period of time in which, born of his mother, he begins to breathe, to nourish himself, to move, to think, to act; and he calls “death” the moment when he ceases breathing, eating, moving, thinking, acting and he becomes cold insensitive remains, ready to go back into a bosom: a sepulcher. But it is not so. I want to make you understand “life”, and point out to you the actions suitable to life.

Life is not existence. Existence is not life. Also this vine which is intertwined around these columns exists. But it does not possess the life of which I am speaking. Also that bleating sheep, tied to that far off tree, exists. But it does not have the life of which I am speaking. The life of which I am speaking does not begin with the existence of the body and does not cease with the ending of the flesh. The life to which I refer does not start in a mother’s womb. It begins when a soul is created by the Thought of God to dwell in a body, it ends when sin kills it.

Man, at first, is but a seed that grows, a seed of flesh, instead of gluten or of marrow, like the seeds of cereals and of fruit. At first he is but an animal taking shape, the embryo of an animal like the one now swelling in the womb of that sheep. But the moment that this incorporeal part, which is also the most powerful in its subliming incorporeity, is infused into the human conception, then the animal embryo does not only exist as a beating heart, but it lives according to the Creating Thought, and becomes man, created in the image and likeness of God, the son of God, the future citizen of Heaven.

But that happens if life lasts. Man can exist having only the image of man, but no longer being man. That is, he is a sepulcher in which life putrefies. That is why I say: “Life does not begin with existence and does not cease with the ending of the flesh.” Life begins before birth. Life, then, never ends, because the soul does not die, that is, it does not fall into nothingness. It dies to its destiny, which is the celestial destiny, but it survives its punishment. It dies to that blissful destiny, by dying to Grace. This life hit by a canker, which is the death of its destiny, last throughout centuries in damnation and torture. This life, if preserved as such, reaches the perfection of living, by becoming eternal, perfect, and blissful like its Creator.

Have we any obligations to life? Yes, we have. It is a gift of God. Every gift of God is to be used and preserved carefully, because it is as holy as the Donor. Would you ill-use the gift of a king? No. It is handed down to the heirs, and to the heirs of the heirs, as a glory to the family. Why then ill-treat a gift of God? How is this divine gift to be used and preserved? How is this heavenly flower of the soul to be kept alive to preserve it for Heaven? How can you achieve “to live” above and beyond existence?

Israel has clear laws on the matter and has only to comply with them. Israel has prophets and just people who set examples and explain how to observe the law. Israel has now also its saints. Israel cannot, should not err. I see stained hearts and dead souls swarming everywhere. So, I say to you: do penance; open your souls to the Word;
practice the immutable Law; give fresh blood to the worn out “life” which is languishing within you; if it is already dead, come to the true Life: to God. Bewail your sins. Shout: “Mercy!” But rise from the dead. Do not be dead people alive, so that in future you may not suffer eternally. I will speak to you only of the way to reach and preserve life. Another man said to you: Do penance. Cleanse yourselves of the impure fire of lust, of the mud of sin.” I say to you: My poor friends, let us study the Law together. Let us hear in it, once again, the fatherly voice of the true God. And then let us pray together the Eternal Father saying” “May Your mercy descend into our hearts.”

The Soul – B

God the Father is speaking: “There is still a complete lack of clarity about problems which cannot be solved by human intelligence alone and where God’s spirit has to work even though its working is rarely acknowledged. But only He is able to give a clear answer to questions that concern unsolved problems. However, even the results of such working of the spirit are doubted although they alone correspond to the truth. Irrespective of what question is asked, only the answer given to people by God Himself through His spirit will always be correct. However, 'spirit' should not be confused with 'intellect' because intellect can just as well reason in the wrong direction. There is no guarantee that intellectual results correspond to truth or so many different opinions and points of view would not exist, all claiming to be truth but all merely gained by means of intellect.

The 'spirit', however, is the radiance emanated by the Eternal Truth Itself which gives light, i.e. knowledge which is simply accepted by the intellect, for which there is no evidence. But the 'spirit of God' provides absolute innermost conviction; it provides comprehensive clarification even without making special use of the intellect. The concept of 'soul' cannot be tangibly explained to someone unless he has already acquired a certain amount of 'spiritual knowledge' because the soul is something spiritual, it has no earthly-physical quality and can therefore only be explained spiritually. The soul is the fluid essence which gives life to the body, to the physical form. The soul is the actual life, the human being’s true ego, which is sheltered in an external physical shell, which cannot be seen but is always present as long as energy expresses itself in it. Without the soul the human being would not be a self-aware being. The soul is God’s once emanated strength which He externalized as a spiritual being to whom He gave an independent life. And this being was endowed with free will and the ability to think. The fact that and why this spiritual being, the soul, shelters within the human body during its earthly life is a separate issue; first it should be explained that it is the soul which thus enables the human being to think, feel and want.

It should be emphasized that the soul is the animator of all organs, that every physical activity, every prompting of will and feeling is the expression of the soul within the body, which is indeed something spiritual that cannot be seen by the human eye and which, if it could be seen, would fully resemble its external human shell. It is the soul which continues to live after the death of the body and which then can also be seen by other souls whose degree of maturity enables their spiritual vision. The soul can therefore never be explained as some kind of physical substance; it is and remains spiritual substance, thus God’s spiritual emanation, which is intended to fulfill a purpose on earth. It is indestructible and immortal but can differentiate itself from other souls by its emission of light, and the purpose of its earthly life consists of increasing the degree of light which it had once darkened of its own free will.
It is not possible for anyone to explain the essence of soul purely scientifically because the soul is nothing tangible nor explicable with human senses but strength from God’s strength, whose essence is and remains equally inexplicable but Who cannot be denied by thinking people. Just as the soul is the true Self of the human being which cannot be defined either, which exists yet cannot be proven, which certainly controls the functions of the physical organs but can also exist without the body, whereas the body without the soul is completely lifeless matter even if all organs are still unchanged. But the life is missing as soon as the soul leaves the body, something is missing that activates the body, which triggers the organs' functions, which decisively influences the brain voluntarily and which arouses the stirring of every resolve in a person. And this thinking, wanting and feeling something, the soul, now exists in other spheres but always as the same being which previously inhabited the body. And therefore it can also be recognized in the realm of the beyond which, however, requires a certain degree of maturity.

The Soul's Individuality

God the Father is speaking: “For the sake of complete clarity I want to give you a further explanation: The spiritual being I brought into life, that is, which I externalized from Me as something spiritually tangible, cannot be denied individuality. This being was created in My image; it was externalized by Me into infinity as entirely separate; it was self-aware and therefore also recognized itself as a thinking being with free will. It was a miniature of Me Myself, but so minute compared to My fundamental fullness that one can indeed speak of a 'tiny spark' from the fiery sea of My strength of love. And yet it was an individual with self-determination, except that through the influx of strength of love it was constantly in contact with Me, but it did not hinder the being in any way. It was free and full of light and strength. It was a divine creature which had come forth from Me in supreme perfection and from My side experienced no limitation of any kind. Any limitation or restriction of its light and strength was caused by itself because it was able to make its own choices. And the same also applies to all spiritual beings which the first-created spirit brought into life through its will with the use of My strength. They, too, were supremely perfect, every being was conscious of itself and thus an individual which was able to be separately and fully independently active in the spiritual kingdom in free will. Hence no being was bound to Me and My characteristics by force, every being moved freely and separately within the spiritual creations and was inconceivably happy. If therefore a 'fall of the spirits' is spoken of, a descent of the original spirits into the abyss, it should be understood such that the beings refused to receive My illumination of love, that they rejected the flow of My strength of love, which ceaselessly poured out of Me and permeated everything with light and strength. They no longer accepted My spirit, My love, they separated themselves from Me deliberately but would never be able to fade away again because they were and will forever remain My emanated strength of love. Each fallen original spirit was a being in its own right, an 'individual,' and will remain so for all eternity. It strove away from the Eternal Light, from the Primary Source, and therefore deprived itself of all light and strength.

But the original spirit remained the being which once came forth from Me in supreme perfection. Even if the infinitely long process of guiding the spiritual being back to Me, where this being is dissolved and its tiny particles have to go through all
creations, all these particles come together again and, after endlessly long periods of
time, form the self-aware being again, the fallen original spirit, so that shortly before its
perfection as the human being's soul it can make a free decision again as to whether it
wants to return to the realm of the blessed spirits or whether it will infinitely prolong its
return again as a result of its own opposition. However, the self-aware being, the human
being, shelters as soul the spirit I once externalized, which will always and forever
remain the same individual that once originated from Me. It was perfect and chose the
abyss of its own free will but it did not cease to exist, it did not become fragmented, it
is and forever remains the self-aware being, with the exception of the path of return
through the creations when its self-awareness is taken away, when it is dissolved and in
the state of compulsion takes the path of higher development. And even if the being has
to travel the path through the creations more than once, it will always remain the same
self-aware being which once turned away from Me, which rejected the strength of My
love and thus deliberately separated itself from Me despite the fact that this can never
happen because everything that emerges from Me will always be inseparably connected
to Me. Thus the 'apostasy of the spirits' is also to be understood literally. The self-aware
being I once emanated fell because I did not stop it and because it was able to determine
its own fate in free will. And this spiritual being must return to Me again in supreme
perfection if it wants to unite with Me in order to be incomparably happy forever. For as
soon as I can permeate it with My love again it will also regain its original state.
However it always remains aware of itself, it is lovingly united with Me and yet a free
being which nevertheless has entirely entered into My will and therefore can create and
work with Me in inconceivable happiness.”

Development of the Soul - Original Spirit

BD No. 7571 of 04/07/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: “Spiritual substance matures during every
developmental period, and one period can in fact suffice for the spiritual substance to
progress through the creations to the point that it is able to embody itself as a human
being and successfully pass its last test of will. But several such periods may be needed
for this spiritualization of hardened soul-substances if resistance is so strong that its
higher development is too slow and the existence as a human being carries an added risk
of the soul descending into the abyss again. For free will, which is tested during the
stage as a human being, is decisive.

But prior to this, free will is constrained. Although the hardened spiritual
substance is no longer subject to God’s adversary’s will due to this process of
development through the creations of earth, the individual substances are nevertheless
unable to use free will, instead they are controlled by God’s will, that is, their process of
development takes place in a state of compulsion, they are subject to God’s will, Who
assigns a task to all spiritual substances within the works of creation. By accomplishing
this task within the law of compulsion they gradually progress, i.e. their resistance
lessens; they carry out a helpful function and are able to slowly reach the state when
their free will can be returned to them. And this process of development requires
constant changes of the external shape, it is a slow ascent, it is an integration with the
laws of nature and therefore a submission to God’s will, if only due to a certain amount
of coercion which, however, only helps to relieve the being and one day is meant to
provide it with the freedom to think, want and act using its own will again.

And this process through the works of creation cannot be avoided if the spiritual
being is to return to God again, from Whom it had distanced itself to such an infinite
extent as a result of its apostasy that it would never be able to overcome this distance
of its own strength, and would never be released by God’s adversary to return either if God did not remove the spiritual substance from him for the very purpose of banishing it into matter, into the creations on this earth. God’s adversary is entitled to the fallen spirits because they had voluntarily followed him into the abyss. But God has the same right because the beings emerged from His strength. Hence God is justified in removing them from the adversary’s control, but in return the latter was given the right to influence the soul again when it lives on earth in the stage as a human being. And to this end the spiritual substance must have attained a degree of maturity again when it is able to use its will in order to freely decide which lord to choose.

But God cannot place the spiritual substance into this state instantly, it has to cover the process of ascent in the same progressive stages as it had descended, it has to relinquish its resistance slowly, as it cannot forcibly be broken. And this requires innumerable changes of form, through the world of rocks, plants and animals to the human being. Every change of external shape also lessens its resistance, for the being has been of service in a state of compulsion by which it gains increasingly lighter forms. But the sin of apostasy from God is so vast that the distance from Him is therefore vast as well, which means that untold changes of shapes are needed to reduce this distance in order to come closer to God again, when only the last free decision of will is required for the last form to fall off, for the being to return to the Father again from Whom it had originated.

And this whole process of development within the creations of earth is a continuous battle. The spiritual substance tries to burst the external shape because it experiences it as a constraint, but each time it also experiences the rupture of the form as a relief irrespective of its level of maturity. And this is why the struggle, which you humans are able to observe in the animal kingdom, only seems cruel in your eyes, whereas time and again every animal experiences the change of its external shape as a relief. For this reason God permits or even wants the weaker to succumb to the stronger, the stronger to terminate the life of the weaker and, in a manner of speaking, is thereby even able to serve the spiritual substance to continue its development. Therefore, as long as the being is subject to the law of compulsion everything is determined by God, its end as well as its new formation. However, as soon as the being has reached the stage of a human being and has received its free will again, God withdraws His will. And then the human being is given laws which he has to observe if his earthly life is to be successful. On the one hand he is tied to the laws of nature, and on the other hand he is informed of God’s will, to which he has to submit if his development is to progress and reach a conclusion, for the goal is to become free of every external shape and to enter the kingdom of light as a free spirit, to return to the Father’s house, to God, from whence the being once originated.”
of love placed the being into a state of brightest realization, it was illuminated, it recognized Me Myself and everything that surrounded it. Every being was an immeasurably happy God-like spirit. And yet, for reasons which have been explained to you many times already, countless beings fell away from Me while many others remained with Me. The former lost their light, whereas the latter kept their immense abundance of light and did not follow My adversary, the first fallen original spirit, into the abyss. And with these remaining original spirits I create and work in infinity. But you humans are also aware of the fact that I set Myself the goal for the deification of all created spiritual beings and that this deification has to be accomplished by the being’s own free will. You know why the beings had once fallen, and you also received the information of My eternal plan of Salvation which pursues the return of all fallen spirits (who want to return to God) and which will certainly be achieved one day. You are aware of the fact that childship to God is the highest goal and that, according to My plan of eternity, all beings, which live on earth as humans, are able to achieve childship to God, if their free will seriously strives for it. Then every once fallen being will have attained the highest degree of bliss, it will have become My image, it will be able to create and work entirely of its own free will and, yet, it will be completely the same as My will, it will no longer be determined by Me yet My child will have completely acquired My will and will therefore be inconceivably happy. And this exceedingly high degree of bliss is also desired by My remaining spiritual beings, for although they are in direct contact with Me, although they are constantly permeated by My strength of love they are still created beings according to My will which cannot but think and act according to My will, which are more or less only ever implementers of My will. Making this difference clear to you humans requires a high degree of maturity which you do not possess as yet, so in view of your limited thinking I can only explain to you such things which your intellect is able to grasp, precisely because you lost this profound realization about all correlations in the spiritual kingdom as a result of your fall into the abyss and have not yet attained the final realization on earth. Nevertheless, it suffices you to know that the beings which remained with Me will also take the path across Earth one day in order to attain childship to God, which will immeasurably augment their beatitude.

This path across earth therefore requires a life in the flesh, the existence as a human being, just like the once fallen spiritual beings must do in order to pass their test of will. Consequently, a spirit of light wishing to embody itself on earth will also choose an earthly body for its abode whose spiritual substances have already attained a certain degree of maturity so that a spirit of light can occupy it, that it will animate the dead external form, the human body, and start its path across Earth in it. This spirit of light is therefore the spiritual strength which has to flow into a human body, which is born into the world as a human being and which can only 'live' when this spiritual strength, the soul, the divine breath, is breathed into this external form by My all embracing Fatherly love, which has set Itself the goal of deifying all Its created beings into children. So this angel-spirit animates the human being as a soul, and since the body’s substances, although more clarified than those of most people, are still immature, since they, in My adversary’s world, are also exposed to his influences, and since the angel-spirit has to fulfill a spiritual task on earth as well and is also usually unaware of its origin, the soul, its real Self, must resist all temptations which confront it from outside. It must fight against all instincts which still adhere to the body, because the latter had passed through all works of creation, and as a human must often travel an extremely difficult path of life during which his free will must not fail, where he will always have to take refuge in Me as his Father so as not to lose the strength he needs on earth. For as an angel-spirit he had voluntarily given up his abundance of light and strength when he started the process
across earth. Nevertheless, the bond with Me is very strong because such a person is permeated by unusually ardent love which is the most reliable guarantee that he will reach his goal on earth, that he will return to Me as 'My child' because this was his greatest desire while he was in My kingdom. Hence every spirit of light will always go through the same process, it will always, as a 'soul', enter an earthly material form which will exert a more or less strong influence due to its multifarious composition and which will present many tasks to the soul, for this external form will always have passed through earthly matter, unless, due to previous unusual influences having clarified its substances already, it can very quickly follow the requirements of My divine spiritual spark which, in the embodied beings of light glows especially brightly and can achieve a complete spiritualization of all substances faster.

And so the soul of Jesus was also a most elevated spirit of light. He, too, entered an earthly material external form and gave life to this form when He, as a soul, took possession of the external cover, when He was born on earth. The vessel which gave birth to Him was pure and immaculate, His conception was not a low act of the senses, even so, his body was the same as every other human body because He was meant to accomplish the work of spiritualization as an example which should and can be emulated by all people. His soul, even though it came from above, was also harassed by immature spirits which He was not allowed to shake off but which, by virtue of His love, He had to spiritualize as well, which required tremendous work on Himself and such work must likewise be carried out by every angel-spirit in earthly life, because the process through the 'abyss' also means the conquering of everything that belongs to the abyss and afflicts these people. Their great love, however, accomplishes this work with perseverance and patience. And usually they succeed in spiritualizing body and soul, that is, to also redeem the still unspiritual substances which join the soul, to establish complete order in themselves while at the same time fulfilling an exalted mission they voluntarily offered to do."

Every Soul is an Original Spirit - Part B
BD 8008b 02.10.1961

God the Father is speaking: "Every substance, every spiritual being which once emerged from My love, is emanated strength. In their fundamental element they are the same as Me Myself, they are made of the strength of My love. The fallen spirits were dissolved into countless tiny particles for the purpose of being led back to Me; the once emanated strength was reshaped into all kinds of creations, for the strength had to become active again somehow because this is the law of eternity. But these dissolved tiny particles gathered again, and every once fallen original spirit receives its self-awareness back as soon as it lives on earth as a human being, as soon as it starts the final stage of the infinitely long process of development before it enters the spiritual realm once more. Hence this gathered spiritual substance animates a human being’s external form.

The soul itself is therefore the once-fallen original spirit, it is the self-aware being which once originated from Me in an abundance of light and voluntarily fell away from Me and which My adversary, the first-fallen spirit of light, pulled into the abyss. The host of originally created spirits was innumerable and the number of beings which remained with Me was also inconceivably great. Yet they, too, were basically the same: emanated strength of love from Me. If therefore a spirit of light, angel-being, takes the path across the earth for the purpose of attaining childship to God, it enters the same situation as every fallen spirit. It enters a cover of flesh which consists of more or less tiny matured spiritual particles, for the flesh belongs to this earth. The body can certainly be more
clarified and shelter fewer substances opposed to Me but it is always earthly material substance which is, after all, the reason why all earthly progress becomes a difficult trial or test of will for the soul inhabiting a body of flesh.

For challenges need to be present, even a soul of light must experience battles of the flesh which My adversary will initiate, time and again, by using an external cover in order to attack the soul in every way. And thus, even a soul of light will be subject to severe temptations, since the earthly body is in My adversary's realm and he will especially provoke a soul of light in order to make it fall, since he had not succeeded in the past. Yet such a soul's exceptionally strong willingness to love also assures it a constant flow of strength from above, for it will not renounce its bond with Me, it is powerfully drawn to Me and this yearning of love is a formidable weapon in the battle with the adversary, from which it will certainly emerge victoriously. However, you must not think that a spirit of light, a non-fallen spirit, will join a fallen spirit in order to take the path across earth together. Every soul is an original spirit, whether fallen or not. The fallen original spirit goes through the process of development dissolved in countless substances until it is permitted to embody itself as a human being, until it therefore enters a human external shape as a 'soul.' Then non-fallen spirits do not need to be dissolved; instead, it enters a human cover as a soul from above, just like those beings of light which attained a high degree of light in the kingdom of the beyond and, for the sake of a mission, want to repeat the path on earth with the goal of attaining childship to God. Such souls directly embody themselves in the flesh. My once emanated strength flows as a 'breath of life' into the external human form and gives life to this form. You humans should always remember that everything which was once 'created' by Me is My emanated strength of love which, as a result of My will, became self-aware beings which can never perish. But I can also reshape this strength, I can dissolve these beings and let other creations arise if I thereby pursue a purpose which is based on My love and wisdom. However, I can also clothe such a self-aware being with the cover of a human being if My love and wisdom thereby hopes to achieve a purpose. And every soul, which ought to be regarded as a human being's real life, is an original spirit, to whom My infinite love offers the opportunity of attaining childship to God on earth, which every created being must strive for and accomplish itself."

**Self-awareness of the Original Spirit**

BD No. 7569 of 04/05/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: “Every original spirit regains its self-awareness when it lives as a human being on earth and recognizes itself as a human being. Then all the small particles of soul, which were once dissolved for the purpose of return through creation, are gathered in the spirit again, and then the being will be able to acquire the degree of maturity which it originally possessed as a created spirit, which it had renounced and now has to regain in order to enter the spiritual kingdom as a spirit of light. And thus every human being is an embodied original spirit, a once fallen being, My eternal love’s product of creation, which had merely left Me of its own free will and therefore also has to return to Me again of its own choice.
But the human being does not know what he was, what he is and what he should become again. He first needs a certain level of maturity before he can receive and understand this knowledge. He certainly recognizes himself as a human being soon enough but not as a spiritual being that is to fulfill its purpose, and since he only recognizes himself as a human being living on earth, his thoughts are more directed towards the world. And this usually prevents spiritual awareness which he will only experience when he turns away from the world towards the spiritual kingdom. Then it is possible to inform him of his real purpose, and then he will be able to accept and adjust to it voluntarily, which will certainly result in his full spiritual maturity. However, once he has accepted it he will also be happy at the thought and the certainty of belonging to the original spirits which I externalized as living creations and which return to Me as children, and as human beings are therefore approaching their perfection.

And only the human will needs to be good, because then it will focus on Me of its own accord. The human being asks for his God and Creator and this resolve is already the right decision, it will have passed the test of will which confronts the original spirit as human being on earth. Life on this earth does not last long but it can fully suffice for a person to spiritualize himself so completely that he acquires the degree which results in the childship to God, i.e. which returns the original spirit into a state of perfection again. On account of his resolve he will have achieved the highest degree himself and can then stay in closest proximity to Me where the direct emanation of My love is assured to him, even though every original spirit will be able to ascend ever higher once he is allowed to enter the kingdom of light, provided the right decision of will was made on earth. And every original spirit is ecstatically happy when he becomes aware of the infinitely long path he had travelled in order to achieve the greatest abundance of light, in order to be immensely blissful. And he will sing My praises and give thanks and glorify Me eternally, he will be and remain My child which will never leave Me again, which will create and shape in accordance with My will for its own happiness.”

Immortality of the Soul
BD No. 1874b of 04/04/1941 taken from book 28

Jesus is speaking: “The construction of a human being always requires the same components: body, soul and spirit. The body, the external form, performs the functions which are determined by the soul. Consequently the body is just the agent through which the souls will is accomplished. At the moment of death the soul no longer needs an agent for service as it did on earth. i.e. in the visible work of creation, because it changes its environment and moves into regions where nothing externally visible needs to be done. The body, which was just the instrument for the earthly path during which the soul should have formed itself into the carrier of the divine spirit, becomes unnecessary.

The spirit, the third component of the living being, lies in fact dormant in every human being and only becomes active when the will of the soul pays more attention to the spirit than to the body, that is, when the soul considers the earthly demands less important than the demands of the spirit, which always amounts to earthly needs becoming secondary. Although body, soul and spirit belong together they nevertheless can have separate goals. The soul can direct its will more towards the demands of the body, but it can also disregard those and make its will available to the spirit within itself. And it is precisely this direction of will that decides its life in the beyond, i.e. the state the soul finds itself in after the earthly life, which can be blissful or distressing. The earthly life, the function of the body, is therefore just a temporary condition for the soul. The soul impels the body to all actions on earth but it has by no means ceased to exist
when the body cannot perform its function any longer. The soul has indeed left the body because it moves into regions where it no longer requires an exterior form.

But to consider the soul dead as well would be a completely wrong concept of its essence, because the soul is something that cannot pass away. Indeed, when the human body is dead the soul can no longer determine its functions; it can, due to a lack of maturity because it had not given enough consideration to the spirit within itself, also fall into a state of inactivity; but it can never 'cease to exist'. Because the soul is something spiritual that is everlasting, while the body consists of earthly substance, of matter, and is therefore subject to constant change and finally disintegrates into its components as soon as the soul has left the body.”

The Soul's Process of Development before Embodiment
BD No. 6930 of 09/29/1957 taken from book 74

God the Father is speaking: “You humans have passed through many forms, i.e., your real Self, your soul, had to go through a long process of development before it was allowed to incarnate in a human body. And this process of development was the path through all the works of creation. Dissolved into countless minute particles the soul had to animate each one of these works of creation and thus slowly mature, as soon as various particles had joined each other they had to constantly enter new forms, and all forms, the innumerable works of creation, contributed towards the maturing of these substances of soul until, finally, all particles were allowed to come together again and as a human soul enter and give life to the last form, the human body. Hence you all had to travel this path of development since due to your past fall into sin the separation from God became so great that the soul in its lifeless state, which was the result of its apostasy, would never have been able to overcome this vast distance from Him. It first had to be brought back to life. But life could not be granted to the beings which had become sinful; they had to acquire it through being of service. However, the being would never serve voluntarily because it would have been prevented from doing so by God's adversary, whom it had followed into the abyss.

But it wasn’t meant to remain eternally subject to death, it was meant to be given the opportunity to attain life, and this 'opportunity' was the creation. God seized the fallen spirits from His adversary and made them serve Himself, He gave every work of creation its purpose according to natural law and made it fulfill this purpose in a state of compulsion.

As a result it had to be of service and, if only after an infinitely long time, thereby acquired a weak life which nevertheless enabled it to become constantly more active. For every being having once emerged from God’s love was His emanated strength which wants to be active. However, the beings which had joined God’s adversary rejected God’s illumination of love which is needed for living, thus for a being’s activity, and therefore it fell into the state of death. And were it left to the being itself it would never be able to come alive again because its fall into the abyss made it completely helpless. For this reason God called a work into existence which at first ruled out the being’s will for activity, which subordinated itself entirely to His will and which, through 'natural law', carried out the purpose He had assigned to this work, to the whole of creation.

His plan consisted of slowly bringing back to life what was lifeless, of giving it the possibility to be active again. And thus it was joined to the individual works of creation in tiny particles and through natural law obliged to get active again. It was bound in these creations and unable to resist, it had to be of service, but thereby was also able to reach the degree of development which gained it ever more freedom and
finally also placed the spiritual being into the state of free will, from where it then has to decide whether it wants to continue its ascent or return into the abyss once more; For God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend. This decision of free will therefore takes place during the final stage of development on this earth, when the soul is embodied as a human being and can use its free will again at its own discretion. Then the human being must recognize the great mercy of the former process of development and make conscious use of his earthly life, he must prove himself worthy and have the will that his final stage shall take him to the goal, he must strive whole-heartedly for his perfection and thus prove that he belongs to God; he must do whatever it takes so as not to fall again into the hands of the one from whom God’s love had helped him become free throughout infinitely long times. He must not live carelessly during this short time but again and again only remember the spiritual goal which will release him from all constraints, which signifies the reunion with God in light and strength and happiness. And thus you humans were given earthly life for the sake of liberating your soul from a bondage which was placed upon you by God’s adversary since time immemorial but which was its own fault and thus it will also have to remove its own share in order to gain its freedom and everlasting life.”

Composition of the Soul - miniature creation
BD No. 4845 of 02/24/1950 taken from book 55

God the Father is speaking: “The human being’s soul is a formation consisting of inconceivably numerous miniature creations. It is effectively a composition of creations which were its past embodiments, so that it can be called the whole work of God’s creation Who demonstrated His infinite love, wisdom and omnipotence in the human soul. The human being has no idea that he shelters the entire creation in his soul, but when, after the death of his body, he is able to behold himself in the spiritual kingdom he will look with utmost reverence and love for God upon the works of wonder he finds within himself again. The soul substance of every embodiment during this process of
development is gathered, and thus the individual substances of the human soul have moved through the whole of creation and now exhibit an incredible versatility. Only then will it become obvious how magnificent God’s works of creation are, and His greatness, His love, wisdom and omnipotence will emerge so distinctly that all living creations remain poised in reverence and love for God Who provides such immeasurable happiness to His living creations through becoming aware of His strength and the realization of Himself. However, the soul requires a certain degree of maturity as to be able to behold itself; this is why it is one of the beatitudes belonging to those in the kingdom of light. Beholding the soul is part of Jesus’ promise ‘eye has not seen, nor ear heard, the things which I have prepared for those who love Me.’ Hence the soul can examine all areas, it can behold what it has never seen before, but which is undeniably present in creation, and it is aware of the fact that these wonders will never end, that constantly new formations emerge and yet it will never tire of beholding these creations, instead it will want to see increasingly more and thus also become increasingly happier. The soul is something imperceptible for human senses and therefore cannot be understood either. For the person on earth it is something spiritual, in the spiritual kingdom, however, it is the essence, it is that which animates the spiritual creations, it is the true living being in the spiritual kingdom because it is permeated by the strength of God. And thus it finds within itself every thought of God again which He shaped into a form through His strength of will. Every work of creation is a manifested thought of God. And so the human soul is an enormous work of creation in miniature, yet for people on earth it is a doubtful concept, it is something of whose existence they are not entirely convinced and which they can never prove scientifically either. Earthly people consider the soul a nothing or a questionable object, in truth, however, it is the most magnificent creation which gives evidence of God’s love, wisdom and omnipotence, which glorifies Him in the spiritual kingdom, which is everlasting and gives rise to constantly praising God by all those who dwell in the kingdom of light and are blessed.”

The Soul - Battle of Light with Darkness

God the Father is speaking: “Listen, my child, it is God’s will to instruct you of teachings which correspond to your thoughts and therefore I want to let you know today how very fond our Lord Jesus is of you and how much your dedication pleases Him. If you ever feel a sense of abandonment, never be frightened, for One is always close to you, your Saviour, Who will help you carry your every worry. Confidently travel your path of life until the end in this knowledge and don’t be afraid! Not everyone is granted the same fate of being allowed to work physically and spiritually as the Lord and Saviour has intended for you, yet if you always lift your eyes upwards you will be able to live up to both and constantly feel the Father’s caring hand.

Listen to us, who stay close to you, and try to understand: In the beginning of the world all spirits were united, it was a being surrounded by the light of the eternal Sun. Elements whizzed through the universe which shied away from the radiance and tried to destroy the divine light. During the battle of darkness against light countless atoms lost contact with the light and the elements of darkness declared war on those tiny bodies of light which went astray in the universe in order to extinguish their abundance of light, which each of these small and smallest beings sheltered, and to draw these beings into the sphere of influence of darkness, thus, the battle between good and evil erupted, which will last for an unforeseeable time to come. And God gave every being of light the freedom to turn according to its own will. Nevertheless, these beings will continue to
fundamentally belong to the divine light, even if the battle lasts for millennia, each one of the smallest components of the eternal Light will flow back to the origin of its purpose. This is the cycle according to God’s will, that every being should voluntarily turn to Him, with full use of its strength and supported by the love of the divine Father who generates all light, and thus find the path back to perfection and be permitted to stay close again to the heavenly Father, the eternal Light.

When your will applies to spiritual spheres you shall also receive the strength to pursue your goal. The assurance for your striving rests in your heart, you will feel in your heart that your contact with the Saviour will result in the flow of divine grace and, happily and with inner peace, you will be able to look forward to the future. Where the Saviour seeks to help His Own every day will bring you blessings, yet also thank the Lord for every day which instructs you of His Word. And thus begin: Where beings of light argue with darkness no grain will go astray, everything will arise anew, always aspiring to reach the light. The smallest beings will stay in the universe and, depending on the duration of their life, will reshape themselves time and again, until they finally reach a state in which they can freely use their own discretion to do as they like, yet always subject to the Creator’s will. At the onset of their own freedom of will they are also responsible for their further course of life and development, for the maturity of their soul. It is their purpose to return to the eternal light from whence they originated, yet the time they take to accomplish this purpose has been left up to them. Consequently, the light beings struggle incessantly against the power of darkness. Those who emerge victoriously from this battle in turn contribute towards helping those who are weak, and the most effective weapon in the battle against the opponent is love.

Oh, it is so pleasing for us to watch your endeavor! Anyone who strives towards the light like that cannot descend into darkness, therefore continue to receive our teachings so devotedly, after all, it benefits the salvation of your soul and that of many others. And thus today we want to give you the final conclusion to yesterday’s work: Throughout short intervals of time and space numerous beings of light go through their period of development embodied in animal and plant life, and they, too, unconsciously strive time and again towards the light. After a long time, during which they continue to develop higher in various stages, they enter the last stage before their spiritual rebirth, the embodiment as a human being. At this stage the battle begins with the darkness, which would like to deprive this earthly being of its purpose and completely pull the soul down into obscurity. And since the human being has free will at this stage to make a personal choice for good or evil, for light or darkness, this battle carries tremendous responsibility, for his apostasy from the heavenly Father, the eternal Light, would signify a struggle which would last for thousands of years again until this soul is finally also redeemed thanks to the never-ending help of the enlightened spiritual beings’ love. Countless beings would strive more persistently were they aware of this responsibility, yet the human being should find the path to God of his own accord, only then will he once again be able to become a part of that which he was at the beginning of the world. Where God’s omnipotence and love takes effect none of the tiny beings of light goes astray, this is why your attention is repeatedly drawn to the fact that, in infinity, every being takes its designated path, conducive to its development, in the care of the Father. The profundity of this law does not seem comprehensible to you, yet neither will you be able to grasp your heavenly Father’s infinite magnitude before you have become what your purpose is, to be as one with the divine Father.”
Your friends from the other side lovingly turn towards you to fulfill your desire, and thus receive:

The world as such has only one purpose, namely, to lead the many living beings, who are carriers of spiritual substances, towards higher development, which can only take place in an environment where all manner of conflicts occur, of which the world offers an adequate amount. Be it on earth or on the many other celestial bodies, living beings everywhere have to face unforeseeable difficulties and need all their strength to overcome them. However, such strength is present in every living being, since every living being receives strength to exist in the first place. Further development therefore always depends on how this strength within the living being is utilized. That means, the sooner any activity incumbent upon the living being is carried out, the faster the spiritual intelligence is released from its surrounding form and the next stage of development can begin.

Now it is possible to ask, which form guarantees the fastest development for living beings? And the answer to this question can only be that it is vital to pass through every form, and that a limit can only be set where the unification of innumerable small particles of soul result in one whole, when all substances of soul are present to give life to the final embodiment, the form of the human being. The most subtle movement in the human being, the gentlest emotion is only due to the finely tuned soul, which in turn is composed of even more subtle particles of soul. These are a most important requirement in the construction of the whole as they, in turn; guarantee the completed soul the most delicate emotions and perceptions for the smallest miracles of creation by divine love. If these tiniest of components did not exist the human being would not understand current and future miracles of creation, he simply would not be able to see something that is not already alive within himself, he must have everything that exists in creation as the smallest components within himself, that is, every substance must be a part of his soul, only then can he also observe what is outside of himself.

This instruction in turn raises the question as to what kind of components the small living beings consist of, and this is easy to explain: they all carry substances of yet smaller living beings within themselves but accordingly can only instinctively feel what has already progressed further in evolution, yet at the same time they control what already exists in these living beings as substance. Knowledge of this important information in the doctrine of creation is of greatest advantage for the human being because from this he will learn to understand the complex composition of human nature. On the basis of this fact he can judge that the human being is indeed the crest of divine creation, so to speak, that he, i.e. his soul, is so delicately constructed within himself, that it is impossible for such a work of art to have been produced by a wise Creator merely for the duration of earthly life, because everything he sees in nature, be it in the region of mineral, plant or animal life, exists in atoms within himself. The human being incorporates the whole work of creation in miniature within himself.

Therefore, he also has to overcome within himself the opposition that approaches him from outside, from the world, which means that countless external dangers motivate the human being into strongest resistance, while likewise the spiritual atmosphere is stimulated by the continuous resistance and permanent struggle of the different substances of soul and only can become stronger and the soul open to higher truths of light in this way. Just as every living being, even the smallest, has to perform a specific task so has the human being, as the carrier of all these substances. And this task
consists first and foremost of spiritualizing all substances of soul that are still in harmful opposition to their real task, who would still prefer to perform the earthly task which is their nature due to their past earthly duty in an earlier form. For this reason the human being has to fight against many faults, mistakes and bad habits since the character of the substances bound in the soul repeatedly comes through and would like to seduce the flesh, the earthly cover, into compliance, which should be strongly resisted during earthly life. And only in this way can it be understood that the human being has an extraordinary responsibility during earthly life; that there must be a continuous struggle to triumph at the end of the day truly spiritualized as victor against all dangers and to have resisted all temptation. After all, how often indeed is the spirit willing but the flesh is weak."

Different kinds of Creations correspond to the Beings' fall

BD No. 8405 of 02/07/1963 taken from book 88

God the Father is speaking: "You inhabitants of earth are destined to become children of God, and therefore you have to overcome the lowest depths in order to be able to reach the highest heights. You will only understand this when you know that the beings' apostasy was quite different in as much as their resistance to Me was not equally strong either, so that, as a result of your maker's will, you were also quite differently natured yourselves, which only relates to your degree of resistance, when you were supposed to make your free decision for Me or for My adversary. You all were permeated by the light of realization, and yet you turned away from Me and joined My adversary, because you were able to see him in all his beauty, whereas I was invisible to you. Nevertheless you knew that you had originated from Me. Hence your resistance was more or less strong with the result that you were also assigned to different creations where you were likewise meant to take the path of return to Me, only the conditions differed from those which the inhabitants of earth had to comply with.

Earth is the work of creation which essentially makes the greatest demands on the fallen being in order to ascend again, whereas other stars offer their inhabitants easier possibilities, nevertheless, the ultimate goal, the childship to God, can only be attained on earth, even though the beings on other stars are granted unimaginable beatitudes after they have concluded their higher development and their will has subsequently been directed correctly.

But in order to attain the childship to God the path across earth has to be travelled, and this can also be covered by a soul, if it so wishes, which has entered the spiritual kingdom from other heavenly bodies and which has reached the specific degree of maturity so that it can be granted a life on earth for the purpose of a mission. Then they (such souls) are already enlightened, yet they are not 'non-fallen' beings but beings from other stars, whose distance to Me has not been so great, so that they relinquished their resistance to Me sooner and endeavored to reach Me again. And as soon as they are enlightened again they also realize the significance of the creation work Earth, and many souls also desire to attain the degree of childship to God and thus accept the extremely difficult conditions because their love for Me and for humanity impels them to do redeeming work.

And thus souls, which do not achieve the degree of maturity during their earthly life, will similarly be able to continue their development in the beyond, and corresponding to their degree of maturity they will be assigned to schoolhouses where they can steadily ascend. For creations everywhere are prepared for souls of all degrees of maturity, and since all creations are arranged differently and offer different living conditions they can already signify a state of joy for the souls having been transferred to them, for they are
far more beautifully shaped than earth, since the creations therein delight the souls and inspire them to greater spiritual endeavors, for they so obviously testify of My love and might and wisdom, that it also intensifies these beings' love for Me. For when the apostasy of the beings took place an incredibly long time ago, which you would already consider an eternity, all beings indeed turned away from Me, but a countless number also separated from My adversary again soon after their apostasy, they did not follow him into the deepest abyss but left the large host.

And My will did the same unto them as it did unto those who had fallen furthest away: From the strength which had been emanated by Me as a being It formed different kinds of heavenly bodies than earth, and the process through these works of creation was far easier and continued faster for the fallen spirits, so that the beings returned to Me sooner, since Jesus' act of Salvation was accomplished for these beings as well and it was possible to redeem their original sin, depending on each individual being's attitude towards its God and Creator, Whom they also recognized in Jesus. For they, too, received the knowledge of the act of Salvation through messengers of light who worked amongst them, whom I assigned as teachers to all beings so that they will find and take the path to Me.

Consequently, there are untold possibilities for the still imperfect soul departing from earth to mature spiritually, and My love and wisdom truly recognizes the most beneficial opportunity to achieve maturity for every single soul. And thus all creations in the universe are populated by spiritual beings in the most diverse degrees of maturity, and they offer unparalleled kinds of bliss and splendors to those who have already achieved a higher degree of light, yet they will always, even for less mature beings, exhibit better and easier living conditions than earth. For this truly is the most wretched work of creation, which requires a lot of effort and makes great demands on the fallen being, up to the human being, but which can lead to the most glorious fate: the childship to God, which makes up for all hardship a thousand fold and turns the being into the most blessed child which will be able to create and work with Me throughout the whole of eternity.

To what extent the creations in the universe are of a spiritual or still material consistency will only be recognized by you humans when you have attained a particular degree of maturity or light, but this much is certain, they all serve the once fallen spiritual beings as an abode and thus are also shaped in accordance with their state of maturity. Hence you should consider all heavenly bodies as schoolhouses which I established Myself in order to one day bestow upon My living creations the bliss again, which they once had voluntarily forfeited and which they will also have to voluntarily acquire again."

The Soul's Process of Pre-Development
BD No. 7259 of 01/18/1959 taken from book 77

God the Father is speaking: “It is difficult to convince people of the fact that they had already travelled an infinitely long path before they reached their existence as human beings. It is difficult, given that precisely this knowledge is not included in the Gospel, which is the foundation of every church organization. But God knows why He did not incorporate this knowledge, why He did not give his disciples the instruction to spread this knowledge, of which Jesus' disciples were most certainly informed. He only gave them the task of proclaiming the divine teaching of love, He made the commandments of love for God and one’s neighbor the subject of what they were to proclaim as Gospel to their fellow human beings, which were also proclaimed by Jesus as a human being on
this earth. For every person who lives up to this teaching of love will gain increasingly more knowledge and subsequently also find out about the human soul’s infinitely long process of pre-development, which only has to pass its last test of will on earth.

The commandment of love is, in fact, the first and most important commandment, a person will not benefit from any knowledge, and regardless of how profound it is, if he fails to live a life of love. For even this knowledge would just be misconstrued intellectual information since only love is the key to realization and without love everything will remain incomprehensible, which is evident in the present time, since the said information will not be believed because it cannot be realized as long a person’s thinking is not illuminated by love. Everyone willing to love will dwell on it and not entirely reject it but he might perhaps question why such knowledge was not given to people earlier, why it isn’t mentioned in the Book of Books. And the same answer applies that knowledge is only of value for a person if it has come alive through love. This is why every kind-hearted person will also be guided into deeper knowledge when the time is right. But since humanity is near the end they shall live even more responsibly. The knowledge about the soul’s process of preliminary development can increase this sense of responsibility in people which, in view of the near end, is not to be underestimated. Even people who are as yet unable to believe can be prompted by thoughts to change their way of life. On the other hand, however, this knowledge is not necessary if a person lives a life of love according to God’s will. Then he will receive the knowledge instantly when he enters the kingdom of the beyond; he will brightly and clearly recognize what appeared unbelievable or was entirely unknown to him on earth.

But during the last days everything possible will be done on the part of God for the human being to reach the goal with ease. His attention will be drawn to his earthly task and the great significance of fulfilling this task, and in view of the end he will also be informed of the previous development, although without proof. However, everyone can obtain this proof for himself if he lived a life of love which could enlighten him and also grant him the ability of spiritual vision. In that case a person would also be able to observe the bustling spiritual activity within the various works of creation, he would come to see the lives of animals and plants in a different light and he would no longer doubt that he, too, would have passed through all these stages of pre-development. But this presupposes a high degree of love, hence the divine teaching of love must always take priority, i.e., the human being’s attained degree of knowledge or realization on earth depends on his fulfillment of the commandments of love. Love is absolutely necessary for the human being but he does not need to be knowledgeable, because he can suddenly become brightly enlightened if he has lived a life of love on earth. And this is why you humans should not be surprised that the Gospel does not openly state something which nevertheless can be found concealed within, for the Word of God has various meanings, which only a person living in love will come to understand. Then he will also find many references regarding the human being’s pre-existence in the creations of earth, and he will only ever attempt to pass his findings on to his fellow human being although they will only be believed if this person, too, is permeated by love."
Pre-Adamites

BD No. 9015 of 07/15/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: “Long before the first human beings lived on earth, who was equipped by God with free will and intellect, human-like living creations whose task it was to make the earth habitable for the succeeding human race already existed. They did their work instinctively, i.e. driven by natural law, in order to sustain themselves, they gathered fruit, harvested field products and built dwellings for themselves, they did everything which instinctively was of benefit to them.

Yet they could not be held accountable for their actions, for they were not embodied by a soul which contained all the minute particles of a fallen original spirit. These beings were already very much like human beings, they had the same bodily form, yet they were neither self-aware nor able to communicate with each other, only their desire for self-preservation was strong and they often lived to a great age. In a manner of speaking they were of service to creation by contributing towards changing the earth’s surface which became ever better prepared as a suitable abode for the needs of human beings. However, these human beings were not yet given a task, they merely served the still imperfect original spirits as a final opportunity to mature, which they then were to continue as a human being with free will and intellect.

Hence these prehistoric people, the Pre-Adamites, could not be considered real 'human beings', for their nature, their appearance and their every activity was more in line with an animal, which is still far behind in its development, only the form was similar to a human being. This is why later people named these living creations prehistoric-man, but which could not be compared to the human being in possession of free will and awareness, which he was also meant to use intellectually in the right manner. Nor can it be said that the human being evolved from this Pre-Adamites, since the human being was a new creation which God only externalized after many of the first original spirits awaited their embodiment. The prehistoric being was one of many creations which all had to serve their purpose of preparing an abode for the later appearing human being that would guarantee him a carefree earthly life. The Pre-Adamites were those human-like beings which could not be held responsible because they lived instinctively, like animals, who lived on earth long before human beings, who were not self-aware and could only live in groups, who thus could only be found where human beings would later settle, for whom they prepared the specific area with their consistent activity. This was the beings' innate characteristic and expressed itself by cultivating large areas of fields, by systematically sowing essential substances and by harvesting such stretches of land. They did this entirely unconsciously, resulting from a natural instinct of self-preservation. They fought each other and the stronger won. And thus they also contributed to the fact that constantly new spiritual beings incarnated themselves, if only for a brief period of time, to prove their strength, when more or less strong impulses asserted themselves which gradually weakened the longer they lived and then also slowly attained the maturity which enabled them to enter their final embodiment as a human-like being.

Thus human-like beings had already existed long before the first human beings, but they cannot in any way be related to the real human beings. They were comparable to them in their external shape but they existed like animals, in their instincts as well as
in their manner of procreation, which evolved in line with their soul-substances, and were one of the many works of creations which disappeared again after they had completed their earthly task, thus the beings no longer required such creations, and they subsequently became extinct like so many creations which earth had sheltered for a while in order to make place for new creations.

But it cannot be said that the modern human being evolved from these prehistoric creations, rather, he was and is a new creation, endowed with free will and intellect, which then had to prove itself, thus he also received his self-awareness again. To what degree the Pre-Adamites could also use a certain amount of intelligence merely depended on the degree of maturity of their embodied soul-particles which, however, were unable to think and only expressed their intelligence through their active work, thus unconsciously. This activity nevertheless produced the greatest works of wonder, as can often be seen in nature that paths were created for these beings to reach one another, that they created gorges and underground passages and thus created the first prerequisites for the human race so that the latter could then live the right kind of life when the time had come for the first original spirits to embody themselves as human beings. The more people spread the more the prehistoric beings began to disappear which, however, only ever happened in stages, until the human race began to populate the earth and their probationary period began, when every once fallen original spirit had to prove itself, and therefore the human being has to be equipped with self-awareness, intellect and free will in order to travel the path across earth which will lead him again to the Father from Whom he once originated.”

Prehistoric People -1
BD No. 9022 of 07/22/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: “You only need to turn to Me with an appeal to grant you an explanation and I will not hesitate to answer. You don’t realize that the act of creation has taken infinitely long periods of time, for you judge by your present concepts to time, whereas the act of creation necessitated eternities, which is rationally impossible for you to understand. Hence you are right in your assumption that the pre-Adamites lived long before the human being, who was recognized as the true human being due to his self-awareness, intellect and free will. Yet this does not exclude the fact that these human beings had no knowledge of pre-historic people, they knew of their existence but described them as having lived long before themselves. But this only happened after the fall into sin, when I sent beings of light from above amongst people which enlightened them as to their past process through all creations. Prior to this they had no knowledge of it at all, and thus no idea about these human-like beings because, wherever people were created, these beings had become extinct. However, since the growth of human population advanced only slowly, in keeping with the matured original spirits, the process of creation continued over a very long time, and thus the earth was not inhabited by people everywhere at once, whereas the pre-Adamites only became extinct when the creation work ‘Man’ began to appear.

Pre-historic people therefore have never lived with human beings together at the same time, but the human being was created at different times since the conditions on earth, too, varied quite considerably and needed this diversity, because even the original spirits developed differently, which is not quite understandable to you humans yet. It is not as if people were instantly created on earth, instead, everything took place such that one can speak of periodic creation, and every period brought forth such beings until the human being with self-awareness, intellect and free will appeared as the last work of
creation. If I now use the term 'at the same time', then I mean the same period of creation which, however, was so long that it cannot be expressed with numbers, but that these pre-historic beings preceded the real human being because no concept of time exists for Me and to Me a thousand years are like a day. And the whole act of creation took so long that people can no longer determine the length of time, only the fact that everything developed, from matter to the mineral and plant world, through the animal kingdom up to the human being, but that I also always created a new external shape for the tiny particles of soul as they developed further.

Hence, the expression 'they developed into the next being' only relates to spiritual development, yet every external shape was a new creation which always vanished again once it had completely fulfilled its purpose, on account of which so many beings disappeared again once human beings came into existence who were able to create and shape according to their will. Thus people did not live alongside pre-historic beings, but that does not rule out that they didn’t inhabit the earth at the same time, they just lived so far apart that they had no knowledge of them, because the time had not yet come for the human being to find the right living conditions he needed in order to survive there. Just one thing has to be clarified, that the earth was not populated at the same time with fully responsible people; they came much later, whereas the pre-historic people still existed wherever the earth was not yet sufficiently developed. It is difficult to give you humans an idea as to how the whole work of creation took place, for you are neither able to imagine the length of time in which this work was completed nor the immense space that had to be populated by the small particles of soul of the fallen original spirits.

This required great diversity which was entirely achieved by My thoughts, so that I saw everything as a minute work of creation before Me and it simultaneously arose as finished work, so that the creation took on ever larger forms wherein the soul particles were to mature, and it was teeming with creations of the most varied kinds, so that I placed every work of creation where possibilities to mature were given. And thus the pre-historic beings were a creation which I placed wherever the future human race was sooner or later expected to take possession of the earth in order to bring its developing process to an end. But that the earth should exhibit the same conditions everywhere was not intended by My versatile creative will, and even today there are vast stretches of land where no human being can exist because he lacks the conditions to survive, for which I have My reasons. Yet it is certain that the human being’s external shape was a work of My love, that I created Man after My image and that his soul, too, shall one day become My image again which, however, was not the case with pre-historic people, they were unable to develop into the human being as he is at present, irrespective of whether he attains spiritual maturity or not.

Prehistoric People -2

BD No. 9023 of 07/23/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: “And if you think that I let you believe something that is wrong you must always consider that you harbor intellectual misconceptions, since the intellect can easily interfere if your contact with Me is not firmly established, but also consider that I always endeavor to clarify even seemingly apparent discrepancies, for you shall be instructed according to truth. The slow development towards ascent often led people to believe that it was to be understood as a purely physical development, hence relating to the external form, however, only the spiritual development was meant by it, the ascent of the substances of soul within every individual work of creation.
And thus My work of creation included countless external forms, which in groups can certainly be referred to as the same creations but which, even then, still consisted of infinitely many groups where one differed again from the other but always continued as the same species, thus there can be no question of higher development as such. However, as the substances of soul continued to mature, new external forms also arose time and again which only were concluded when the work of creation 'Man' came into being, who then had to fulfill the last task on earth: to spiritualize himself, to change himself into the living creation he had been in the beginning, in order to then be able to end his earthly path and return to Me from where he had originated.

The fact that all these pre-historic creations had to contribute towards this change was an exceedingly happy process for Me which sooner or later had to lead to success. Yet to inform a human being of this, who only has a limited intellectual capacity, is only possible to some degree, albeit in the state of light he can instantly comprehend all correlations and the purpose of every external form. But for earthly life it is enough if he receives sufficient light in order to roughly grasp the process of return so that he can also give his fellow human beings a faint idea about the meaning and purpose of creation. And then it depends on every individual person as to what extent he will delve into My eternal plan of Salvation, which only ever aims to achieve My living creations' happiness."

Pre-historic Human Beings - responsibility

BD No. 2513 of 10/16/1942 taken from book 33

God the Father is speaking:

“Throughout infinitely long periods of time earth has evolved such that it can be home to countless living beings and therefore complies with its true task as a place of education for the spirit. During this time of evolution the living beings still had a different nature; they were more or less akin to the evolving earth as far as any living being was able to live. There were numerous developmental periods and from a certain point onwards earth was able to shelter living beings on its surface. However, as earth evolved the more these increased in number, and thus the development of earth’s external form advanced as well as the living beings, which were assigned to earth for the purpose of higher development. It took an inconceivably long time yet this process of evolution was necessary because the spirit within, on the surface and above earth first had to prove itself during the condition of constraint, which the spirit in every work of creation is subjected to. During this time of development the spirit passed its test and could slowly evolve into a living being. The living conditions were considerably more difficult but it asserted itself and gradually evolved into some kind of human being which, however, was completely different from the present day human being.

The being was still constrained, i.e. it acted instinctively, and to some extent it was still guided and did not have its own free will and intellect. Although outwardly the being resembled the human being, it was still on the level of the animal world in every other respect and lived in accordance with divine natural law and therefore instinctively,
without consciousness of its actions. This being was not accountable yet; its life was subject to the law of compulsion, motivated by its inherent instincts, which in turn expressed themselves in the beings in accordance with divine will. These living beings were compatible with the primitive conditions of the earth’s surface, but to a certain extent they contributed towards the earth’s development by multiplying themselves and with their unconscious actions accelerated the changes on the earth’s surface, which became increasingly more suitable to shelter more evolved living beings until the first human beings, equipped with free will and intellect, were assigned to live on this earth. They could make use of everything on earth and, instructed by God Himself, live or were supposed to live a conscious life, which was the actual meaning and purpose of their embodiment on earth. However, now the human being was also answerable to God for his actions and thoughts. He had achieved a certain degree of maturity which enabled him to live in keeping with God’s will and in view of this ability he now was also responsible how he used his life, since it was up to him to utilize all his gifts. However, he was informed of the consequences of his life during this incarnation on earth and thus he is able to make use of his free will.”

Process of Mans Development on Earth

God the Father is speaking: “When earth came into existence, countless spiritual substances were able to embody themselves in its works of creation and gradually ascended during their evolutionary process, because the creations corresponded to the spiritual substances' inherent resistance, which was still unbroken but of different intensity. The works of creation were more or less hard matter, because even earth itself gradually evolved into a work of creation which was to shelter people one day; the spiritual essence which had already covered the process of development to the point when all substances of a fallen original spirit had gathered once again and regained their self-awareness and free will.

But an infinitely long time had passed before the spiritual substance could reach this stage because earth needed this time in order to produce all the creations required by the spirit for its higher development. And the human being should know that he has already spent infinite periods of time on this earth, that the stage of human being is the conclusion of an evolutionary process which his will can now bring to an end. He should also know that one day this infinite path will be shown to him in retrospect, but that this memory has to be removed from him as a human being, since his task as a human being concerns his voluntary return to God. However, when he contemplates the countless wonders of divine creations surrounding him he should seriously ask himself what purpose they have to fulfill, and then he will receive clarification in his heart. He will feel it, if the knowledge is not yet made accessible to him. And he should try to grasp the Creator’s fundamental nature, i.e. request clarification about his relationship to Him. And this, too, will be given to him, since the goal of earthly life rests in the person re-establishing his relationship with God, which he once voluntarily had severed. For that was the ‘fall of the spirits’, they had separated from God of their own free will. And thus, during the last stage of their return to God, they have to voluntarily restore their relationship with Him again and the purpose of their earthly progress will be fulfilled.

The fact that creation has largely contributed in returning the fallen being again can only be understood by you humans when you have achieved this return, because
you would never have been able to reach the ascent if the divine Creator had not taken you away from His adversary’s power who had caused your fall into the abyss, if He had not removed you from his influence during the infinitely long time when you were integrated in the works of creation as tiniest particles of soul. His adversary had no control over you during this time; nevertheless you still belonged to him because you once followed him of your own accord into the abyss. But since you were completely without strength and light as a result of your apostasy from God, your path of return to God would have been impossible for you. For this reason God Himself provided you with this path of return through His works of creation which, in supreme wisdom and infinite love, were shaped to give the spiritual substance the opportunity of service in some form or other and thus, through service, reach ever higher levels of maturity. The spiritual particles which once belonged to an original spirit gathered again and, having achieved a certain level of maturity, commenced their last transformation. For a brief period of time they were allowed to live on earth as a human being and had to be of service again, but of their own free will and with love. The purpose of earthly life for every soul embodied in a human being is to liberate itself from every cover by way of loving service, to return to the spiritual kingdom again, when its earthly life has ended, as the free spiritual being it had been in the beginning.

However, it cannot achieve this spiritualization without help because it is burdened by the original sin which repeatedly pushes it down again i.e. during its earthly life God’s adversary has the right to exercise his influence again, since the spirits once followed him voluntarily. And the fallen original spirit, the human being, would succumb to his influence once more were it not for the offer of guaranteed help: redemption through Jesus Christ, in Whom God embodied Himself to redeem the guilt of sin for all fallen spirits through His sacrificial death on the cross. This help by Jesus Christ, the complete redemption and forgiveness of his sin, is assured to him providing he wants it himself, providing he acknowledges Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation and he acknowledges Jesus as God Himself, Whom the original spirit once denied acknowledgment.

And thus you humans are given a brief explanation concerning the cause and significance of the act of Salvation. You have to know this in order to fulfill the purpose of your earthly life, in order to understand the divine plan of Salvation too, which only ever aims to guide the spirit essence back to God and which will be carried out with love and wisdom, since He has every power at His command to one day achieve the goal He had set Himself when He created all spiritual beings.”

Jeremiah 1:4-5, 17-19: The word of the Lord came to me, saying: Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I dedicated you, a prophet to the nations I appointed you.

Development of Earth and Human Being

BD No. 6295 of 06/26/1955 taken from book 68

God the Father is speaking: “You can come to Me with complete truth and ask Me any question that moves you, for I will always answer it such that it will help you. However, you can only grasp a limited amount of knowledge, yet what I impart to you is sufficient in order to grant you an insight into My eternal plan of Salvation, it is also sufficient for you in order to explain it to and teach other people, and in order to reveal to you My love, wisdom and omnipotence. And I will add to this knowledge the more you progress yourselves, the more receptive you become to My light and strength, for it is My aim that you shall become as perfect as you were in the very beginning, and this
also involves profound realization, the comprehensive knowledge about My reign and activity, about My Nature and your goal.

It took an infinitely long time for you humans to advance from the abyss to the point which permits human existence. This infinitely long time until the development up to the human being had occurred was necessary because everything can only develop in lawful order, no phases of development can be left out at will, hence these phases of development had to take place in accordance with My eternal plan of Salvation and thus appropriate creations were also required for this development, which as 'pre-historic' has become a concept to you. Although the human need for research certainly attempts to calculate the duration of this pre-historic time yet only with very limited success, for the slow advancement of the spiritual substances, as well as the emergence of creation, which you are now able to behold as human beings, has taken eternities; they were infinitely long periods of time for which the word 'eternities' is certainly the right word. The concept of time, however, only began when the living creation 'Man' was called into being by Me, for prior to that the living beings were not rational enough as to enable them to think and reason independently, as to enable them to live consciously and to grasp the concepts of 'past - present and future'.

Only the being endowed with common sense and free will can be called 'a human being', which was sufficiently capable of thinking in order to acquire a certain amount of realization and live accordingly. Hence from this time onwards one can speak of the conscious development towards ascent, where the once fallen spirits were given the opportunity to return to Me for good. The creation of the first human being was the beginning of a period of Salvation where free will became the crucial factor and not My will, as was the case in pre-historic times, where everything took place under the law of compulsion which irrevocably had to result in higher development. And now you wonder how long the 'human being' has populated the earth already, whereby you only ever mean the rational human being who is capable of making his own free decisions and as whose descendants you regard yourselves.

The first human being capable of accepting responsibility for his actions and thoughts was Adam, even though human-like beings already existed before Adam in all parts of the world who instinctively carried out much of which is assumed was human thinking but who nevertheless were impelled by spiritual intelligences, who thus served ascending spiritual substances as a shell and in the law of compulsion carried out what was needed for the development of the creation of Earth, to become a dwelling place for future human beings. They were human species whose instincts and compulsive impulses broke through incredibly strongly but who nevertheless could not be held responsible because they, too, contributed towards the fact that spiritual substances were constantly released and able to embody themselves anew, because everything just served to prepare an area for the human being which was suitable to pass their last test of will. These human-like beings were therefore physically already very akin to the form I had prepared for the human being Adam when the time for the fallen original spirits had come to have their free will returned in order to then be able to liberate themselves from the form altogether. Time and again pre-historic creations released spiritual substances, and the development of what to a certain extent had advanced the whole emergence of earth in its bound state continued to progress, and thus the time eventually came for this spiritual substance to make a free decision.

And this was the beginning of the epoch of Salvation which is of significance for you because it enabled the being to use its free will and intellect and thus live a conscious life. However, the beginning of this epoch is so infinitely far in the past that you humans are unable to make any relevant calculations, yet due to My will the most
important periods and their events remain known to you, and although you also divide them into well ordered time-spans, it is entirely irrelevant for your own development. Yet the endless number of fallen spirits necessitates an infinitely long time of higher development, therefore you are no longer capable of estimating the duration of the prehistoric time, just as the embodiment as a human being will have to take place on such a large scale that it will take eternities. It will not be possible for you humans to determine the beginning of this epoch scientifically, yet you will always believe otherwise, because it is in the human being’s nature while he is still imperfect that he mentally limits everything that is in the past, but never wants to acknowledge that there is a limit for the time ahead of him, consequently he does not reject a beginning, but an end seems impossible to him. The former, however, is irrelevant whereas the latter is so extremely important that the human being should direct his whole attention only to what lies ahead of him, that one period of Salvation will come to an end, as did so many before, but that My eternal plan of Salvation will remain, that there will never be an end as far as the act of Salvation is concerned, that an endless number of fallen spirits also require an infinitely long time for their return and that time and again I will give these spirits the opportunity to ascend from the deepest abyss to the light, to Me, from Whom they once came."

God Creates Man: Genesis1:26

Then God said: “Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. Let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and the cattle, and over all the wild animals and all the creatures that crawl on the ground.” God created man in His image, in the divine image He created him; male and female He created them.

God blessed them, saying: “Be fertile and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it. Have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and all the living things that move on the earth.” God also said: “See, I give you every seed bearing plant all over the earth and every tree that has seed-bearing fruit on it to be your food; and to all the animals of the land, all the birds of the air, and all the living creatures that crawl on the ground, I give all the green plants for food.” And so it happened. God looked at everything he had made, and he found it very good. Evening came, and morning followed—the sixth day.

Man

MV - Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans: 135-141

Man, in whom the three kingdoms of the sensible Creation are represented in synthesis, was made on the sixth day, and in a marvelous truth, his creation by God through the spiritual soul infused by God into the matter of man.

Man: true link of conjunction between Earth and Heaven, the true point of union between the spiritual and material world, the being in whom matter is the tabernacle for the spirit, the being in whom the spirit animates matter not only for the limited mortal life, but for the immortal life after the final resurrection.

Man: the marvel of the power of God who infuses His breath, a part of His Infinite Self, into the dust by elevating it to the power of man, and gives to him the Grace which elevates the power of the man-animal to the power of life and to the
condition of a supernatural creature, to a child of God through participation by nature, by making him capable of placing himself in direct relationship with God, by availing him to understand the Incomprehensible One and by making it possible and permissible for him to love He who is so superior over every other being that, without His divine gift, man could not, through his own ability and venerable respect, even only desire to love.

Man: the created triangle that rests its base – matter – upon the Earth from which he was drawn; who, with his intellectual faculties, tends to ascend to the knowledge of He whom he resembles; and touches with his peak – the spirit of the spirit, the elect part of the soul - Heaven, by losing himself in the contemplation of God-Love while Grace, freely received, unites him to God, and love, lit by the union with God deifies him; For ‘the one who loves is born of God’ and it is a privilege of children to participate in the likeness of His nature. To the soul deified by Grace, therefore, man is the image of God, and because of love made possible through Grace, he is like God.

On the sixth day, man was therefore created, complete and perfect in his every material and spiritual part, made according to the Thought of God, according to the order (the end) for which he had been created; to love and serve His Lord during his human lifetime, to know Him in His Truth, and to therefore enjoy Him forever in the other.

Man: the creature in whom the Spirit Maker shines and dwells.

Thus, the one Man was created, the one from whom all of humanity would come, and the Woman in the first place, the companion of the Man and for the man with whom he would have populated the Earth by reigning above all other lower creatures. Thus, the one man was created, the one who, as a father would have transmitted to his descendants everything that he had received; life, senses, material goods, as well as immunity to every suffering, reason, intellect, knowledge, integrity, immortality, and finally, the gift of gifts, Grace.

The theory of the origin of man according to evolutionism, which is based on the conformation of the skeleton and on the diversity of the colors of skin and appearance in
order to sustain its erroneous assertion, is not a theory against the truth of the origin of man – creature created by God – but in its favor. Because what reveals the existence of a Creator is exactly the diversity of the colors, of the structures, of the species of the creatures wanted by Him the most Powerful One.

And if this is valid for the lower creatures, it is valid even more so for the creature-man; he who is man created by God even if due to circumstances of climate and of life, and even due to corruption – and so came the flood and then, much later, in the prescriptions of Sinai and in the Mosaic curses, so severe the command and punishment (Leviticus 18:23 and Deut. 27:21) he shows a different aspect and color from race to race.

It is a proven fact, ratified and confirmed by continual proofs that a strong impression can act upon an expectant mother in a way of making her give life to a little “freak” who mirrors in its makeup the object which disturbed the mother. It is also a proven thing that the long co-existence amongst peoples of a different race than the Arian produces, through a natural mimesis, a transformation more or less marked of the traits of an Arian face in those people who are not Arians. It is also proven that special environmental and climatic conditions have an influence on the development of the limbs and on the colors of the skin.

Therefore, the clouds on which the evolutionists would like to base the edifice of their presumption do not sustain it, but actually favor its collapse.

There perished in the flood of the corrupt branches of humanity groping in the darkness consequent to the fall, darkness in which only for the few just ones, as through heavy fogs, there reached once again a sole ray of the lost star; the memory of God and His promise.

Therefore, once the monsters were destroyed, Humanity was preserved and multiplied again from the lineage of Noah, judged just by God. Thus it was returned to the first nature of the first man, still made of matter and spirit, and remained so even after sin had stripped the spirit of divine Grace and of its innocence.

_When and how was man to receive the soul if he was the end product of an evolution of brutes? Is one to suppose that the brutes received the spiritual soul together with animal life? The immortal soul! The intelligent soul! The free soul! Just the thought of it is blasphemous. How then could they pass on what they did not have? And could God have offended Himself by infusing the spiritual soul, His divine breath, into an animal, which had evolved for as long as one wishes to think, but nevertheless having come from a long procreation of brutes? Even this thought is offensive to the Lord._

By wanting to create a population of children in order to spread the love of which He super abounds and to receive the love of which He is thirsty; God created man directly, with His perfect will, in a sole operation occurring on the sixth creative day in which He made a living and perfect flesh from dust. Flesh that He then animated on account of his particular condition as man, the adoptive child of God, and heir of Heaven. And not yet only of the soul ‘which even animals have in their nostrils and which ceases with the death of the animal, but of the spiritual soul, which is immortal, that survives beyond the death of the body and which will re-animate the body beyond death, at the sounding of the trumpets of the Last Judgment and of the Triumph of the incarnate Word, Jesus Christ, so that the two natures, which lived together on Earth, live together either by enjoying or suffering, according to what they both merited together, for eternity.’

This is the truth, whether you accept or reject it. However, notwithstanding that many of you want to obstinately reject it, a moment will arrive in which you will know it
perfectly, and it will engrave itself into your spirit, making you convinced of having lost the Good forever for having wanted to follow pride and lies.

The truth is that whoever does not accept the creation of man, as a work of God – and creation just as I have said, that is, in such a way by making him quickly and always capable, if he wants, of guiding himself in all his actions so that they may all be turned to the reaching of the end for which man was created; the immediate end: to love and serve God during his earthly life; and the final end: to enjoy Him in Heaven – cannot understand with precision exactly what constitutes the Sin, the reason for the condemnation, the consequences of these two.

However, follow me. My word is luminous and simple because I am God. And God, Infinite Wisdom, knows how to adapt Himself to the ignorance and relativity of His little ones, because I love the little ones, provided they are humble, and I say to them, Whoever is a little one, come to Me, and I will teach you Wisdom.”

Catholic Church teaching regarding Man and Evolution

Concerning human evolution, the Church has a more definite teaching. It allows for the possibility that man’s body developed from previous biological forms, under God’s guidance, but it insists on the special creation of his soul. Pope Pius XII declared that “the teaching authority of the Church does not forbid that, in conformity with the present state of human sciences and sacred theology, research and discussions . . . take place with regard to the doctrine of evolution, in as far as it inquires into the origin of the human body as coming from pre-existent and living matter—[but] the Catholic faith obliges us to hold that souls are immediately created by God” (Pius XII, Humani Generis 36). So whether the human body was specially created or developed, we are required to hold as a matter of Catholic faith that the human soul is specially created; it did not evolve, and it is not inherited from our parents, as our bodies are.

While the Church permits belief in either special creation or developmental creation on certain questions, it in no circumstances permits belief in atheistic evolution. Ref: Catholic Answers - www.catholic.com

Pope Francis Speaks Out on Evolution

Ref: Live Science By Tia Ghose October 30, 2014 10:19 AM

When Pope Francis told a gathering of scientists this week that the Big Bang and evolution were real, he set off a firestorm of media coverage. But is it really surprising news that the Catholic Church supports such scientific theories?

Pope Francis: "When we read about Creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining God was a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so."

"When we read about Creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining God was a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so," Francis said at a meeting of the Pontifical Academy of Sciences, according to
Reuters. "He created human beings and let them develop according to the internal laws that he gave to each one so they would reach their fulfillment."

The pope added at one point: "Evolution in nature is not inconsistent with the notion of creation, because evolution requires the creation of beings that evolve."

Though the remarks have been framed as big news, they are anything but, said Kenneth Miller, a practicing Catholic, a cell biologist at Brown University and the author of "Only a Theory: Evolution and the Battle for America’s Soul," (Penguin Books, 2009). Several popes, going back to the 1950s, have released statements in support of the theories, he said. [Papal Primer: History’s 10 Most Intriguing Popes]

"The notion that there is a conflict between evolution and the church’s idea of creation is an absurdity," Miller told Live Science.

**Catholic views:**

The Catholic Church has never opposed the Big Bang theory, the notion that the universe was created with a boom more than 13 billion years ago. Nor has it truly resisted the idea that humans and all life forms evolved gradually over millennia from simpler creatures.

In fact, at a 1996 address to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences, Pope John Paul II strongly supported the notion of evolution.

"New knowledge has led to the recognition of the theory of evolution as more than a hypothesis. It is indeed remarkable that this theory has been progressively accepted by researchers, following a series of discoveries in various fields of knowledge. The convergence, neither sought nor fabricated, of the results of work that was conducted independently is, in itself, a significant argument in favor of the theory," the pope said.

The Catechism of the Catholic Church, which describes official church teaching, says that God gives each human an individual soul and that the soul does not evolve. It also speaks of Adam and Eve, and says humans fell from grace and brought original sin into the world through a primeval event at the beginning of human history, Trasancos told Live Science.

Genetic evidence doesn’t support the notion of all humans descending from one man and one woman, but rather from a population of individuals, Miller said.

While that suggests Catholic doctrine would be at odds with evolution, the catechism avoids saying that all humans were descended from just two individuals, he added. [Creationism vs. Evolution: 6 Big Battles]

And unlike many evangelical Christian sects, Catholic doctrine doesn’t hold that the events described in the book of Genesis must be interpreted literally, Consolmagno said.

That means it’s possible to interpret the Biblical stories in a way that is consistent with evolution, Miller said.

"Scripture is written in many different genres. There are historical accounts, mythic stories, morality tales, poetry and more. At least from the perspective of the Catholic faith and mainline Protestantism, it’s a mistake to try to read every line of scripture as if it were intended by its author to be understood as a literal account of historical events that actually happened," Consolmagno told Live Science. "That’s just not how many parts of scripture were meant to be read."
God the Father is speaking: “There can be no contradictions in the spiritual knowledge you receive from Me Myself, which My spirit has imparted to you who are of service to Me and who have the task to pass on the pure truth from Me to your fellow human beings, to spread My Word which should enlighten you. Because I want to shed light onto the spiritual darkness in which people live and especially when you desire an explanation yourselves:

It took an infinitely long time for the creation work 'earth' to become what it is now, a creation which should enable people to achieve final perfection. And during this infinitely long time the original spirits, having been dissolved into the tiniest of particles, passed through countless works of creation in order to evolve ever more. The solidified spiritual substance gradually became alive, as you have been told several times already. It covered the infinitely long way in a state of compulsion, i.e. all creations fulfilled the purpose and task given to them by Me, no constrained being could make its own decisions but gradually matured, Forms were created for spiritual substances of all degrees of maturity aspiring to ascend; the forms of the mineral, plant and animal world were infinitely diverse, and they all were brought to life by the minute particles of the fallen original spirits, which progressively united and finally became smaller and larger living organisms. On leaving their forms they united again and finally were embodied into forms which already rather resembled the shape of a human being.

The whole lengthy course of development was subject to My law, in other words, all events in this creation which emerged through My will took place in accordance with natural law. As a result of their fall into the abyss the original spirits had lost their self-awareness. However, one day they should regain this self-awareness again and embody themselves in the last form as a human being, in order to then bring the path of higher development to a close. The final forms in the compulsive state therefore became increasingly more human-like (Pre-Adamites) but they had no self-awareness as yet, they acted instinctively in accordance with My will, although they already performed functions which resembled those of a human being. However, they were unable to think, they lacked reason and free will and were therefore not accountable. They were impelled into action by spiritual intelligences; just like every spiritual being still constrained within the form was subject to supervisors, who likewise transferred My will onto the constrained spiritual being through natural law. And then came the time when free will could be returned to the matured original spirits by which they then should be tested as to whether they wanted to return to Me or remain with My adversary. And for those original spirits I created the form of the human being.

All works of creation, especially the ever larger created living beings, originated through My will, in as much as My thoughts took shape. And for this reason these living beings were represented in the most varied forms, yet every form was different. There were the most diverse species bearing no resemblance to each other, which continued to
reproduce themselves but always remained the same creatures. When the first original spirits had attained a level of maturity which required the form of the human being, My will once again brought forth a work of creation which was truly a work of wonder in the whole of My creation. This being was structured incredibly intricately; it was created in accordance with My will so that it could fulfill its earthly task, a being which I 'created', but which did not 'evolve' from the already existing human-like creations. Because it was intended for this form to shelter an original spirit, a being which was once externalized by Me in My image and which was to become what it used to be once again. And therefore it had to be equipped with intelligence, free will and self-awareness, and these did not gradually evolve in the animal-like beings but they were given to the human form when the original spirit took possession of the first form, and they will always be given to every human being as part of his soul when, as divine breath, it gives life to the human being at birth.

Afterwards people indeed reproduced themselves again in accordance with My law of nature but they will always remain the same living creations as the first human being, Adam, was. They will not change into other living creations, but any change will always purely be an act of the soul which at first can still be disinclined towards Me and during its time as a human being achieve highest perfection. The human body, however, will remain as I created it when Adam’s soul took possession of it. Although the act of creating earth with everything in, on and above it, with all dead and living creations, certainly required an infinitely long time, but at the same time a phase of higher development had come to an end for the fallen spiritual essence when the minute particles of an original spirit had gathered again and the last process of return to Me began.

And this existence on earth as a human being also required a new work of creation by Me, a form which could do justice to all demands in order to take the last test of its own free will. And thus the human being can consider himself a special creation by Me, because he is the only being on earth with the gift of intelligence, reason and free will, the marks of divine origin. He is therefore also able to recognize above himself a God and Creator Who gave him life, and therefore he can also achieve final perfection on this earth if his free will genuinely strives for it.”

**What is Man?**

MV N1945-1950:324, 325

“What is man? The Catechism says, ‘A creature endowed with reason composed of soul and body.’

What is the soul? The Catechism says, ‘The noblest part of man because it is a spiritual substance endowed with intellect and will, capable of knowing God and possessing Him eternally.’

Who created man? The Catechism says, ‘God created him.’

Why did He create him? Genesis 2:7 says, ‘And the Lord formed man from the mud of the earth and breathed the breath of life into life, and man became a living creature.’ And Genesis 1:27 says, ‘God created man in his image.’ The Catechism confirms, ‘Man was created in the image and likeness of God.’
And how? Perhaps in his face? In the shape of his body? God does not have a
body or a face. To become man I had to take on your shape, for I had no bodily shape of
my own. God is most perfect Spirit – simple, eternal, with no beginning or end. The
Catechism thus teaches that ‘man is said to have been created in the image and likeness
of God, for the human soul is spiritual and endowed with reason, free in its working,
capable of knowing and loving God and of enjoying Him eternally – perfections which in
man reflect a ray of the infinite greatness of the Lord.’

A ray of the infinite greatness of the Lord; A great truth, since only We, as
Triune, know Ourselves and enjoy Ourselves with the fullness of joy, generating
Ourselves through this joyful love, which is knowledge of our most perfect Perfection.
And We wanted you to have Us as an example to create in you the divinized creature
that is man as a son of God. For this reason we placed Love in you, which is our
Essence, and we proposed Love as the goal of Perfection in order for you to come to be
with Us without end, just as you were in Us before Creation existed, when We
contemplated you, before you emerged from nothingness, so as to be, according to our
will, the creature in whom God, who divinely conceived this creature for his glory, is
reflected. Now, in God there can be nothing except what pertains to God. Man thus
belongs to God and in full justice can call Him ‘Father’ and in right and proper justice
must want to reach and possess Him after having strived to love Him and know Him.

Blessed are those who are able to ascend to the summit of blessedness, which is
union with God – that is, knowledge of God, fusion with Love, contemplation of the
Trinity, which is One, of the Fire that does not consume, but recreates and super-
creates, making the human creature what he was conceived to be by Love: a god who is
a son of God. The Father has truly placed the seal of his paternity in his son: the
capacity to know and love God, in both this life and the next.

God, then, created man as composed of two substances, one called the body –
initially created with mud and subsequently procreated with the flesh and blood of man –
and one called the soul, which, uniquely created in each case, only once and for one
flesh, descends to unite itself to the flesh forming in a womb. Without the soul man
would be an animal creature guided by instinct and natural gifts. Without the body man
would be a spiritual creature with the supernatural gifts of intelligence, will, and grace,
like the angels.”

Man the Adoptive Son of God - Summary

“From the oceans of wonders, which is the throne of God,
the bosom of God, God draws the most beautiful gem, and it is the
light preceding the most perfect gem, that is, the creation of man,
in whom there is not a jewel of God, but God Himself, breathing
over the dust to make living flesh and His heir to the heavenly
Paradise where He awaits the just, His children, that He may rejoice
in them and they in Him.

God, infinitely perfect and blessed in Himself: in a plan of
sheer goodness, freely created man to make him share in His own
blessed life. For this reason, at every time and in every place, God
draws close to man. He calls man to seek Him, to know Him, to
love Him, with all his strength.

Man is a creature endowed with reason composed of soul and body. The noblest
part of man because it is a spiritual substance endowed with intellect and will, capable
of knowing God and possessing Him eternally. Man was created by God to know, love, and serve Him.

Genesis 2:7 says, ‘And the Lord formed man from the mud of the earth and breathed the breath of life into life, and man became a living creature.’ And Genesis 1:27 says, ‘God created man in his image.’ The Catechism confirms, ‘Man was created in the image and likeness of God.’

And how? Perhaps in his face? In the shape of his body? God does not have a body or a face. To become man He had to take on our shape, for He had no bodily shape of His own. God is a most perfect Spirit – simple, eternal, with no beginning or end. The Catechism thus teaches that ‘man is said to have been created in the image and likeness of God, for the human soul is spiritual and endowed with reason, free in its working, capable of knowing and loving God and of enjoying Him eternally – perfections which in man reflect a ray of the infinite greatness of the Lord.’

God, then, created man as composed of two substances, one called the body – initially created with mud and subsequently procreated with the flesh and blood of man – and one called the soul, which, uniquely created in each case, only once and for one flesh, descends to unite itself to the flesh forming in a womb. Without the soul man would be an animal creature guided by instinct and natural gifts. Without the body man would be a spiritual creature with the supernatural gifts of intelligence, will, and grace, like the angels.”

On the sixth day, man was therefore created, complete and perfect in his every material and spiritual part, made according to the Thought of God, according to the order (the end) for which he had been created; to love and serve His Lord during his human lifetime, to know Him in His Truth, and to therefore enjoy Him forever in the other.

Thus, the one Man was created, the one from whom all of humanity would come, and the Woman in the first place, the companion of the Man and for the man with whom he would have populated the Earth by reigning above all other lower creatures. Thus, the one man was created, the one who, as a father would have transmitted to his descendants everything that he had received; life, senses, material goods, as well as immunity to every suffering, reason, intellect, knowledge, integrity, immortality, and finally, the gift of gifts, Grace.

Man is the sovereign whom God created to be the king of creation and He created him in His image and likeness, giving him His likeness according to the spirit, and His image by drawing his perfect image from His perfect thought. Look at the air, at the earth, at the seas. Can you see an animal or a plant, however beautiful it may be, which is equal to man? Animals run, eat, drink, sleep, procreate, work, sing, fly, creep, climb. But they do not speak. Man can also run and jump, and is so agile in jumping as to emulate birds; he can swim, and is so fast that he swims like a fish; he can creep and look like a reptile; he climbs like a monkey; he can sing like a bird. He can procreate and reproduce. And, besides, he can speak.

Do not say: ‘Every animal has its language.’ True, one moos, another bleats, another brays, another chirps, another warbles, but the last bull will bellow exactly the same as the first one, and so sheep will bleat until the end of the world, and donkeys will always bray like the first one, and sparrows will always chirp, whilst the lark and the nightingale will sing their songs: the former to the sun, the latter to a starry night, also on the last day of the world, exactly as they greeted the first sun and the first night. Man, instead, having not only a voice and a tongue, but also a nervous system, the center of which is the brain, the seat of intelligence, is capable of perceiving new sensations, meditating on them and giving them names. Adam called dog his friend and gave the name of lion to the animal that seems most like it because of its mane round its
short bearded face. He called sheep to the lamb that greeted him mildly and gave the
name of bird to the beautiful flower of feathers that flies like a butterfly but sings a
sweet song that a butterfly cannot sing. And later, throughout centuries, the children of
Adam created new names, as and when they ‘became acquainted’ with the works of
God in His creatures, or through the divine spark which is in man, they not only
procreated children, but they also created things which were useful or harmful to their
children, according to whether they were with God or against God. *God avenges His
children tortured by man’s wickedness.*

God desired to put a king in the universe that He had created out of nothing. A
king, who by the nature of matter should be the first amongst all the creatures created
with matter and endowed with matter. A king, who by nature of the spirit should be little
less than divine, united to Grace as he was in his first innocent day. But the Supreme
Mind, to Whom all the most remote events in centuries are known, incessantly seeks
what *was, is, and will be:* and while It contemplates the past, and observes the present,
It penetrates deeply with Its foresight into the most distant future and knows in every
detail how the last man will die. Without confusion or discontinuity the Supreme Mind
has always known that the king created to be demigod at Its side in Heaven, heir of the
Father, would arrive adult in His Kingdom, after living in the house of His mother - the
earth, with which He was made - during His childhood, as child of the Eternal Father for
His day on Earth. The Supreme Mind has always known that man would have committed
against himself the crime of killing Grace in himself and the theft of robbing himself of
Heaven.

Man is the true link of conjunction between Earth and Heaven, the true point of
union between the spiritual and material world, the being in whom matter is the
tabernacle for the spirit, and the being in whom the spirit animates matter not only for
the limited mortal life, but for the immortal life after the final resurrection.

Infinite Self, into the dust by elevating it to the power of man, and gives to him
the Grace which elevates the power of the man-animal to the power of life and to the
condition of a supernatural creature, to a child of God through participation by nature, by
making him capable of placing himself in direct relationship with God, by availing him to
understand the Incomprehensible One and by making it possible and permissible for him
to love He who is so superior over every other being that, without His divine gift, man
could not, through his own ability and venerable respect, even only desire to love.

Man the created triangle that rests its base – matter – upon the Earth from which
he was drawn; who, with his intellectual faculties, tends to ascend to the knowledge of
He whom He resembles; and touches with his peak – the spirit of the spirit, the elect
part of the soul - Heaven, by losing himself in the contemplation of God-Love while
Grace, freely received, unites him to God, and love, lit by the union with God deifies him.
For ‘the one who loves is born of God,’ and it is a privilege of children to participate in
the likeness of His nature; to the soul deified (revere as a god) by Grace, therefore, man
is the image of God, and because of love made possible through Grace, he is like God.”

**God’s Plan for Man**

*MV Vol. 1:27-30*

“God desired to put a king in the universe that He had created out of nothing. A king,
who by the nature of matter should be the first amongst all the creatures created with
matter and endowed with matter. A king, who by nature of the spirit should be little less
than divine, united to Grace as he was in his first innocent day. But the Supreme Mind,
to Whom all the most remote events in centuries are known, incessantly seeks what
was, is, and will be: and while It contemplates the past, and observes the present, It penetrates deeply with Its foresight into the most distant future and knows in every detail how the last man will die. Without confusion or discontinuity the Supreme Mind has always known that the king created to be demigod at Its side in Heaven, heir of the Father, would arrive adult in His Kingdom, after living in the house of His mother - the earth, with which He was made - during His childhood, as child of the Eternal Father for His day on Earth. The Supreme Mind has always known that man would have committed against himself the crime of killing Grace in himself and the theft of robbing himself of Heaven.

Why then did He create him? Certainly many asked themselves why. Would you have preferred not to exist? Does this day not deserve, in itself, to be lived, although so poor and bare, and rendered harsh by your wickedness, so that you may know and admire the infinite Beauty that the hand of God has sown in the universe?

From whom would He have created the stars and planets that fly like thunderbolts and arrows, furrowing the vault of Heaven, or dash majestically in their rush of meteors, and yet seems slow, presenting you with light and seasons, eternally immutable and yet always mutable. They give you a new page to read on the sky, every evening, every month, every year, as if they wished to say: ‘Forget your restriction, forsake your printed matter which is full of obscure, putrid, dirty, poisonous, false, swearing, corrupting material and rise, at least with your eyes, to the unlimited freedom of the firmament, make your souls bright looking at so clear a sky. Build up a supply of light to take to your dark prison. Read the word that we write singing our sidereal (relating to, or concerned with the stars or constellations) chorus, which is more harmonious than the one drawn from a cathedral organ. The word that we write while shining, the word that we write while loving, bears in mind Him Who gave us the joy of existing. And we love Him for giving us our existence, our brightness, our movement, our freedom, our beauty in the midst of the gentle azure, beyond which we can see and even more sublime blue: Paradise. And we fulfill the second part of His commandment of love, by loving you, our universal neighbors, loving you by giving you guidance and light, warmth and beauty. Read the word we say, the one on which we modulate our singing, our brightness, our smile: God!’

For whom would He have made the blue sea, the mirror of the sky, the way to the land, the smile of waters, the voice of waves? The sea itself is a word that with the rustling of silk, with the smiles and happy girls, with the signs of old people who remember and weep, with the clamor of violence, with clashes and roars always speaks and says: ‘God.’ The sea is for you, as the sky and the stars are. And with the sea, the lakes and rivers, the ponds and streams, the pure springs, all of which served to nourish you, to quench your thirst, to clean you: and they serve you serving their Creator, without submerging you, as you deserve.

For whom would He have created the countless families of plants and flowers that look like butterflies, like gems and motionless birds, and the families of fruits that are like jewels or jewel cases and are a carpet on your feet and the trees that form shelters for your heads, a welcome relaxation and joy to your minds, your limbs, your sight and smell?
For whom would He have made the minerals in the bowels of the earth and the salt dissolved in cold and boiling springs, the iodine and the bromines unless one should enjoy them, one who was not God, but the son of God? One: man.

The joy of God lacking nothing: God had no need. He is sufficient in Himself. He has only to contemplate Himself to rejoice, to nourish Himself, to live, to rest. The whole creation has not increased by one atom His infinite joy, beauty, life, power. He made everything for the creature that he wanted to place as king in the work made by Him: that creature is man.

It is worthwhile living to see such a work of God and to be grateful to His power that gives you the opportunity. And you must be grateful to be alive. You should have been grateful even if you had to wait till Doomsday to be redeemed, because you have been prevaricators, proud, lascivious and murderers in your First Parents and you are still so individually. Yet God allows you to enjoy the beauty of the universe, the goodness of the universe: and He treats you as if you were good children, who are taught and granted everything so that their lives might be happier and more pleasant. What you know, you know by the light of God. What you discover, you discover through the guidance of God in Goodness. Other knowledge and discoveries that bear the mark of evil come from the Supreme Evil: Satan.”

The Human Being's Task on Earth - Childship to God

BD No. 5490 of 09/18/1952 taken from book 60

God the father is speaking: “You humans are given a task on earth but you do not consider this and do not feel accountable as to whether you make correct use of your life on earth, that is, whether you live according to God’s will. But you only have a short time and once you have finished your life on earth, you will have no opportunity anymore to accomplish your set task. With immense effort you can certainly still ascend in the kingdom of the beyond, yet you will never be able to attain what you could easily have attained on earth, the childship to God, which makes you the most blissfully happy being in the spiritual kingdom. You can receive an excessive abundance of light on earth and, after physical death, enter the spiritual kingdom as beings of light; for God offers you such an extent of grace that you can lose all weakness and work full of strength, providing it is your will. Attaining the degree of light is not impossible for anyone, and the fact that it need not be difficult is Jesus Christ’s gift of grace, Who acquired it for the human race on the cross. Thus anyone can request strength from Him, and every person calling upon Jesus Christ will irrevocably reach the goal. But which one of you humans lends his ear to the messengers of God when you are informed of this; which one of you humans strives consciously towards attaining childship to God on this earth? It only requires you to shape yourselves into love, for which the strength will be conveyed to you humans if you seriously want it and appeal to Jesus Christ for His support. Very little is expected of you humans but an incredible amount is offered to you and, yet, only a few strive for this degree which results in a life of supreme beatitude. You should become children of God, desire the Father with all your love, you should adapt yourselves to His fundamental nature, that is, become love as well. However, your nature is still governed by too much selfish love, and this only considers earthly life but not life after death. You don’t ask yourselves why you live on earth, you don’t try to ascertain the reason, instead, you look at life as an end in itself when, in fact, it is merely the means to an end. For this reason you let your time on earth pass by unused, you use your vitality wrongly, i.e. you only use it to attain earthly possessions which are transient. But you do not think of your life after death, of the soul’s intransience and one day will have to pay a bitter price when you realize that you have irretrievably lost
something that you could easily have won. However, God respects your will, He neither
determines nor forces you, but He always warns and admonishes you. Through His
servants on earth He constantly informs you of the purpose for your existence, He sends
messengers to cross your path who shall proclaim His will, He confronts you Himself in
the form of suffering and adversities and shows you the fleeting nature of earthly things.
He leaves no stone unturned in order to lead you into realization, yet He allows you to
keep your freedom of choice. And precisely because of this you will have to justify
yourselves to Him, for you would be able to reach your goal were you to use your will
correctly.”

**Becoming God's 'Children' - Childship to God**

God the Father is speaking: "At no time ever will I withdraw My love from you,
even if you voluntarily stay away from Me, one day you will return to Me again because
My love will not abandon you. And I will always also give you the evidence of My love, I
will take care of and provide for you when you live on earth as human beings, because I
want to gain your love which will unite you with Me again as in the beginning. Thus you
should never doubt My love. But your love determines the degree of your proximity to
Me, it solely depends on your love whether and when the unification with Me will take
place. And you demonstrate your love to Me by the degree of your neighborly love,
which you should constantly increase if you want to become perfect. And that, in turn,
necessitates that you completely relinquish your selfish love, that you strive to become
engrossed in love for your neighbor, that you unselfishly help your neighbor. Then you
will come ever closer to Me, for with every deed of love you draw Me to yourselves, you
ascend with every deed of love and establish the bond with the Eternal Love. Then I can
be in you Myself, My love will be able to permeate you as in the beginning, you will have
become and will remain My children for all eternity.

And your purpose of earthly life is that you, who once came forth from Me as
'living creations', shape yourselves into 'children'. Since you took the path through the
abyss and became completely devoid of love as a result of your past apostasy from Me,
it is a difficult task to shape yourselves of your own free will into love again.

It requires a strong will which has to be put into action. The strength to do so
repeatedly has to be acquired through love or requested from Me through heartfelt
prayer. Hence it is not enough just to make declarations of love to Me, but it also
requires deeds of love in order to receive this strength, but then it also results in a
steady move towards Me.

As soon as a person voluntarily opens his heart in order to allow himself to be
illuminated by the strength of My love his heart will be ever more willing to love, and one
day he will achieve his objective: he will attain the childship to God as soon as his life is
an uninterrupted activity of love in utter unselfishness.

But only few will achieve this degree of love on earth, because a person’s own
Self still comes first, because it requires great effort for the human being to give up all
wishes and longings for the sake of the next person; since the soul has to purify itself
completely during its earthly life, and this requires a high degree of love and frequently a
considerable measure of suffering too, so that the soul is entirely purged when it departs
from this earth. Then they will have matured into true children of God and have already
found unification with Me on earth, they will have shaped themselves of their own free
will into 'children', which I could not create for Myself. But anyone who seriously strives
for this, who time and again in profound humility pleads for My blessing, who already
feels like My child, will not slow down in his endeavor and reach his goal.
But he has to be filled by love for Me, not by the desire for utmost beatitude, and his love for Me will then also constantly heighten the degree of neighborly love. However, he only demonstrates his love for Me through his neighborly love. I want to teach you all to become My children, and all of you should also feel as if you were My children, otherwise you won’t establish the right kind of relationship with your Father of eternity, from Whose love you emerged. You just should not forget that you are on earth in order to become My children, and that you therefore constantly have to make an effort. But once you are My children then I can and will take you from earth, because then you will have achieved the goal for which I created everything, utmost perfection in free will.

I repeatedly have to bring this difference home to you in order to motivate you into utmost striving, for as long as you walk across this earth My adversary also has an influence on you, and as long as My adversary can still influence you he will also know how to stop you from becoming completely engrossed in neighborly love, because as long as unspiritual substances are still in you, your body still has earthly longings, your selfish love has not yet been entirely conquered, and the human being still has to fight against these. But completely rising above them also ensures him a high degree of love, and then the unity with Me can take place, then the Father will draw His child to Him and will never ever leave it again.”

Being a Child of God
Ref: MESSAGE OF ST. MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL TO HIS BELOVED LUZ DE MARIA DECEMBER 27, 2018

St Michael the Archangel is speaking: “Beloved children of God: Every human being should rejoice at being a child of God and honor Him as God deserves, serve Him and worship Him, knowing that God does not need man, but loves man.

WE ARE THE SERVANTS OF GOD AND WITH INFINITE ADORATION OUR JOY ATTAINS ITS CULMINATION IN LIVING THE WILL OF GOD, AND THIS WILL DIRECTS US TO SERVE MAN, but within this service we are not allowed to act against man’s free will, because man is free and within freedom he must choose salvation by his own merit; That salvation in which a great part of Humanity rejects, because of having become dehumanized is scorning its essence as children of God and taking as its own a collective mentality where thoughts and desires are alien to it. The man of this generation has immersed himself in modernistic thought where there is no room for God.

Therefore Our King and Our Queen constantly call you to look inside each one of yourselves, but you do it superficially because you have not come to understand that to see yourselves within, you do not have to look at your brother, but at yourselves:

You cannot compare yourselves with your fellow man, but look at yourselves. You cannot value the works or acts of others because it is personal truth dwells in each person, not that of others.

HENCE THE FAILURE OF THOSE WHO WISH TO GROW IN THE SPIRIT BY LOOKING AT THEIR BROTHERS AND SISTERS, HIDING THEMSELVES BEHIND THEIR BROTHER IN ORDER TO HIDE THEIR ERRORS. Therefore man does not rise up, he does not aspire beyond what is earthly, he does not long for greater closeness to the Divine; it is only, yes only by facing the enemies of inner truth that man will be able to see his own reality.
WHEN MAN ACCEPTS THAT ALL STRENGTH COMES FROM GOD (Cf. Ps 37,39, Hab 3,19), THEN PERSONAL CHANGE WILL BEGIN.

People of God: look, meditate and be aware of what is around you - the Universe with the elements is maintained for the service of man, and WHAT HAVE YOU DONE WITH IT? YOU HAVE DESTROYED, CONTAMINATED, TRANSFORMED IT FOR EVIL, YOU HAVE DISOBEYED SEEKING THAT WHICH YOU CONSIDER TO BE HAPPINESS.

Men have created frontiers for thought by limiting themselves, taking possession of knowledge that is not their property.

Children of God: you, at this instant, must share the love that comes from the Divine Will in order to create the force to counteract the demonic wave experienced among Humanity, anticipating the pain to which the Church will be subjected.

You know full well that love prevents evil: it is a wall that holds it back; love is reflected in the actions of creatures that do not cause harm to any brother or sister and seek the common good (cf. I Cor 13,4-8ff).

You must be those who forge love in the likeness of Our Queen... You must be disciples and missionaries at the same time, like Our Queen, who from the Annunciation to her Assumption into the Heavens, through Her Faithfulness and Her Motherhood, reached Eternity.

THE PEOPLE OF GOD WALK TOWARDS THE FEAST OF OUR QUEEN AND MOTHER OF HUMANITY AND BEFORE THIS SOLEMNITY ITS GLORIES ARE SUNG IN HEAVEN. FOR THIS MEN OF GOOD WILL SHALL UNITE ON THE 29TH, 30TH, AND 31ST OF DECEMBER AT 6PM IN EVERY COUNTRY, WITH THE PRAYING OF THE “ANGELUS” (*), OFFERED FOR THE NEEDS OF HUMANITY.

When the Cross is despised, you must love it more ... Satan suffers enormous torments when he sees the Cross: for that reason he has ordered it to be taken out of every place. What the devil forgets is that Christians carry the Cross in their hearts, in their souls, where evil and its followers cannot erase it.

Children of the Most Holy Trinity, the future of Humanity must be fought with love. Our Celestial Armies remain attentive to the work and action of Humanity, and therefore to the events in the natural order which Humanity will face.

Pray children of God, in the Mediterranean there will be subsidence in the seabed. Pray children of God, the South Pacific shakes. Pray children of God, the volcano Etna is changing its activity. Pray children of God, in Turkey many innocents suffer persecution for being faithful to Our King. Pray children of God, pray for Nevada in the United States, it will be flooded by water.

It is not human predictions that the children of God are reading, but I have been sent to warn you out of Mercy, since the one who loves God knows that from His Love emanates knowledge so that man takes it, and so that, with the knowledge of the events that are approaching, man understands that whoever loves does not fear.

Children of the Most High, I shelter you, you are protected by your Guardian Angels, whom you must not forget.

HOW MANY HERODS THERE ARE! ... LOOK AT YOURSELVES, EXAMINE YOURSELVES, IT IS NOT ONLY THE ONE WHO USES A WEAPON WHO KILLS.

Humanity is seething with a total lack of love, and the children of God must not sleep, but respond within the love to which the Most Holy Trinity has called them.

Evil has become entrenched within Humanity and claims souls for itself; you must remain faithful to God and not allow yourselves to be confused. The Angel of Peace, Envoy of God (1), will arrive to protect man; the children of God will never be abandoned by God.

I bless your acts and your works.” St Michael the Archangel
Do 'non-fallen' Spirits attain Childship to God?

God the father is speaking: “You will receive an answer to every question in order to disprove every misguided point of view, so that you will not remain ignorant when you desire the correct information: The deification of My created beings is the goal I set Myself with My Creation and which I will certainly achieve one day. Everything that came forth from Me was supremely perfect, the beings I externalized as independent beings were like Me, they were images of Myself. Nevertheless, they were only ever My creations, which were unable to be any different than I had created them. They were My living creations. But I wanted to have children next to Me. For this reason I released them from My will when they were to prove their will as to whether they would retain their perfection despite the option of turning it in the opposite direction. This passed test of will also subsequently presumed that the being was subject to all temptations which it had to resist, for all strength requires the resistance upon which it can prove itself. Understand this correctly: each being was confronted by temptation because it possessed free will which was able to choose either direction. Thus the first being, Lucifer, the bearer of light, which My greater than great love had externalized, was the first which was supposed to provide Me with the proof that it wanted to keep the supreme perfection it was granted. It was so exceptionally permeated by My strength of love that it reveled in absolute bliss and thus used the constantly inflowing strength for the creation of equal beings because, in its perfection, it was able to be just as creatively active as I Am. And this process of creating beings lasted for eternities, they were therefore always 'living creations' which could not possibly be anything but supremely perfect. Then I expected My first-created being, Lucifer, merely to acknowledge Me Myself as the source of strength, thus I expected of him to present Me to his created beings as the One from Whom he himself had also emerged. But since he had free will, it was also possible for him to ignore My will, which he did by presenting himself to the beings as the highest being, because they were unable to behold Me but he was visible to them in all his glory. Thus he did not pass the test of will and confronted the created beings as a tempter. He tried to influence their will to likewise be in opposition to Me: And he was very successful. For many of these beings, despite their abundance of light, despite utmost realization, acknowledged him as the Lord of eternity and renounced Me, precisely because I was not visible to them. And these apostatized beings, having fallen into the deepest abyss of their own choice, must first reach higher spheres again, they must try to deify themselves of their own free will, which is indeed possible with My help. Once they have reached this goal they will have become God's children, perfect beings, who aspired to and achieved this perfection themselves. But a large proportion of originally created spirits also remained loyal to Me, they resisted all temptations by Lucifer; thus, they passed their test of will when they had to decide whom they should choose as their Lord. So what is their situation in regards to the childship to God? You must know that these beings enjoy utmost bliss, for they did not forfeit their perfection and are constantly permeated by My strength of love, which makes them incredibly happy. But on account of their perfection they are also knowledgeable; they know My plan of Salvation, the wretchedness of the fallen original spirits is evident to them and their love is so great that they also take part in the work of redemption in order to advance the return of the once fallen spirits. This redemptive work, however, requires eternities, which you humans are incapable of estimating. And time and again the original spirits in the stage of a human being are in need of active help, for although they shelter the divine spark of love within themselves which enables
their return, they are so weak that they require assistance. This is granted to them by those beings of light which embody themselves on earth for this very purpose and therefore also take the path through the abyss where they are subjected to all temptations and consciously pass their test of will, which lets them become a child so that it can create and work completely freely next to Me and not only work according to My will, even though these non-fallen spirits are also granted unlimited bliss. It is the immense number of fallen beings which requires eternities until the goal is reached. Consequently, there are also endless opportunities for the beings of light, having remained faithful to Me, to achieve the childship to God through overcoming the abyss they voluntarily enter for the salvation of the originals spirits, and this signifies constantly higher levels of beatitude for the original spirit which once remained faithful to Me. For no limitation exists for Me, and thus I can and will make My children happy to an inconceivable degree. A countless number of original spirits have already offered to take the path across earth, who mainly had the salvation of their fallen brothers at heart; hence they did not embody themselves on earth for selfish reasons, they did not walk through the abyss for the sake of the 'childship to God' but nevertheless attained this childship to God and returned to Me as My children. The only advantage the beings which remained faithful to Me have over their fallen brothers is the fact they will never need to take the path through the creations of earth and that they will never fail in earthly life either, that they must certainly resist all temptations but that they will always have much strength at their disposal, because love is within them and they will not relinquish it during their life on earth.

However, the people in whom such original spirits are embodied are unaware of it and often have to travel very difficult earthly paths. They fight and serve and reach their goal with certainty, the complete unification with Me on earth which, although it was not interrupted, must nevertheless be sincerely aspired to by every person, because it is and will remain the goal, because the right decision of will of every being is to profess Me freely. Nevertheless, you humans should not believe that these beings which remained with Me can be called less happy, for their will is already so inclined that their love for Me is exceedingly powerful and constantly growing, and I reward this loyalty to Me accordingly, but neither will I deny them the bliss which is guaranteed to them through the childship to God. The whole sequence of events from the very beginning and for all eternity happens in lawful order. I cannot proceed contrary to My eternal order. The beings which were once emanated by Me carried My will as long as they were connected to Me with a heartfelt bond of love, as long as I was able to permeate them with My love and thus no other will but My own was able to be in them, that is, their will and thoughts concurred with My will and thoughts. And yet the beings had free will, precisely because they were created by Me and were profoundly perfect beings that had the same will as Me in them without having been under duress. Hence they had free will from the start but it was not different from Mine. And this similarity of will lasted for eternities, since it was not possible to disturb this similarity of their will with Mine as long as these beings were permeated by My flow of love. Only when Lucifer, the first-created original spirit, used his faculty of thought wrongly, when he no longer accepted My Word flowing to him with a craving for love and thereby slightly weakened the flow of My strength of love, did the free will in him begin to express itself without being prevented by Me, and only when he began to reject My strength of love increasingly stronger was it possible to speak of an expression of his free will which, until then, had completely concurred with My will despite it being free. At that time My first-created image had to make a free decision, because I only expected the test of will of him when
his will started to deviate from Mine because he rejected the flow of My love's strength. And the same happened with all beings which our mutual strength of love created, which then again were prompted by Lucifer to express their will, which was free and likewise concurred with Mine for as long as they received My flow of love unimpeded. They, too, began to misuse their thinking ability and associate more with Lucifer's will, and I did not prevent their free will for I wanted them to openly test their will as to with whom they wanted to stay. Thus free will only became active when the beings closed themselves to My love, because before this their will, despite being free, completely concurred with the One from Whom they emerged.

The being therefore only proved its freedom of will when it rebelled against Me, since prior to that its great love prevented it from willfully opposing Me, for love will always share the same will as Mine. It has to be said that every living creation is undeniably in possession of free will as a divine attribute because it was in My image, but it had not used this free will for eternities because it was completely as one with Me and continuously stayed within the circuit of My flow of love, which meant that it did not leave the eternal order. Only Lucifer’s change of thinking led to a change of his will, and I gave free reign to both his wrong thoughts as well as his wrong will, which, after an infinitely long time, affected his created beings increasingly more, and thus the will divided and 'free will' openly manifested itself. Therefore, when it is said that the beings were unable to want differently than was My will, then it required the state in the beginning when they only accepted My will because of their exceedingly great love for Me and as a consequence of My overwhelmingly powerful emanation of love. A different will than My own was not possible in this state, nevertheless, in the beginning the beings were not subject to a state of coercion, instead I only externalized each being as proof of supreme perfection. However, the fact that Lucifer and a large proportion of his followers had fallen and experienced immense wretchedness, made becoming a child of God possible. It is just that the being had to go through the deepest abyss and wage such an immense battle on its path of return to Me that it thereby acquired the right of a child, whereas the non-fallen beings enjoy uninterrupted heavenly bliss and yet are not excluded from equally striving for and attaining the childship to God; all the same, I truly know what I bestow upon My living creations and which paths they must take in order to reach the highest goal. Nevertheless, it is always the unification with Me which leads to their greatest bliss, and I Am so close to My children that they are able to feel Me and yet so far away that they will constantly strive towards Me and time and again may receive My illumination of love as evidence of My presence.”

**The Earthly Path of Angel-beings**

God the Father is speaking: “Being allowed to live on earth is also the wish of non-fallen beings, which indeed live in unimaginable happiness but were unable to reach the highest perfection of childship to God, which necessitates the path across earth. These beings' wish will be granted, and they will travel their path under extremely difficult circumstances in life on earth, but generally will attain the final goal, although as human beings they don’t know their origin. They are, however, very frequently and severely tempted, and their earthly life, too, is particularly difficult and sorrowful, yet since their souls came from above they are far more willing to love and therefore also recognize the purpose of their earthly life very quickly, thus steadfastly following their goal despite their externally difficult circumstances, ill-health and all kinds of adversity. Attaining childship to God is the highest goal for the beings in the spiritual realm which, however, can only be accomplished by overcoming the abyss. Consequently, such
beings will predominantly embody themselves particularly in times of people’s spiritually low level in order to carry a ray of light into a world of profound darkness. For wherever a person willing to love is working on earth a soft light will be shining which is soothingly touching his fellow human beings’ souls. And a being of light will always bring such a soft shining light along to earth, since love in the soul will not need not be ignited but a small flame is already glowing when it enters into earthly life.

But such people will often be treated with hostility and have to prove themselves, hence pass the test of will as well, which this life on earth requires. For God’s adversary will tempt particularly them in the hope of bringing them to fall, which he once failed to succeed in doing. Nevertheless, the human being is not left defenseless against his power since his spiritual friends will always support him and provide him with strength, which he will at all times request from God: For a soul from above will never relinquish its bond with God, even though it is free in its will and actions. And thus in times of spiritual decline messengers of light and love will arise time and again, who openly acknowledge God and work for Him and His kingdom, people who are permeated by His spirit and who eagerly and with conviction proclaim the divine Redeemer and consider it their task in life to lead their fellow human beings to the cross, because they understand the significance of the sacrifice on the cross and therefore also know the danger people find themselves in. They gained this knowledge through their life of love, and therefore they can also be diligent representatives of Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation.

Especially in times to greatest spiritual adversity the helpers will descend from above but without knowledge of their origin. For they, too, will have to pass the test of will, they often have to live a most difficult earthly life for the sake of their goal and on no account are they allowed to be spiritually so influenced that they are compelled in their thinking, talking and behavior. But they can always expect help when they need it, since they will always take the path to God, Whom they recognize as their Father and Whom they love with all their heart. This is why their hearts are always open to receive a flow of strength from the spiritual kingdom, and reaching their goal is usually assured and only at risk if the person establishes contacts on earth which want to pull him down. The soul will not have to fear a fall into the abyss yet there is the danger that it will not achieve the highest degree of light, nevertheless it will keep its former happiness, only that it is no longer the created angel-being which can’t help but think and act in accordance with divine will, but that it has gone through earthly life and proven its free will and its direction, so that it thus can enter into the highest spheres of light in order to be indescribably happy.”

**Expediency of Creations – God’s will**

BD No. 3739 of 04/08/1946 taken from book 47

God the Father is speaking: “Divine will is the foundation of all creation, and as it came forth from His hand it is good and serves its purpose. Hence His creations will remain unchanged until they have fulfilled their purpose and this for all eternity, as long as they serve the perfection of the spiritual substances. And one of His works of creation is the human being, whose external form came forth from the Creator’s hand just as perfectly, so that his purpose of bringing the spiritual essence within himself to perfection can be fulfilled in every respect, but only on condition that the human being’s free will subordinates itself to God’s will, for God gave this creation freedom of existence so that it can determine its own fate, and therefore it is also able to act inexpediently, in opposition to God’s will. A person’s soul is intended to achieve the final goal on earth, and therefore it has to be able to manage its life independently from God’s
will, independently from fundamental law, so that it can emerge as a completely free spiritual being if it pursues its final goal.

And thus the human being’s external shape will in fact always be the same because it is God’s creation. However, the human being himself will, due to the awakening of the soul, due to the spiritual substances’ various degrees of development, demonstrate an entirely diverse character, and the opportunity of change is available to him throughout his earthly life so that, at the end of his physical life, he no longer needs to be the same as he was at the beginning of his earthly course of life. His outer appearance also changes but always in accordance with divine law. But the spiritual being within the person, which gives life to the person in the first place, can shape itself in many different ways and will neither be forced nor prevented by divine will. In addition, the human being also has the opportunity to shape his own creations in accordance with his will. If his will subordinates itself to divine will these creations will be expedient again and contribute to his higher development, since everything in accordance with divine will leads towards spiritual perfection.

Shaping his own character will progress faster when the human being occupies himself productively and creatively on earth, thus subordinating himself to the great divine law of releasing the bound spiritual substances, even if he is unaware of his achievement. Throughout the duration of earthly life God also gives the human being the ability to use his inflowing energy of life in order to develop new creations. The divine law rests in every human heart but it can also be deliberately ignored. Nevertheless, subordinating himself to this law understandably has to be beneficial for the human being who is using his strength in accordance with God’s will. But he is also responsible for the direction of his will, because he has been given freedom of will and intelligence, and because divine will was placed into his heart, which he thus should recognize and obey if he wants to be able to continue to exist before God when accountability is demanded of him one day. He will be answerable for the expedient use of his divinely created external form as well as for the creations which he voluntarily brought into being, because everything has to be in accordance with God’s will and thus serve the higher development of the spiritual essence or its inexpediency will be in opposition to God’s will.”

Who was embodied in Adam

BD No. 7463 of 11/26/1959 taken from book 79

God the Father is speaking: “You will always be directed correctly by My spirit and mentally guided into truth. I have given you this promise and it will come to pass as soon as you want to be instructed by Me Myself through the spirit. For My spirit in you is My share, it therefore knows all that which you would like to know. In the beginning only supremely perfect spirits existed, for My tireless spirit of love created them for its own happiness. This spirit of love yearned to receive the same love in return, It yearned for a like-natured being, and possessing it initiated the act of creation, insofar as that
this being came forth from Me first. From then on I wanted to share with it the bliss of creating, because it is extraordinarily blissful for a perfect being to time and again create through its will and strength the same beings in all magnificence and constant urge to love, which thus resulted in creating. And My first-created being, Lucifer or the bearer of light, experienced the pleasure of creating in the same way, and it was inconceivably happy. I allowed it complete freedom, for it was devoted to Me in profound and purest love, I did not limit its creative power since My strength of love constantly permeated this first-created being and because its will, too, was entirely free but nevertheless utterly concurred with Mine, because its love for Me shone brightly to the highest degree. Consequently, only like-natured, supremely perfect beings were able to emerge from this bond of love, beings, which were true images of Me Myself, just as the first-created spirit had been in the beginning. When the division of his will started, when Lucifer, in full possession of strength and light, began to compare himself with Me, when his love occasionally lessened and a certain amount of selfish love broke through, it also occasionally lessened the bright shine of his nature and this affected the beings as well. Nevertheless, these beings had been created through his will and thus My permeation of strength, they equally still emerged in supreme perfection but now and then also started to direct their will wrongly, since it was and remained completely free in all beings which arose from our mutual will and strength. The beings took on the nature of their creator but since My strength of love was their fundamental substance they were also divinely natured; they were perfect because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me and My strength, however, free will is part of a perfect being and this was able to develop in every direction.

Thus it cannot be said that the beings were forced to conform to their creator’s nature, because the strength from Me, which was always involved in the creative process, always guaranteed that, after the first being was created, nothing inferior would emerge from its creator’s will, because free will is bestowed upon every being and this required every being to experience its own test of will. And this free will resulted in the fact that the fall into the abyss also included beings which emerged from us first, whose intense light of love should never have allowed for it but who misused their free will just as Lucifer, the bearer of light himself, whose exceedingly magnificent nature should never have come to fall because he possessed brightest realization. But for this reason, his(Lucifer’s) fall has to be condemned even more just like the fall of those first beings, just as, the other way round, the later created beings stood firm and detached themselves from him(Lucifer) when they were allowed to use their right of self-determination and chose their Lord. And one of those fallen original spirits was Adam, whose soul was entitled to embody itself as a human being due to its maturity but this nevertheless did not protect him from falling for a second time, because once again his free will failed, but not because he was too weak to make the right decision. He wanted to be greater than God. That was his original sin and it was the renewed sin in paradise. And I wanted to create children for Myself who see their Father in Me and after whose love I longed, because My immeasurable love constantly desires reciprocation. This love was the basis for My whole act of creation, the creation of all original spirits and later of earthly-material creations, because I want to attain this love one day, if only after an infinitely long time. Time and again I try to make you humans understand the magnitude and profundity of My love, yet as long as you have not become love yourselves, as long as you have not shaped yourselves such that My strength of love can permeate you again as in the beginning, you will be unable to comprehend the depth of My love. However, you should know that you are able to touch My heart, that I will fulfill your every wish, that I guide you into truth and bestow light upon you because I know that
only light causes happiness, because light originates from love and you possess all My love, even if you are unable to feel it. But time and again I will provide you with the evidence of it.”

God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam

BD No. 6599 of 07/19/1956 taken from book 71

God the Father is speaking: “My eternal plan of Salvation intends to bring about the deification of your souls, which indeed had once been divine and perfect beings yet they forfeited this perfection of their own free will. You humans should know that I did not externalize you from Me as imperfectly as you are now, that I undeniably created the human form, but the soul, which animates this human form, had already spent an infinitely long time of changing its voluntarily fashioned, completely wrong state to such an extent that it was able to dwell in the human form in order to attain complete deification again. You must know that I did not create you imperfectly to then demand of you as human beings to perfect yourselves, because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me. Once you are in possession of this knowledge you will also consider your earthly existence from a different point of view. You will realize that it is not an end in itself but the means to an end. However, as long as you are lacking this knowledge you justifiably believe that you may use your earthly life purely for the sake of improving your physical well-being. You believe that you may use your energy of life purely physically, even if you aspire to the goal that every individual person should improve himself ethically in order to achieve a better human race. But you don’t understand the spiritual task of the individual yet. The human being himself is not the final goal, the existence as a human being is merely the final opportunity on this earth to reach the highest goal. And the teaching that I ‘created man so that he should love Me, be of service to Me, in order to thereby enter Heaven’ is only justified if the human existence is looked upon as a limited stage for the soul which once became imperfect, otherwise this teaching will lead to wrong ideas, such as the one that something ‘imperfect’, the soul, was joined to the human being at birth, that thus something imperfect was brought to life by Me. This not only confuses the image of My nature, which is supremely perfect, but also people’s train of thought, who do not grasp their actual task on earth and will therefore be increasingly more worldly orientated because a wrong concept is being developed in them.

Although through love for Me and selfless service the human being could indeed be able to attain the right realization and subsequently beatitude, it will nevertheless prevent love being kindled towards a Being which uses its creative strength for the emergence of imperfect creations; and even selfless service lacks the right motivation if people are unaware of the perfect spirits' former apostasy from Me, which consisted of the fact that they wanted to rule with arrogance, hence they discarded the principle of love. Their imperfection was caused by the beings themselves. However, the fact that you are imperfect as a human being cannot be doubted, and therefore you must first try to ascertain the reason for your imperfection and not be satisfied with the explanation that I created you the way you are on earth now. But the latter is endorsed by all those who portray the act of creation of the human being such that a ‘soul’ is ‘created’ at the same time for this human being, which they deem they can justify on account of the Words ‘God breathed a living soul into him.’ The fact that this living soul is a formerly fallen original spirit is not known to them, but this knowledge could be discovered by every individual person if only he seriously questioned the meaning and purpose of earthly life and his task on earth. And even a misguided teaching could make a person question, if only he wanted to gain clarification. And especially the teachers who guide
people should first attain clarification themselves, which they can receive at any time by merely turning to Me Myself if slight doubts, which everyone can feel arise within himself during deliberation, would make them turn to the right source, where purest trust will refresh anyone who desires it. The reason why there is so much darkness amongst people that misguided teachings were able to spread is due to people’s indifference towards the truth, for it is available and within reach for everyone who seriously desires the truth. Yet only a few try to penetrate My eternal plan of Salvation, but for them everything is obvious and they are brightly enlightened because the Light of eternity Itself kindles it in all those who want to escape the darkness.”

"God breathed the breath of life into the face of Adam"

Ref: Sermon_St_Seraphim.doc, 06-11-2001 Edited by Donald Shufran

"We have become so inattentive to the work of our salvation that we misinterpret many other words in Holy Scripture as well, all because we do not seek the grace of God and in the pride of our minds, do not allow it to dwell in our souls. That is why we are without true enlightenment from the Lord, which He sends into the hearts of men who hunger and thirst wholeheartedly for God’s righteousness or holiness.

Many explain the part in the Bible, ‘God breathed the breath of life into the face of Adam’ the first-created, who was created by Him from the dust of the ground, it must mean that until that moment there was neither human soul nor spirit in Adam, but only the flesh created from the dust of the ground. This interpretation is wrong, for the Lord created Adam from the dust of the ground with the constitution which the holy Apostle Paul describes: ‘May your spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ’ (1 Thess. 5:23). And all these parts of our nature were created from the dust of the ground, and Adam was not created dead, but an active being like all of God’s animate creatures living on earth.

The point is, that if the Lord God had not breathed afterwards into his face, this breath of life - that is, the grace of our Lord God the Holy Spirit Who proceeds from the Father, rests in the Son and is sent into the world for the Son’s sake - Adam would have remained without the Holy Spirit within him. It is the Holy Spirit who raised Adam to Godlike dignity. However perfect, he had been created and superior to all the other creatures of God, as the crown of creation on earth, he would have been just like all the other creatures, though they have a body, soul and spirit, each according to its kind, do not have the Holy Spirit within them. But when the Lord God breathed into Adam's face the breath of life, then, according to Moses' word, ‘Adam became a living soul’ (Gen. 2:7), that is, completely and in every-way like God, and like Him, forever immortal. Adam was immune to the action of the elements to such a degree that water could not drown him, fire could not burn him, the earth could not swallow him in its abysses, and the air could not harm him by any kind of action whatever. Everything was subject to
him as the beloved of God, as the king and lord of creation, and everything looked up to him, as the perfect crown of God’s creatures. Adam was made so wise by this breath of life, which was breathed into his face from the creative lips of God, the Creator and Ruler of all, that there has never been a man on earth wiser or more intelligent, and it is unlikely that there ever will be. When the Lord commanded him to give names to all the creatures, he gave every creature a name which completely expressed all the qualities, powers and properties given it by God at its creation.

As a result of this gift, of the supernatural grace of God, which was infused into him by the breath of life, Adam could see, understand the Lord walking in Paradise, comprehend His words, understand the conversation of the holy Angels, the language of all beasts, birds and reptiles and all that is now hidden from us the fallen and sinful creatures. All this was so clear to Adam before his fall. The Lord God also gave Eve the same wisdom, strength, unlimited power, and all the other good and holy qualities. He created her not from the dust of the ground, but from Adam’s rib in the Eden of delight, the Paradise which He had planted in the midst of the earth.

In order that they might always easily maintain the immortal, divine and perfect properties of this breath of life, God planted in the midst of the garden the tree of life with fruits endowed with all the essence and fullness of His divine breath. If they had not sinned, Adam and Eve themselves as well as all their posterity could have always eaten of the fruit of the tree of life and so would have eternally maintained the vivifying power of divine grace.

They could have also maintained for all eternity the full powers of their body, soul and spirit in a state of immortality and perpetual youth, and they could have continued in this immortal and blessed state of theirs forever. At the present time, however, it is difficult for us even to imagine such grace.

But through the tasting of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil - which was premature and contrary to the commandment of God - they learnt the difference between good and evil and were subjected to all the afflictions which followed the transgression of the commandment of God. Then they lost this priceless gift of the grace of the Spirit of God, so that, until the actual coming into the world of the God-man Jesus Christ, ‘the Spirit of God was not yet in the world because Jesus was not yet glorified’ (John 7:39).

However, that does not mean that the Spirit of God was not in the world at all, but His presence was not so apparent. It manifested only externally, and only the signs of His presence in the world were known to mankind. Thus, for instance, many mysteries in connection with the future salvation of the human race were revealed to Adam as well as to Eve after their fall. For Cain, in spite of his impiety and his transgression, it was easy for him to understand the voice which held grace and divinity, though convicting words. Noah conversed with God. Abraham saw God and His day and was glad (from John 8:56). The grace of the Holy Spirit acting externally was also reflected in all the Old Testament prophets and saints of Israel. Afterwards, the Hebrews established special prophetic schools where the sons of the prophets were taught to discern the signs of the manifestation of God or Angels, and to distinguish the operations of the Holy Spirit from the ordinary natural phenomena of graceless earthly life. Simeon who held God in his arms, Christ’s grandparents Joachim and Anna, and countless other servants of God continually often had various divine apparitions, revelations and heard voices, which were corroborated by evident miraculous events, though not with the same power as in the people of God. Nevertheless the presence of the Spirit of God also acted in the pagans who did not know the true God, because even among them, God found the chosen people. For instance, there were the virgin-
prophetesses called Sibyls who vowed virginity to an unknown God, but to God, the Creator of the universe, the all-powerful ruler of the world, as He was conceived by the pagans. Though the pagan philosophers also wandered in the darkness of ignorance of God, yet they sought the truth which is beloved by God. Because of this, God-pleasing seeking, they could partake of the Spirit of God. It is said, that nations who do not know God, practice by nature the demands of the law and do what is pleasing to God (cf. Rom. 2:14). The Lord so praises truth that He says of it Himself by the Holy Spirit: ‘Truth has sprung from the earth, and justice has looked down from heaven’ (Ps. 84[85]:11).

So you see, your Godliness, both in the holy Hebrew people, a people beloved by God, and in the pagans who did not know God, there was preserved a knowledge of God - thus, my son, a clear and rational comprehension of how our Lord God the Holy Spirit acts in man, and by means of our inner and outer feelings, one can be sure that this is really the action of our Lord God the Holy Spirit, and not a delusion of the enemy. That is how it was, from Adam’s fall, until the coming into the world of the Lord Jesus Christ, in the flesh.

Without this perceptible realization of the actions of the Holy Spirit which had always been preserved in human nature, men could not have possibly known for certain whether the fruit of the seed of the woman who had been promised to Adam and Eve had come into the world to crush the serpent’s head (Gen. 3:15).”

The Soul - The Divine Spark in the Human Being

God the Father is speaking: “The human soul is the unification of countless soul-substances which are assembly points for spiritual strength, i.e. which are receptacles for the spirit of God. Each one of these countless substances was previously embodied somewhere else, that is, enclosed in an outer form for the purpose of the spirit’s higher development and for the prospect of later unification with an equal substance. Hence each single substance of the human soul has passed though every work of creation and has, so to speak, matured for its last embodiment on earth. The soul always assumes the same shape as its surrounding outer shape. If a person with spiritual vision would contemplate the human soul in its composition he would be presented with an incredibly charming and varied picture. This work of God’s creation, invisible to human beings, is beyond description, both in its structure as well as in its usefulness. But a description of the formation of the soul would only confuse human thought for he cannot understand the countless miracles within the human body. What human beings understand to be ‘soul’ is all of creation in miniature. The soul is the innermost part of the human being and includes the whole of creation, intended to become enlightened during its life on earth and in glorification of God to enjoy the delights of heaven.

The soul has the divine spirit within itself. Although the original substance of the soul is also spirit in all its phases of evolution, the divine spark of spirit is placed into the incarnating soul of the human being by God Himself. He instills His breath into the human being. He places the divine into him and gives the soul the task to chose between the divine and the human during its last existence on earth. If the soul, the spirit out of God which at one time had opposed God, is now willing to unite with the divine spirit, the transformation of what was once far away from God begins and the human soul becomes enlightened. The unity of the human soul with the divine spirit occurs when the soul steadfastly overcomes all human desires, which, for the purpose of testing and for strengthening of the will, cling to the human body as temptation, when it resists all that the body as such requires and willingly submits to the requirements of the divine spirit.
Then the soul finally surrenders its former resistance to God. It chooses God, it is no longer in conscious opposition to the divine and accepts the emission of love, the strength, to increase the spirit within itself, to bring about the unity of the spirit within itself with the spirit outside of itself, and thus consciously strives to draw closer to God. If, however, the body’s desire dominates then the divine spark of spirit stays dormant and completely buried deep within the human being, it cannot emit light and the soul dwells in utter darkness. Its earthly life goes by without the smallest accomplishment; the spirit within is condemned to stagnate, its earthly process is not a path towards higher development but a time of standstill or even regression. The divine spark of spirit in the human being had been ignored and therefore could not manifest itself. The strength of divine love could not flow into the being and, as a result, the unity with the spirit of the eternal Father could not take place either. The soul takes this lightless state, which it had chosen for itself on earth, across into eternity and there, with endless pain of regret, contemplates the wasted time on earth and now has to struggle far more strenuously to improve its situation.”

**Hypostatic union with Christ – the imprint of God**

Ref: Conchiglia Aug 27th, 2004

The Divine Spark that is attached to the soul is the imprint of God that guides the soul as it makes its final journey back to God.

Jesus is speaking: “Here Conchiglia, how it will deduce through the meditative reading of the words that have been given you. The imprint of God is within you, is within your Essence. But for an imprint to be visible it must have a ground where to lean and where to imprint and that ground can only be of soil that is the human body with all the mineral features of the earth.

Your Body-Earth welcomed the Imprint of God which is now visible on Earth through your image. The Extraordinary, in the ordinary; the Divine, in the human; the Supernatural, in the natural; Heaven, on Earth, is it a surprise? Is it a novelty? Is it a lie? Is it a scandal? Or is it just the truth? What does your heart tell you?

You who read these words almost adoringly, how do you feel at the feeling level when you read this My daughter, Mine and your Conchiglia, perhaps the feeling of being next to your God and Love? A God who speaks to you and tells you how to live that is pleasing to Him and that is according to the Gospel? Yes children.

The Word of God is identical to this Word, the Scripture of the Gospel is identical to the Scripture. In both situations, the intents are the same that is, instruct the People of God on their origins and the Eternal Salvation of the Soul.

The completion of these writings is irreproachable by any human being and that human who will judge My Word of Life, is under My careful Eye. I allow him to do so, I follow him constantly and I wait patiently, that he distracts himself from thoughts and sight of that which he thinks of doing. But human liberty is a barrier to Me beyond which I cannot go in spite of My Deity. And then I just have to sit back and watch and wait just like you are doing Conchiglia, and with you pray to My Father’s and yours.”
The Divine Spark - Calling upon the 'Holy Spirit'

BD No. 8674 of 11/15/1963 taken from book 91

God the Father is speaking: “You humans often call the 'Holy Spirit' that it may come upon you, and you are unaware of the fact that it is within you and only requires your free will so as to be able to speak to you. The spirit is part of Me, it is inseparably connected with the Father-Spirit, thus it is a divine spark which was added to your soul when it incarnated on this earth as a human being, in other words: you once emerged from Me as an emanation of love and therefore consist of the same fundamental substance as I Myself. This substance solidified after your past apostasy from Me and you, who once had been full of life, became a lifeless beings. For My strength of love permeated you and this strength was able to be constantly active. However, since you rejected My strength of love it also left you incapable of any kind of activity. And you are still in this weak state when you enter the earth as a human being. In order that you will be able to accomplish the task given to you in your earthly life I radiate a spark of My eternal strength of love into every human heart, which thus is My share again. You are alive with the once emanated strength and that means that you are in possession of vitality, that you can be active in an earthly way and therefore also comply with your task as a human being. Your real task, however, is and remains your spiritualization, the retransformation of your nature into its original state. And you can only accomplish this task if you change yourselves into love. In order to be able to do that a spark of love has to be radiated into you first, since you, due to your past apostasy from Me, are completely without love. This spark of love is the emanation of Me Myself, it is the emanation of My spirit into your soul which, however, only awakens you humans into life if you apply your will. You all possess the spiritual spark, which is part of Me Myself, within you. Hence it need not come to you anymore, it is inside of you but can only manifest itself if, through a life of love, you provide the possibility for it, because it will not impose itself and influence you against your will in any way. Therefore you can at all times awaken the spirit in you but you will not be compelled to it.

When you pray for the Holy Spirit to come to you, you demonstrate your lack of knowledge regarding the right correlations, furthermore, you prove that you have a false concept of it, because you personify it to a certain extent and call upon it as an entity. It is, however, My 'emanation', for I Myself Am the Holy Spirit of eternity, and I Am present to anyone who calls upon Me. However, you must never think that the spirit you call upon is separate from Me, and it will and cannot comply with your call as long as you do not shape yourselves into love, for even if My strength of love is unlimited it will never be able to radiate into a closed heart, and a heart remains unresponsive as long as it is unwilling to love, since precisely due to the spiritual spark or spark of love it received from Me it is capable of loving. Willingness to love, however, prompts the spirit to reveal itself to you, even if you don’t call upon it expressly. It is within you but will remain silent as long as you disregard love, because it is love itself and therefore can only speak to love. It is inseparably connected to the eternal Father-Spirit, and therefore enables 'My spirit,' or the divine fire of love, to flow into you humans in abundance and thus cause the spiritual spark to continuously educate you from within; for then divine light of love must also illuminate your hearts and that signifies brightest realization, it signifies the
The Soul’s union with its Spirit

BD 8327 12.11.1962

God the Father is speaking: “I reveal Myself to you humans in the most simple and understandable way, for My Words are not solely intended for the intellectual person but for all who desire the truth, even if they do not possess a keen intellect. However, I speak to them in a way that they can understand and therefore I avail Myself of a plainly spoken person, who can also be understood by everyone when he speaks to them from person to person, because then I will work through My spirit if he takes part in spiritual conversations. When My Word is therefore conveyed to Earth it also happens in a way that the contents of My revelations are clear and understandable. And thus every person will be able to understand that the process of the spirits apostasy consisted of the fact that they rejected My illumination of love, My ‘spirit of love,’ and that the return to Me also consists of the fact that they will voluntarily accept My illumination of love again, that they thus must unite themselves with My spirit once more. The union with My spirit takes place when the divine spark of love, which is placed into every person as My share, gets kindled into a bright flame which incessantly strives towards Me, the Primal Fire. Then the fallen original spirit will have become its fundamental element again, and this consciously, for even after its apostasy from Me it remained My strength because My emanated strength of love cannot cease to exist. Hence the return to Me can only be achieved consciously and this requires free will, which is returned again to the previously constrained being as a human who must subsequently use it correctly. The original being certainly takes the path of return in an unconscious state, dissolved in countless tiny particles, while it is bound within the creations of earth. This return is an act of grace on My part, because I want to help the extremely deeply fallen being to reach the point again when it can receive its free will back. But then the unity of the spiritual spark with the eternal Father-Spirit must take place if the final return is to be accomplished.

The original spirit, which travels the earthly path as a human soul, will remain distant from Me for as long as the human being is without love, for I have also given him a spark of love which he must first ignite before a union with the Father-Spirit can be accomplished, for only love can achieve this union, and love must voluntarily be practiced by a person, which also makes the illumination of My strength of love possible and the being becomes again what it was in the beginning. The soul is a fallen original spirit. Consequently, when it is said that the soul unites with its spirit, then the latter should always be understood as the spirit of love from Me, which the original spirit once rejected and thereby closed itself to all illumination of love. As a human being the soul, the once fallen original spirit, carries a tiny spark of divine spirit within itself, but it must voluntarily acknowledge it, which it consciously does when it opens itself to My

receiving of knowledge which corresponds to the truth, because My spirit knows everything and can therefore only impart the pure truth to you. Therefore you can only ever pray that I Myself may be present to you, but this also requires you to shape yourselves to love, otherwise the Eternal Love cannot be present to you. You can therefore only pray to be granted the strength to fulfill My commandments, then you will always become aware of My presence, for with every work of love you draw Me close to you because I Am Love Itself. And then I will also work through My spirit in you, as I have promised you.”
illumination of love and thereby becomes lovingly active itself. Thus it has the spirit within itself and it is its earthly task to let itself be influenced by this spirit, which will always result in the fact that the person will practice love and through love unite with Me, since I Am the Eternal love Itself. Hence the soul unites itself again with its spirit. The original spirit no longer reacts negatively towards Me and My illumination of love, instead, it consciously strives towards Me, it wants to be illuminated by Me and every distance between us is abolished.

It is the same divine original being again which originated from Me and after its voluntary apostasy also voluntarily returned to Me again, except that it has become My 'child', which I was unable to create because it required the created beings free will to become supremely perfect. Thus it deified itself voluntarily and can now create and work with Me in supreme beatitude and free will which, however, is the same as Mine, because a perfect being cannot want and think differently than I, as I Am the most perfect spirit in infinity."

Love and Suffering Purify the Soul
BD 8113 01.03.1962

God the Father is speaking: “Love should be the driving force for all your deeds and failings, then you will always do My will, you will work with love and thereby also attain the strength needed by your soul for your path of earthly life. The soul is meant to mature fully, that is, it is meant to push away all impurities it is still burdened with, it is meant to become translucent so it is able to accept My love’s emanation of light which signifies strength and bliss for the soul. But My ray of love cannot penetrate it if the soul is still surrounded by dense layers, by impure longings and instincts, by all kinds of vices, by low characteristics such as pride, anger, vindictiveness, by any kind of unkindness.

The soul has to try to free itself from all these faults and longings, and the means for this are love and suffering. The impurities dissolve through deeds of love, but the soul will also be released from them through suffering, and it can be ever more illuminated by My love and mature until it has become completely translucent, and then it need not fear death anymore, because then it can enter the kingdom of light, because its earthly progress has not been in vain since it has reached its goal on earth: the transformation of itself into love. And therefore you will understand that My commandments of love are of utmost importance, that they have to be fulfilled, that your life on earth has to be a life of love if it is to be successful for you. You are only on earth for the maturity of your soul which, at the start of its incarnation as a human being, is still without love, although I have provided it with a spark of love which can ignite and change the soul’s still imperfect state until it is close to perfection. But the person also has to muster the will to live a life of love. He has to listen to his inner voice which constantly urges him to act with love. He has to perform deeds of love or his soul won’t change but will keep its lowly attributes and is then in danger of entering the kingdom of the beyond in a completely immature state, which means, that it will still have to go through torments of purification there in order to be able to enjoy happiness one day.

Only love will release it from all impure attributes, only love will crystallize it and it will push all impurities away from itself, or it will have to accept much suffering during its earthly life which can also mature the soul, because this calms it down and gradually also ignites the spark of love within itself, and then love and suffering work together and achieve the soul’s maturity. And the human being should always reject his selfish love and give love to his neighbor. Then he will change quickly, for only unselfish neighborly
love is the true, divine love which I demand, which the soul has to change into by itself during its earthly progress as a human being if it wants to attain eternal life. And therefore My divine commandments of love always have to be emphasized as the most important, for only love has the redeeming strength, only love will be able to achieve the soul’s transformation. Only through deeds of love will it mature and become bright and clear, so that My emanation of love will find no more obstacles, so that I can then make it blissfully happy as in the beginning, because through love it will find union with Me, which is its purpose and goal of earthly progress.”

The Flesh and the Spirit
Ref: Romans 8:5-13

For those who live according to the flesh are concerned with the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the spirit with the things of the spirit. The concern of the spirit is life and peace. For the concern of the flesh is hostility toward God: it does not submit to the law of God, nor can it; and those who are in the flesh cannot please God. But you are not in the flesh; on the contrary, you are in the spirit, if only the Spirit of God dwells in you. Whoever does not have the Spirit of Christ does not belong to him. But if Christ is in you, although the body is dead because of sin, the spirit is alive because of righteousness. If the Spirit of the one who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the one who raised Christ from the dead will give life to you mortal bodies also, through his Spirit that dwells in you. Consequently, brothers, we are not debtors to the flesh, to live according to the flesh. For if you live according to the flesh, you will die, but if by the spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live.

Life - Awakening the Divine Spark in the Person

God the father is speaking: “The divine spiritual spark in the human being is his actual life; consequently, one can only speak of rebirth when the spirit in the human being has been awakened, when it can start to become active and thus the spiritual life begins. In that case the human being is spiritually reborn, for his physical birth only makes sense and serves its purpose when spiritual rebirth has taken place. The divine spiritual spark has consciously been acknowledged by the person’s soul even if the person is not yet able to rationally differentiate between the two concepts of soul and spirit. For the process of unification of spirit and soul can happen without a person’s knowledge, since this is only conveyed to him when it occurred. Only then will the spirit explain to the soul what the unity of the spirit with the soul means, and only then will the soul strive towards ever closer union with its spirit and will accept the most valuable knowledge from it. And from then on the human being will be alive, that is, he will utilize his knowledge and consciously work for the kingdom of God; he will eagerly work at distributing the obtained information and at imparting the knowledge to his fellow human beings. Life is a continuous activity. Admittedly, the human being is certainly physically alive without having awakened his indwelling spiritual spark, that is, he is active in an earthly way and thus works for his earthly life, for his body and for earthly goals. But this is not the true life, the life which is everlasting, the life Jesus had spoken about and which He promised to anyone who believes in Him. True life is the never-ending life of the spirit, the attainment of which is the purpose of life on earth. This purpose will only be achieved when the human being’s spirit has come to life.

Spiritual rebirth is the most worthwhile goal to strive for, because it will yield indescribable gain for the human being’s soul. That which is offered by the earth is
impermanent and only benefits the body but never the soul. In contrast, what the spirit offers the soul will refresh it and quench its thirst, it is its nourishment, thus it is strength for living; it is a precious commodity which can no longer perish, which induces happiness and encourages diligent activity and therefore can be called the elixir of life, because death, which previously had threatened the soul and would be its inevitable share had rebirth not taken place, will no longer be possible. The carnal body is the shell which harbors the divine spark and it is up to the person’s free will as to whether he bursts the shell, whether he strives to awaken the Divine within himself to life. If the soul, the bearer of the will, turns towards the divine spirit by trying to penetrate the shell, by trying to liberate itself from all earthly wishes, from bad habits and vices, if it tries to dissolve the shell through activity of love, the divine spiritual spark will start to move, it will make contact with the human being’s soul, it will help it rise above itself, it will constantly whisper advice and instructions and thus guide the soul as soon as it allows itself to be guided. From then on the divine spark in the person will take the lead and this will truly be right. Then the spirit and soul will no longer oppose each other but pursue their goal together, they will strive towards the eternal home and pay no attention to the body, the earth and everything of an earthly nature, even though the human being still lives on earth. The human being is alive, even if earthly matters are of no further interest to him, for his spirit is alive and is constantly active. The human being only works for the spiritual kingdom, for the kingdom of God, he works at improving himself and his fellow human beings, he is incessantly active, for the indwelling spiritual spark will not allow him to rest, that is, to rest idly, as it is harmful and synonymous with death, with a state which is painful in eternity and should therefore be feared as the worst fate that can befall the human soul. However, once the spirit has come alive then death will no longer exist, for the spirit is immortal and also draws the soul into eternal life, into everlasting glory.

**Spiritual Rebirth**
BD No. 2360 of 06/07/1942 taken from book 32

God the Father is speaking: “The turning point in life is the rebirth of the spirit, it is the moment when you become conscious of the spiritual strength flowing to you through My love. As soon as you feel yourselves inseparably united with Me, as soon as you become conscious of the fact that you cannot exist without Me, as soon as you feel My presence and this consciousness determines your whole life, the spiritual spark in you strives towards its Father-Spirit and you have woken up to the real life, you are reborn in spirit. And from now on you strive towards Me consciously, your intentions and thoughts are inclined towards Me, your actions correspond to My will. And I take hold of you and draw you up to Me. I won’t let you go anywhere on your own anymore, I will go with you wherever you go, I Am around you and pay attention to every thought looking for Me. I hear your heart’s every question, every appeal for help, every sigh for My love and I will help you, even if you don’t feel it instantly. My love for you is boundless and My care never-ending, and thus I won’t leave any one of My living creations without help. And I particularly take care of My children, for they are My children who have found Me and confide in Me of their own accord. They have all My love, Spiritual rebirth is like the rising sun, it appears increasingly more radiant in the firmament until it is in the sky in full splendor, permeating My works of creation with light and warmth, giving life to new creations and keeping them alive. Standstill no longer exists for a spiritually reborn person. He will become increasingly brighter and shining since he is, after all, permeated by My strength of love, by My spirit. And thus
he gains ever more light and strength and likewise illuminates everything in his surroundings.

Spiritual rebirth is the awakening to eternal life, and the spiritually reborn person will likewise be able to awaken the lifeless to life, for wherever his light is shining it penetrates the darkness with its bright radiance, and where there is light there is life, where there is light I Myself Am present, and I bring life to all those who desire it, who consciously want it from Me, who likewise turn to Me with yearning, thus, who acknowledge Me. I give you My Word and thereby the visible sign of My love, I give you strength, which will manifest itself in increased longing for Me again, for this longing is the sign that My Father-Spirit draws the spiritual spark in you to Himself, and thus you shall be happy when you yearn for Me, for My spirit strives towards you in the same way. And your hearts cannot let go of Me again, for I do not let them do so once they have given themselves to Me. I Am the Spirit of Truth, I Am Life, I Am Love and the Primary Origin of everything in existence. Whomever I grant My love will exist from eternity to eternity. He will live and know the full truth; there is no deception and illusion where he is; he will be what I Am, a spirit, full of power and strength from Me. He will radiate love and be incredibly happy for being able to impart My spirit to the living creations again, for being able to bring what was once lifeless to life. He will resemble Me in everything, for My spirit permeates him and thus he cannot be any different than I Am, a being full of love, strength, wisdom and power. And thus you will be the most blissfully happy creatures in eternity, united with one another and always near to Me. And you will receive what you desire, for you will only ever desire My love, and this will permeate you continually, so that you can work for your own infinite happiness in My kingdom, which everyone who unites with Me in time and eternity can share.”

The Audible Word – Spiritual Spark

God the Father is speaking: ‘The inner Word certainly sounds clearly and audibly, yet only to someone who listens within and who, due to his way of life, has so shaped his heart that God Himself is able to express Himself through this heart. The human being’s soul has to be so intimately connected with the spiritual spark within that it can hear its voice at all times and that the spiritual spark, which is an emanation of God, is able to express itself such that the person can hear its voice like spoken words, so that the Words sound in him and thus cannot be misunderstood. Just like people who speak to each other from person to person, God speaks to people through the heart. This process cannot be explained in any other way, yet it is only understandable to someone once he has heard the divine voice. He feels God’s Words in his heart and is ecstatically happy to receive this grace, for then he will have no more doubt, no unbelief, no question which will not be refuted or answered to him once doubt or questions arise in him. The audible Word is the evidence for the person that everything he previously believed is true. And the audible Word reveals to the person the heavenly Father’s presence, His proximity, which causes indescribable bliss.

However, it sounds so very gently and subtly in the heart that it can only be heard by paying utmost attention. The most heartfelt contact must be mentally established with God and then the listening will have to start, the awaiting of His grace, which then will noticeably flow into him. But only a person whose heart has changed into love will be able to hear the divine voice, for it is divine love which expresses itself to a person and this can only manifest itself where true love exists. Yet once a person has audibly perceived the divine Word he will never lose this gift of grace again, then he will be able to hear His voice at all times and in all places, he will only need to remain in
hearthfelt contact with Him and he will clearly and distinctly hear the answer. He will not be overcome by doubt as to the truth of it because he feels God’s nearness and it will also be understandable to him that God manifests Himself audibly. However, as long as the earthly child has not attained a specific degree of maturity as a result of a selfless life of love it will not be able to experience the happiness of this blissful union with God either. Nevertheless, it should always and forever listen within and from the bottom of its heart appeal for this grace, so that it will receive the strength to live according to God’s will, and His eternal love will draw close to it, so that it will clearly and distinctly hear His voice, so that He will speak to it through the heart and the earthly child will feel His love and be abundantly happy while it is still on earth.”

**Inner Reflection**

BD 1590 31.08.1940

God the Father is speaking: “It requires some time of reflection as to be able to listen to the inner voice, for it does not express itself in the midst of earthly commotion, that is, it is not perceptible to the person. Only someone who withdraws into his inner life will be able to perceive it, precisely because it only sounds deep within the heart. Thus, in order to establish a connection with the spirit, it is absolutely necessary for a person to shape his inner life by trying to harmonies it with the will of the One Who gave him life. An inner life after divine will can give rise to inconceivable success, for this guarantees access to spiritual knowledge. It opens the gate to life beyond earth for the human being. The human being is unable to penetrate these areas from the outside, but if he takes the path by means of his innermost life, by means of his thoughts and feelings which are deeply rooted within his heart, he will take the right path and will reach the right goal.

The human being needs many heart-to-heart talks with himself and needs to subject himself and his actions to self-criticism and must always want what is best, then he will shape himself according to God’s will. However, the more he is prevented by the outside world from times of inner reflection the harder it will be for him to establish contact with the spiritual world, for every pensive hour will already be, so to speak, the unification with spiritual beings which try to influence his thoughts and which, precisely during such inner introspections, can speak to the listener of the inner voice unimpeded. These beings can only make themselves noticed through the most subtle spiritual vibrations, hence they have to be received during profound silence otherwise they cannot be sensed and ineffectively glide past the human being’s soul. The more easily you are able to detach yourselves from the earth and desire spiritual contact, the more clearly and perceptibly the voice will sound in you, and therefore you should do everything in your power to avoid earthly experiences which might detract you from the inner work of improving your soul, from introspective hours of rest, during which you seek spiritual contact. You will undeniably have far more success than you can ever achieve by earthly means.”

**Further Explanation Regarding the Soul**

BD No. 8012 of 10/05/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: “It is necessary to clarify the concept of the 'soul' so that you do not live in error: Everything you see around yourselves is spiritual strength, which was once emanated by Me as beings which were dissolved when they did not use the strength of love, which flowed to them ceaselessly, in accordance with My will. For this strength must become active according to the law of eternal order. Thus I reshaped
this strength of love, once emanated as 'beings', into works of creation which perform a serving function. And so all of creation which surrounds you is basically the strength which was externalized by Me as independent beings. And regardless of how solidified the spiritual strength is that became matter, they are all sparks of light and love which emanated from Me, My will merely gave them a shape according to My love and wisdom. However, this spiritual substance can no longer cease to exist, My once emanated strength will inevitably return to Me again. Yet the degree of maturity of everything around you varies considerably, because the meaning and purpose of creation is to bring the spiritual substance to full maturity since, as a result of its fall into the abyss, it had completely reversed its nature and, by means of this process of probation, this purification process through the whole of creation, shall deify itself again, thus become an independent being once more, which will work in light and strength and freedom for its own happiness. Sooner or later all tiny particles of a dissolved original spirit will gather again, and this will then live on earth in the external shape of a human being in order to achieve its final perfection of its own free will. Hence this soul is My once emanated strength of love, yet all of its substances still need purification. Nevertheless, it is a spiritual substance, for everything you see is spiritual strength, even if it is consolidated as matter as a result of My will. The spiritual essence which now animates the human being as a 'soul' has certainly reached a certain degree of maturity already, or it would not be permitted to embody itself as a human being; however, one cannot speak of a 'perfect' soul, because it travelled through Lucifer’s realm and its thoughts and intentions are still satanically inclined. But it is the once fallen original spirit which, through earthly progress, can entirely release itself from all unspiritual influences, which can freely want and act and therefore also has the opportunity to achieve final perfection on earth and to enter the kingdom of the beyond as a radiant spirit of light again when it has to leave the earthly body. Hence the soul is something invisible to the human eye which is everlasting, which continues to exist for all eternity, whilst matter, every external form that is visible to the eye, is transient but will also only be disintegrated by My will in order to release the spiritual substance concealed therein.

So the visible creation is likewise a spiritual substance which was once externalized as beings, it merely goes through these creations in a disintegrated state, yet one day it will be mature enough so that the fallen original spirit will be permitted to embody itself as a soul in a human being. Although the soul has the shape of a human it is, however, only visible to the spiritual eye, that is, only a certain degree of maturity enables another soul to see the former, just as the beings in the spiritual kingdom were once able to recognize and communicate with each other, but only because they possessed spiritual vision, which the human being or soul which departed from earth in an immature state does not possess. Thus the soul is not a substantial form anymore, if 'substance' is to be understood as something material, visible. It is a spiritual form; it is My emanated strength which gives life to a dead form, the human body. Even so, the soul can think, feel and want, which the body itself cannot do once the actual life, the soul, is missing. The human organs certainly perform their functions, yet always driven by or animated by the soul, the real Self, which determines the activity of all these functions. This is why the whole responsibility for the existence on earth rests on the soul, never on the body, but it would always think and act wrongly had I not provided it with the spiritual spark as My share, which subsequently tries to influence the soul to subordinate itself to its urging and which always wants to advise it according to My will yet never forcibly influence the soul. It is entirely up to the soul to submit itself to the desire of the spirit or to the body’s wishes; this is the actual test of earthly life the soul will have to pass in order to be able to enter the spiritual kingdom in a perfect state. You
humans must get used to the idea that this very 'fallen spirit' is your real Self. But that this original spirit at the beginning of its embodiment as a human being is still very impure, for it lives in Lucifer's realm, it travelled through all creations in which everything satanic is bound. And the human external frame is matter too, thus a spiritual substance that is still in the process of development. For the final perfection shall only take place during earthly life but it can be attained, because the act of Salvation was accomplished by Jesus Christ, My only begotten Son, Whom I sent to Earth in order to redeem the immense original sin which denied all fallen beings entry into the kingdom of light.

The soul of the man called Jesus was therefore a soul of light which, for the purpose of a mission, descended into the realm of darkness. A soul of light embodied itself in a cover of flesh, in the body of a temporal human which was just like any other human. Although the soul of light prepared this shell first, for it had to be a pure vessel, because I Myself wanted to take abode in Jesus, the man. Nevertheless, the body of flesh consisted of earthly material substances, because Jesus the human being had to accomplish an act of deification on Himself which was to serve other people as an example, which therefore all people will have to accomplish in order to perfect themselves.

Moreover, Jesus' soul, a profoundly pure soul of light, found itself in dark surroundings; it descended into Lucifer's realm and was subsequently exposed to all onslaughts on him. However, Jesus' soul was not a fallen spirit. But since it had to travel through the abyss it was unable to resist everything unspiritual which badly besieged it on Lucifer's instructions. Jesus' soul was light in all its fullness. Yet when it descended into the abyss it left the light behind since it would irrevocably have consumed the people in darkness. Jesus therefore only entered His physical shell to a limited extent, He did not let His light of love shine yet love was in Him, He did not deprive Himself of love and this love intimately united Him with Me, His Father of eternity. Thus Jesus' soul consisted of spirit made of My spirit, it, too, was emanated by Me as light of love and did not surrender it either when it came into the world. But then My adversary's influence started, who wanted to prevent Jesus' act of Salvation and also sought to draw Jesus' soul down into the darkness. By virtue of the enormous light of love Jesus could easily have resisted his every onslaught but this would have put the following of Jesus into jeopardy, he would never have exemplified, as a 'human being', the life His fellow human beings should live in order to release themselves from My adversary, instead, divine strength alone would have accomplished something which would never have been possible for any human being. This is why a soul of light consciously took up the battle against My adversary by offering him every target. He challenged him deliberately and that meant, at the same time, not fighting the demons when they tried to take possession of His soul. He did not defeat them by virtue of His power but by virtue of His love, that is, He pacified them, He brought redemption to them, for His love was greater than great and, during His earthly life as a human being, it grew into a sea of flames. He accepted Me Myself as the Eternal love in Him. He did not yield to the adversary's temptations but overcame every challenge, every desire by these demons with boundless patience and mercy in order to help these unredeemed spirits and to place them into a state that they could adapt to His soul. And love accomplished the work that all still unredeemed physical substances adapted to His soul, that soul and body radiated in supreme abundance of light and united with Me, the eternal light of Love.

And this very same process happens when a most elevated spirit of light, an angel-spirit, wants to take the path through the abyss in order to attain childship to God, in order to voluntarily become a supremely perfect spirit which can create in and with
Me in free will. In that case, the spirit will always limit its abundance of light and
strength, because it would burst the human body, which is not a pure spiritual body as
yet. Thus the spirit of light takes on the shape of the human body and yet remains a
spiritual body. And this spiritually 'limited' form is the soul which animates the otherwise
dead body of flesh in the first place. When this soul leaves the body of flesh again it will
no longer be restricted and will be a free spirit again, full of light and strength, but it
does not exclude the possibility that this spirit had once taken the path through the
abyss as a human soul. But such a spirit will also have extraordinary spiritual abilities at
its disposal in earthly life, for although it is exposed to the most severe temptations on
the part of My adversary it will never completely lose its connection with Me, and the
strength of its love will also ensure that it will emerge as the victor. For what My
adversary failed to achieve when he caused the apostasy of the great host of originally
created spirits from Me, he will not achieve now either. And yet, a light spirit’s life on
earth will always be a particularly difficult one until it has quite openly passed the
important test of will which turned it into My child that will forever be united with Me,
with its Father, and then enjoy unlimited beatitudes.”

**Incarnation – Instincts - Preliminary stages**

BD No. 2775 of 06/15/1943 taken from book 34/35

God the Father is speaking: “The incarnation of a soul can take place when all
substances, which have taken the earthly path within the many diverse creations and are
thus developed, have joined together. The soul substance of every work of creation has
to be present in order to incarnate i.e. the human body becomes the cover for a soul
which contains all works of creation in miniature within itself. The previous infinitely long
earthly progress has resulted in the unification of all these substances who then await
their last embodiment. They will be assimilated as soul into the human outer shell to
experience the last stage of development. This incarnation is of varied duration due to
the different substances state of maturity, which have had a certain amount of freedom
during their preliminary stages already albeit they had acted under compulsion in
accordance with God’s will. However, in the last stages before embodiment as human
being this compulsory condition was gradually eased so that certain instincts could be
lessened or even increased. This subsequently resulted in a higher or lower degree of
maturity which, in turn, determines the duration of the last embodiment as human being.
As soon as all soul substances have united as a human soul they strive for the last
embodiment on earth, because they know that the human shell is their last physical
cover and that they can be free from all earthly restrictions afterwards. For that reason
the soul will only spend time where it is offered an opportunity to incarnate.
Understandably it will incarnate where people’s nature adapts to its own degree of
maturity, i.e. where people have the same instincts and attributes that match its own
nature.

However, this does not exclude that a differently inclined soul would not try to
incarnate with unfamiliar natured people in order to hasten its embodiment. But then it
often has to struggle with added difficulties during its earthly life as its nature is not
taken into account and it is unable to fulfill the expected requirements. Nevertheless,
since the soul knows the path of its earthly life in advance it is not stopped if it makes
this choice itself, since it has the resources at its disposal to achieve its final maturity in
every embodiment. Due to its earlier many diverse shapes it has every aptitude within
itself at various degrees and can increase or reduce them at will. Thus it is not incapable
and the strength to do so is likewise given in accordance with its will. However, if it
strives half-heartedly it will remain in the same state of maturity prior to its incarnation
as a human being; in that case the incarnation has not resulted in higher development. Although at the time of death it will shed its physical cover but its desires and instincts, which it was meant to overcome during its earthly life, still connect it to the material world. Therefore it has not taken full advantage of its earthly incarnation, and when it realizes that it has wasted the right to become a child of God and can no longer achieve it either, it experiences an indescribable state of remorse; even though it still has infinitely many opportunities in the beyond to arrive at the contemplation of God. Yet one day an incarnated soul has to give account before God how it has used earth’s opportunities and what spiritual progress it has achieved at the time of death, because the embodiment as human being is a mercy that cannot be valued highly enough; it is a gift which the human being should cherish appropriately by doing whatever advances his development because he cannot return to earth again once he has left it."

Will for Descendants - waiting souls

God the Father is speaking: "Countless souls are waiting for embodiment and thus new generations have to arise time and again. Human beings have to be born all the time so that souls can occupy their bodies during their final period of development on earth. Hence people’s willingness is always necessary for the embodiment of a soul, and at the same time it is also an act of love for the unredeemed soul if people offer it the opportunity for its final incarnation on earth. Only the will to awaken a new life should be the reason for a union between a man and a woman; without this will the bodily function, which is only intended for the awakening of a human life, is unlawfully performed. Many sins are committed in this respect, i.e. the divine will is not taken into account, the body is not educated to carry out its correct task and subsequently many souls wait in vain and cannot incarnate even though they have the degree of development which permits an earthly embodiment. These souls remain close to earth and try to persuade people to unite, especially people who are in love, since love has to be the motivating force for a union to bring forth new life. Love between two human beings is essential to give the awakened soul during its short time on earth the opportunity to achieve the kind of maturity which will result in its entrance into the realm of light. A loveless union provides the opportunity for embodiment to those souls whose bad instincts are still particularly strong and who, as a result, have to struggle considerably during their earthly life to overcome these instincts.

The human will to have children is, however, mostly due to love for each other, and it is of great advantage for the incarnating soul if this love prevails because the spark of love leaps into the new-born being and it can gain spiritual maturity on earth much easier. Nevertheless, the effort to avoid descendants can be harmful to the souls who are willing to incarnate, in as much as people’s sexuality adds to the same urges in the new being whose soul consequently constantly has to fight against them during its earthly life. Souls who cannot incarnate nevertheless stay close to people and trouble them, i.e. they try to influence people to unite for the purpose of procreation. Understandably, in that case physical desires will always be stronger since the souls only try to influence people along the lines of their inclination; they just want to transfer physical lusts to get the opportunity for their own embodiment. Consequently, people who unite sexually without love shoulder a tremendous responsibility as they are surrounded by souls who want to incarnate, and their lust attracts equally disposed souls who use these uninhibited moments to occupy a newly created being which now starts its earthly path of life as a human being. And such souls are mainly predominant because only few souls entered life as a result of love and a conscious will for descendants. For
this reason human generations will become consistently less spiritual because there is little love between people who were also born without love.”

**Creation of Eve - Genesis 3:21-24**

So The Lord God cast a deep sleep on the man, and while he was asleep, he took out one of his ribs and closed up its place with flesh. The Lord God then built up into a woman the rib that he had taken from the man. When he brought her to the man, the man said: “This one, at last, is bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; This one shall be called ‘woman,’ for out of ‘her man’ this one has been taken.”

That is why a man leaves his father and mother and clings to his wife, and the two of them become one body.

**Creation of Eve**

Ref: MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

Jesus is speaking: “When man awoke from his first sleep and found his companion by his side, he felt that his happiness had been rendered complete by God. It was already very great beforehand. Everything in Adam and around Adam had been made so that he could enjoy complete happiness, healthy and holy, and the delight that is Eden was not only around but also within Adam. The garden full of plant, animal, and marine beauty surrounded him; however, within him, a garden of spiritual beauty blossomed with every kind of virtue, ready to mature into fruits of holy perfection; and there was the Tree of Knowledge suited to his state, and the tree of the Supernatural Life: Grace; neither were the precious waters of the divine spring missing which divided itself into four branches and always sprinkled the virtues of man with a new wave so that they could grow gigantically and turn him even more so into a faithful mirror of God.

As a natural creature, he enjoyed what he saw: the beauty of a virgin world that just a short while ago had come from the will of God; he enjoyed what he could: his dominion over the lower creatures. Everything had been placed by God at the service of man: from the sun to the insect so that everything would be a delight to him.

As a supernatural creature, he enjoyed - reasoning and most gentle ecstasy - the understanding of the Essence of God: Love; of the relationships of love between the Immense One who gave Himself and the creature who loved by adoring Him. Genesis veils this faculty of man and this communicating to him by God in the phrase: ‘having heard the voice of God walking in Eden in the cool of the evening.’

As much as the Father had given knowledge to His adoptive children proportioned to their state, He still continued to teach them. Because infinite is the love of God, and after having yearned to give again, and so much more does He give, the more the creature is a daughter to Him. God always gives Himself to the one who gives himself generously to Him.

Therefore, when man awoke and saw the woman made in his likeness, he felt that his happiness, as a creature, was complete by having all the humanity and all the super-humanity, being that the Love gave Himself to the love of man.”
St. John Chrysostom: The Rib of Adam

“Water and blood symbolize baptism and the holy Eucharist. From these two sacraments the Church is born: from baptism, the cleansing water that gives rebirth and renewal through the Holy Spirit, and from the holy Eucharist. Since the symbols of baptism and the Eucharist flowed from his side, it was from his side that Christ fashioned the Church, as he had fashioned Eve from the side of Adam. When Moses tells the story of the first man and exclaims: Born from my bones and flesh from my flesh! As God then took a rib from Adam’s side to fashion a woman, so Christ has given us blood and water from his side to fashion the Church. God took the rib when Adam was in a deep sleep, and in the same way Christ gave us the blood and the water after his own death.” Ref: From the Catecheses by St. John Chrysostom, bishop Cat.3, 13-19, SC 50, 174-177

The “Tree of Life” and “The Tree of Knowledge”

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162
[Note: As we go forward, we should try to understand why the forbidden tree was called “The Tree of Knowledge?” Why not call it “The Tree of Sin” or perhaps “The Tree of Disobedience” or better still, “The Tree of Death?” Projecting out in time, Satan is going to visit the “Tree of Knowledge” again and the consequences of that visit will be devastating to all mankind.]

“The only limitation placed by God on the immense possessions of man was the prohibition to eat of the fruits from the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil. This would have been a useless harvest, and unjustified, for man already had that knowledge which was necessary for him, and a measure superior to that established by God could only cause harm.

Consider: God does not prohibit to eat of the fruits from the Tree of Life because man had a natural need for these in order to live a healthy and long existence until a more living divine desire of revealing Himself totally to the adoptive son would make God pronounce the following, Son, ascend to my dwelling place and submerge yourself into your God,’ a call, without suffering of death, to be celestial Paradise.

The Tree of Life that is encountered at the beginning of the Book of the Great Revelation (Genesis 2:9 and 3:22) and that is found again at the end of the Book of the Great Revelation: the Bible (Apocalypse of John 22:2,14) is a figure of the Incarnate Word - whose fruit, the Redemption, hung from the wood of the cross - of that Jesus Christ is the Bread of Life, the Fount of Living Water, Grace, and who has given you Life with His Death, and you can always eat and drink of Him in order to live the life of the just and have eternal Life.

God does not prohibit Adam from eating of the fruits from the Tree of Life; however, he forbids from eating those useless ones from the Tree of Knowledge. Because an excess of knowledge would have awoken pride in man, who would then have believed himself to be equal to God on account of his newly acquired knowledge. And he would have foolishly believed himself capable of being able to possess it without danger, with the consequent rising of an abusive right of self-judgment of his own actions and of acting, consequently, by trampling on every duty of filial obedience.
towards His Creator - given that, at this point, he was similar to Him in knowledge - His Creator who had lovingly showed him right and wrong, directly or by infused grace and knowledge."

The Measure of God is Always Just
MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"The measure of God is always just. He who wants more of what God has given to him is concupiscent, imprudent, and irreverent. He offends love. He who takes abusively is a thief and a violent [man]. He offends love. He who wants to act independently in every respect to the supernatural Law is a rebel. He offends love.

In the presence of the divine command, the Progenitors had to obey without asking the 'why' that are always the undoing of love, faith, and hope. When God orders or acts, one must obey and do His will without asking why He orders or acts in that way: Every action of His is good, even if it does not seem so to the being who is limited in his knowledge.

Why should they not have gone to that tree, gathered those fruits and have eaten of those fruits? There is no use in knowing. Obeying is useful, nothing else: And being happy with having received much. Obedience is love and respect, and it is the measure of love and respect. The more one loves and venerates a person, the more one obeys him/her.

Here now, being the One ordered by God - the Infinitely Great, the Good, the generous Benefactor of man - man, out of respect and gratitude, should have given to God not ‘a lot’ of love, but ‘all’ the adoring love which he was capable of giving, and therefore all the obedience, without analyzing the reason of the divine prohibition.

The discussions presuppose self-judgment and criticism to the order or other peoples’ actions. Judging is a difficult thing and seldom is the judgment just; but never is it just when one judges a divine order useless, wrong, or unjust.

Man had to obey. The test of this ability of his, which is the measure of love and respect, was in the way in which he would have or would not have known how to obey.”

The Means
MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

"The means: the tree and the Apple. Two small, insignificant things if you compare them to the abundance that God had granted to man.

And what? He had given Himself, God, and He prohibited the admiring of a fruit? And what? He had given a natural and supernatural life to the dust, He had infused His breath into man, and He prohibited the picking of a fruit? And what? He had made man the king of all the creatures and considered him not as His servant but a son, and He prohibited him from eating a fruit?

To one who does not know how to wisely meditate, this episode can seem to be like him on explainable punctiliousness (Strictly attentive to minute details of form in action or conduct,), similar to a whim of a benefactor who, having covered a beggar with riches, then prohibits him from picking up a little rock deposited in the dust. However, it isn’t like this.

The Apple was not only through reality. It was also the symbol: The symbol of the divine right and of human duty.

Even when God calls and extraordinarily benefits, the beneficiaries must always remember that He is God and that man must never prevaricate, even if he feels
extraordinarily loved. And yet, this is the test that only a few elect know how to surmount. They want more of what they have already received and they go to gather what was not given. And that is how they find the snake and his poisonous fruits.

Beware, oh elect ones of God! Always remember that in your garden, so full of the gifts of God, there is always the tree of trial, and always looking to entwine itself around it is the Adversary of God and yours, in order to snatch an instrument from God and seduce you to pride in cupidity, to rebellion. Do not violate the right of God. Do not trample on the law of your duty, never.

Many seem to be the instruments of God, the ‘voices,’ too many according to some. I say to you all, to the theologians and to the faithful, that a hundred times a hundred more would there be if all those whom God calls to a special ministry knew how not to gather that which God has not given, so as to have more still.

All of the faithful had in the Decalogue, the Tree of Knowledge of good and evil, the test of faith, love, and obedience. For the ‘voices’ and the extraordinary instruments, more than ever, is that tree alluring and a snare of Satan. Because the greater the donation, the easier it is for pride and concupiscence to rise, the presumption of being sure of saving oneself in any case. Instead, I tell you that the more one has received, the more it is one’s duty to be perfect so as not to have a greater condemnation which will not be given to the one who, having received only a little, has the extenuating circumstances of having known only a little.

I anticipate a question. Did that tree then bear good fruits and bad fruits? It bore fruits no different from those of any other plant. However, it was the plant of good and evil, it became so according to the behavior of man, not so much as towards the plant as towards the divine order. To obey is good. To disobey is bad.”

### The Tree of Knowledge - good and evil

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

“God knew that Satan would have gone to that tree to tempt. God knows everything. The wicked fruit was the word of Satan tasted by Eve. The danger of drawing near to the plant was in the disobedience. To the pure knowledge which God had given, Satan inoculated his impure malice that soon fermented even in the flesh. However, Satan first corrupted the spirit, making it a rebel, and then made the intellect astute.

How well did they know, afterwards, the knowledge of good and evil! Because everything, even the new sight for which they then knew to be naked alerted them to the loss of Grace that had made them blessed in their intelligent innocence up to that hour, and therefore, of the loss of supernatural life.

Naked! Not so much for the garments as for the gifts of God. Poor! For having wanted to be like God. Dead! For having feared of dying with their species if they hadn’t acted directly.

They committed the first act against love with pride, disobedience, diffidence, doubt, rebellion, spiritual concupiscence and lastly, with carnal concupiscence. I say, lastly. Some believe that carnal concupiscence was instead the first act. No. God is order in all things.

Even in the offences towards the divine law, man sinned first against God by wanting to be similar to God: ‘god’ in the knowledge of Good and Evil and in the absolute and thus illicit freedom to act as he pleased and wished against all advice and
prohibition of God; *then against love*, by loving himself disordinately, by denying God the reverential love that He is due, by placing the I in God’s place, and by hating his future neighbor: his own offspring to whom he brought about the inheritance of sin and condemnation; and *lastly, against his dignity as the regal creature* who had had the gift of perfect dominion over the senses.

The sensual sin could not have occurred for as long as the state of Grace endured and the other consequent states. *There could have been temptation but not the consummation of the sensual sin for as long as innocence lasted, and therefore, the dominion of reason over the senses.*

Good and Evil - Law of Eternity

God the Father is speaking: “I also concede to evil but it is never My will, because evil contradicts My eternal law, it is a wrongly directed will which withdraws from Me and strives towards something entirely ungodly, a condition which completely opposes the original state of My created being. However, My created being has to have the option of aspiring towards good and evil, thus good and evil have to exist if the being wants to remain perfect or to become it of its own free will. Everything which contradicts My law of eternity is evil, everything which remains within My eternal order is good; but the fact that the being can sense or develop a desire towards either direction within itself is My will, and that it can feel every longing in its heart is My work. My wisdom and My love are the reasons why I have created the being in this way because I want to guide it towards eternal bliss and this necessitates being able to voluntarily aspire towards good. In order to develop strength it has to meet with resistance, in order to be good the human being also needs to have the option to be evil and to become or remain good of his own accord, or his perfection would be a mere act of My love but would lack the highest degree for which free will is indispensable which, however, first has to be tested.

Evil can never be called good and can never be said to originate from Me although I also allow room for evil, although I concede to it. Evil thoughts, evil talk and evil actions are outside of My divine order. But if My will prevented the human being from thinking, talking and doing evil he would not be a free, independent and self-determining living creation but a mere product of My willpower which could never assert its claim to become perfect. But I want to shape perfect living beings for Myself which I can enlighten with My strength of love and, by doing so, make them extremely happy. And for this purpose they need to have passed the test of will to aspire, of their own accord, of their own free will, towards the highest degree of perfection. This also requires the option of descending into a state of imperfection, the furthest distance from Me. My will is and remains eternally good, and anything which voluntarily submits to My will shall also be and remain good; anything which acts contrary to My will thus prefers evil and I will not prevent it, although it deprives itself of its own perfection, it does not pass its test of will. And even if it has descended into the deepest abyss it inevitably has to ascend again of its own free will, although it needs an infinitely long time to once again achieve a degree of perfection which would allow My proximity. And precisely for that reason its will has to be given some leeway in order that the eternal divine order can be counteracted, but I will never approve of it nor shall it ever be My will. Thus good and evil will continue until every spirit has been redeemed, that is, until everything which has emerged from Me has passed its *test of will to voluntarily aspire towards good*, the Divine, until it has found Me of its own free will and as a most perfected being will then be able to enjoy all delights of eternal bliss.”
God the Father Speaks about Adam and Lucifer's Test

BD No. 5802 of 11/09/1953 taken from book 63

God the Father is speaking: “Anyone who strives to arrive at the truth leaves all darkness behind him, he will have an explanation for everything, he will know the correlation between all things, he will recognize that his path leads upwards, that he has found the connection with God, that he cannot err anymore because God Himself conveys the truth to him. But striving for the truth means that it first has to be sincerely desired, and then the knowledge he receives, be it from outside or from within in the form of thoughts, has to be accepted with an open heart. For the heart will be willing to either accept or reject truth and error and thus influence the person accordingly.

Truth has to be aspired to in so far as that the human being’s will has to be actively involved, it cannot simply be given to a completely passive person who does not want it himself and who will not take the necessary steps in order to gain it. For then he will remain in spiritual darkness and not achieve progress. Truth, however, is the ascending path. Truth is the spiritual knowledge conveyed to people by God Himself which tries to find a recipient in every human being, which can be acquired by every person’s will since it can be imparted to people in many different ways, but it always has to be desired first. But anyone who has gained the truth no longer lives in darkness, everything is crystal clear to him, he no longer doubts, for whatever is still unclear will be explained to him when he asks for it providing he turns to the source of truth, providing he submits his doubts and questions to God Himself and then awaits God’s answer through his heart. The desire for truth, the mental contact with God and his inward listening also ensures him a clear and truthful answer. You humans should know that no unsolved questions need to exist for you providing you just want an explanation and present every question to the One Who is truth Himself and Who also wants to impart it to His children in order to enlighten them, in order to illuminate their path of ascent:

The body of the first-created human being was also an act of creation by My love. I then had to create an external shell for the fallen spirit once it had worked its way up from the abyss to a point where it was able to undertake its final test of will in complete freedom. I had to create forms for all My once created original spirits whose previously dissolved substances had come together again after an infinitely long period of time and who, therefore, as self-aware beings once more, were waiting for permission to become active. Creating the external form of such an original spirit was no different than the countless many works of creation which had previously arisen, it was My externalized thought which, through My will, appeared before Me already completed. But giving life to this created form was only possible by permeating it with My strength of love.

The originally created spirit, however, was My emanated strength of love. Hence it only needed to take possession of the external form in order to turn it into a living being. The spirit was close to its perfection, and yet far from it because it lacked final realization, because the sin with which it was burdened had completely deprived it of all knowledge and in this state it needed instruction and commandments, thus it was to gradually mature into realization by complying with these commandments. A great spiritual battle had taken place earlier because a large number of fallen original spirits wanted to occupy My first created form (Pre-Adamites). For they knew that they could only gain access to Me again in the body of a human being, that they would only be able to gain unimaginable abundance of strength and light through a test of life in which they
were to prove how they would utilize the strength at their disposal. But I Myself chose
which original spirit should take abode in the first human being. For only I knew whose
opposition to Me had weakened such that the final test of earthly life could be imposed
on him; I knew whose will could have resisted My adversary’s power. Therefore I chose
an original spirit which had once taken a leading position during the spirits’ apostasy,
which was indeed more heavily burdened by sin but which My love very much
endeavored to regain, for countless beings would likewise have followed it and the
redemption would have progressed far more rapidly. I have known, in fact, since eternity
that this original spirit would fail. Nevertheless, due to its changed will during the
preliminary stages it was the strongest spirit, thus it was also entitled to be the first to
receive the state of free will, and which therefore offered the best prospects of passing
the test of will.

The form of the first human being was, before this original spirit occupied it, also
visible to Lucifer, who certainly knew that this form was the gate from the kingdom of
darkness, from his realm, into My kingdom, into the kingdom of light. He also knew that,
if he didn’t want to lose his followers, he had to use every means to wrest the souls
back from Me during the human being’s approved probationary period, in order to turn
the test to his advantage.

My created form (Pre-Adamites) was still without life (a soul) when Lucifer seized
it in order to test it by animating it with his spirit, yet his untamed spirit burst the form,
and he was sure that every spirit banished into this form would burst it and that there
would never be any danger of loss for him.

I allowed this test to happen and then proved to him that his assumption was
wrong. For due to its long process of development the very spirit which was to embody
itself in the human being no longer shared Lucifer’s will, it willingly occupied the final
external form (Adam), and since this original spirit was close to its original state it did
not consider the external form a shackle to prevent the fall into sin. For it was master
over all of creation, it could rule like a lord over the earth which was at its disposal with
every creation. It had abundant might and strength, only subordinate to My might, which
only gave it an easy commandment, the obedience to which would have broken any
constraint imposed on it.

And when Lucifer realized this he thought about ways to stop the human being
from obeying this commandment, and since he knew the first human being’s body he
tried to make him dislike it by portraying it as a shackle, by making freedom from it
dependent on transgressing this commandment, and thus incited the original spirit to
inwardly revolt against Me again for not having given it complete freedom. It was a
deliberate deception which the first human being could have resisted by merely adhering
to My simple commandment, if he had been satisfied with his possession of might and
strength which made him truly happy until My adversary aroused an impure desire in
him, to be greater than the One, Who was a perceptible power above him, of Whom he
knew and Whose commandment he nevertheless disregarded.

The first human being’s fall into sin was therefore a repetition of the original
spirit’s first fall. It followed Lucifer and drew innumerable beings into the abyss with him,
just as all descendants of the first human being were afterwards also placed into the
weak state of sinful people until Jesus Christ came to their rescue, until Jesus Christ
acquired the strength of will on behalf of humanity through His crucifixion, until Jesus
Christ opposed Lucifer’s temptations with His strong will and defeated him.

Nothing could have induced the first-created being, Lucifer, to cover the earthly
progress as a human being as long as he still considered himself lord of the spiritual
world which had deserted Me with him, for he himself did not take the course through
matter, through creation, before the creation of the first human being. As a spiritually tangible spirit he was volitionally still My strongest opponent, he deemed himself lord over the creation which sheltered the spiritual substance that belonged to him, although he himself had no influence over it. His inner resistance was still unbroken, and he would never ever have put up with any coercion, he would never voluntarily have entered a form created by My will, because he hated all forms for the spiritual substances, all works of creation, and sought to destroy them. However, his power over the works of creation had been taken away from him, but then he was granted influence over the soul when this was to make its free decision again for Me or for him. He also knew that he was unable to destroy a form himself once it was inhabited by spiritual beings, and for this reason he inspected the first human being's form in advance, for his goal was to induce the original spirit which was to occupy it to destroy its own external form, because he believed that he would thereby provide it with the freedom which I had taken away from the spirits due to the works of creation. He wanted to stop Me from completing the plan of Salvation.

The opposition between Myself and him existed ever since his apostasy and will never be given up by him until he realizes that he is completely powerless, and in profound weakness and humility appeals to Me to give him strength. For this reason it would have been impossible to give him the first human body as an abode. For his will did not aim for ascent, whereas the past resistance to Me by the spiritual essence, having passed through creation in the state of compulsion, had already diminished and it was merely to prove just once more that it had abandoned its opposition to Me and My strength of love. And Lucifer knew how far this spiritual essence had already distanced itself from him, and he also knew that there now was a risk of losing it entirely. And since the original spirit embodied in the first human being had once been his staunch supporter he was particularly interested to bring it to fall. But he also knew of its present desire to become free from every physical restraint.

And then I placed a second being at this original spirit's side, which simultaneously was to support but also help him with the test of his will. Each one could have supported the other to arrive at the final objective; I did not place the responsibility on one shoulder alone. I gave the commandment to both, and both were able to attain the goal together. And this second being was used by Lucifer, who recognized its weak will and thereby hoped to achieve his objective. The test of will had to be demanded from the first human couple, and in support of this test adverse forces also had to be active, for Lucifer fought for his living creations too, which he did not want to surrender even though they belonged to Me as well. His plan succeeded, nevertheless, it did not stop Me from giving countless beings time and again the opportunity to take on a new form in the human beings of this earth and thus to achieve an ever higher degree of maturity even if, due to the fall of the first human couple, the gate to the kingdom of light remained closed until the arrival of Jesus Christ.

The first sin had delayed but not cancelled the spiritual beings' redemption, for what the first human being had failed to do was achieved by the human being Jesus. He was stronger than My adversary for He availed Himself of My strength. He was and stayed in contact with Me through love and voluntarily accomplished what the first human beings did not fulfill as a commandment. He completely subordinated Himself to My will and proved His devotion to Me through His suffering and death on the cross. He knew of the original sin and the first human beings' repeated guilt, and in order to cancel this guilt, in order to redeem humankind, He offered to bring Me a sacrifice, which was satisfactory to Me, a sacrifice, which opened the gate to the spiritual kingdom again, the
path to Me, and now enables all My living beings who acknowledge Him as Son of God and Redeemer of the world to become blissfully happy once more.”

**Punishment**

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162

“Punishment, not inordinate but just. In order to understand it, one needs to consider the perfection of Adam and Eve. By considering that height, one can measure the greatness of the fall into the abyss.

If some of you were to be taken by God and placed in a new Eden, leaving you who you are though giving you the same commands He had given to Adam, and you were to disobey like Adam, do you believe that God would condemn you with the same severity with which He condemned Adam? No. God is just. He knows what tremendous inheritance is within you.

The consequences of original sin have been repaired by Christ, in so far as He is Grace. But the weakness of the lesion in the original perfection remains. And this weakness is constituted by foments similar to infective germs which have remained latent in man, but that are always ready to enter in strength and overpower the creature. They are even in the holier of saints. *And sanctity, after all, is none other than the fruit of the struggle and the continual victory which the soul and the reasoning of the just one sustain and suffer through the assault of the foments in order to remain faithful to the Love.*

Now God, who is infinitely, just, would not be inexorable with one of you as He was with Adam: because He would consider your weaknesses.

With Adam He was, being that Adam was endowed with all that could have made him the victor, and easily a victor, against temptation. Hence the punishment: that punishment in which one sees that if the precarious man did not respect the limit placed by God, God respected the limits that He placed towards man.

*God did not violate the free will of man,* whereas man violated the rights of God. Neither before nor after the sin did God violate man’s freedom to act. He subjected him to a test. Being God, He did not ignore that man would not have overcome it. However, it was just that He subject him to it in order to confirm him in grace like He had, for the same end, submitted the angels to the test and confirmed in grace those amongst them who had won the test. And, submitting him to the test, He left him free to act with respect to it.

However, all these cases would have been injustices towards the angels who had been submitted to the test, who did not have their powers of the will bound, who had not been forgiven in advance, and who did not have aroused in their beings, and by God Himself, any impulse of contrition or attrition capable of arousing divine forgiveness. It is true that the angels were favored more than men in not sinning because of the gifts of
grace and those of their nature (spirits without a body, and therefore, without senses) and for being thus free from internal pressures of sense and from external pressures (the Serpent), and above all, through the knowledge of God; and in spite of this, they sinned without extenuating circumstances due to ignorance and the stimulus of the senses but through pure malice and sacrilegious will, However, there was none of what was said before: Neither from God nor from man.

God respected the human will. Man persevered in his state of revolt towards His divine Benefactor. He proudly left Eden after having lied – because by now his joining with Falsehood had occurred – and after having cited poor excuses for his sin while having made himself a belt of leaves, he testified that not because they were naked and were ashamed of appearing so before God, because they were guilty.

Fear, yes; repentance, no. Hence God, after having expelled them from Eden ‘placed two cherubim’s on the threshold of the same’ so that the two prevaricators would not fraudulently re-enter in order to loot the fruits of the tree of life, rendering nil a part of the just punishment and defrauding God once again of His right: that of giving and taking life after having kept it healthy, happy and long-lived with salutary fruits of the tree of life.

Therefore: a just punishment. The privation of how much man had spontaneously scorned Grace, integrity, immortality, immunity and knowledge. And hence, the loss of the paternal love of God, of His mighty help; and hence, the weakness of the wounded soul, the fever of the awakened flesh, reason, delirious and overwhelming; and hence, the fear of God and the Loss of Eden where life was without hardship and sorrow; and hence, hardship, death, the subjection of woman to man, the animosity between man and man, amongst the children of a womb, crime, abuse, all the evils that torment humanity, fear of death and judgment, the torment of having provoked sorrow and of transmitting it to those most loved, in one with life.”

**Catholic Teaching: Original Sin**

Ref: CCC Catechism of the Catholic Church

416-420 By his sin Adam, as the first man, lost the original holiness and justice he had received from God, not only for himself but for all human beings.

Adam and Eve transmitted to their descendants human nature wounded by their own first sin and hence deprived of original holiness and justice; this deprivation is called “original sin”

As a result of original sin, human nature is weakened in its powers; subject to ignorance, suffering, and the domination of death; and inclined to sin (This inclination is called “concupiscence.”)

“We therefore hold, with the Council of Trent, that original sin is transmitted with human nature, by propagation, not by imitation and that it is... proper to each” (Paul VI,CPG 16).

The victory that Christ won over sin given us greater blessings than those which sin had taken from us: “where sin increased, grace abounded all the more” (Rom 5:20)

**The Consequences of Adam’s Sin for Humanity**

Ref: CCC Catechism Catholic Church

402 All men are implicated in Adam’s sin, as St. Paul affirms: "By one man’s disobedience many (that is, all men) were made sinners": "sin came into the world through one man and death through sin, and so death spread to all men because all men sinned."289 The Apostle contrasts the universality of sin and death with the universality
of salvation in Christ. "Then as one man's trespass led to condemnation for all men, so one man's act of righteousness leads to acquittal and life for all men."290

403 Following St. Paul, the Church has always taught that the overwhelming misery which oppresses men and their inclination towards evil and death cannot be understood apart from their connection with Adam’s sin and the fact that he has transmitted to us a sin with which we are all born afflicted, a sin which is the "death of the soul".291 Because of this certainty of faith, the Church baptizes for the remission of sins even tiny infants who have not committed personal sin.292

404 How did the sin of Adam become the sin of all his descendants? The whole human race is in Adam "as one body of one man".293 By this "unity of the human race" all men are implicated in Adam’s sin, as all are implicated in Christ’s justice. Still, the transmission of original sin is a mystery that we cannot fully understand. But we do know by Revelation that Adam had received original holiness and justice not for himself alone, but for all human nature. By yielding to the tempter, Adam and Eve committed a personal sin, but this sin affected the human nature that they would then transmit in a fallen state.294 It is a sin which will be transmitted by propagation to all mankind, that is, by the transmission of a human nature deprived of original holiness and justice. and that is why original sin is called "sin" only in an analogical sense: it is a sin "contracted" and not "committed" - a state and not an act.

God the Father speaks about the first Original Sin

God the Father is speaking: “Knowledge of the original sin is necessary in order to understand the act of Salvation, in order to acknowledge Jesus Christ as the 'Redeemer.'

You humans lack the knowledge about the first original sin, consequently you also consider Jesus Christ's act of Salvation just an atonement for your human guilt, indeed, you even deny His 'act of Salvation' because, you believe, that everyone has to pay for their guilt down to the last coin. This opinion would be understandable if it only concerned the sin you burdened yourselves with as human beings, but it concerns the immense first original sin, the spirits' apostasy from Me, a sin, which you would never be able to atone for, which thus cannot ever be denied, which is the cause of the whole of creation and the reason for My human manifestation in Jesus.

For the apostasy from Me was caused by the fact that the created beings were unable to see Me, and therefore I made Myself visible in Jesus. Anyone who merely acknowledges the past original sin by the first human beings will find it incredulous that these sins necessitated a 'Redeemer', he will always maintain that humanity could not be punished for a sin it had not committed. And therefore even the sins committed by a person as such are indeed an offence against My love, but they do not recognize them in their state of darkness, which is the consequence of the immense first original sin. But this sin explains everything, and as long as people do not know about this event of the spirits’ apostasy they will find it difficult to believe in the 'divine Redeemer', Who died on the cross in utmost pain and torment for the sake of this
immense sin, which He had taken upon Himself in order to offer this sacrifice of atonement to Me. Consequently, every teaching which denies the divine Redeemer, which thus renounces the principle of Salvation, will have to be rejected as a misguided teaching, even if His work as an advocate of the divine teaching of love is emphasized. It concerns the redemption of the first original sin, which only I Myself could accomplish in the man Jesus, and therefore My human manifestation in Him will be comprehensively explained to you, for I Myself Am a Being which cannot be seen by any of My living creations without their ceasing to exist.

If I thus wanted you to be able to conceive Me visibly it had to take place in the form of a being like yourselves Which, for you, was the human being Jesus. Consequently, it is first of all necessary to know about the event of the beings’ apostasy from Me in order to then understand the process of creation of the visible world. Then you will also be able to understand the everlasting battle between light and darkness and the appearance of a Saviour for humanity in Jesus Christ, of a non-fallen original spirit, in Whom I embodied Myself, because you had no concept at all of the 'all-creative strength'. And for this reason you can and have to acknowledge a Redeemer, Who died on the cross on behalf of everyone and Who also prayed on behalf of you humans for the remission of your sins. But it cannot be granted to you instantly, rather, you have to apply to Him yourselves because the fall happened voluntarily and thus the return to Him will also have to take place in free will. The fact that a person who seriously strives for perfection will, apart from the original sin, also be forgiven for his sins as a human being need not be doubted, hence all guilt will be forgiven and thus forgiveness is ensured. But since Jesus is only rarely recognized as Redeemer by those who accept the misguided teaching which portrays Him as a human being and ascended master and who do not want to acknowledge My human manifestation in Him, they do not ask Him for forgiveness of all their sins either. For there is only One Who can release them from their guilt, only One has the power to cancel all sins, and that is Jesus, in Whom I Myself became a human being."

The fall into the Depth of Darkness

God the Father is speaking: “In recognition of the truth is the whole salvation of the being. Once it was standing in the light, in the highest knowledge, and therefore it was also blessed in excess. For the being recognized My love, wisdom and power, it knew, that it was created by Me, and it also knew its purpose. It was constantly illuminated by My strength of love, there was nothing dark, nothing unknown for this being, and there was nothing, that the being limited in his will and his strength. It was an unspeakably blissful state, a being in most luminous spheres, who, filled with My thoughts could be recognizable to the beings. It was a constant overflowing of My original being into all these beings created by Me, which also produced unlimited salvation in these beings. But the state of the beings changed. What streamed to them abundantly, they refused in free will, when the first created being misused its free will and turned it against Me. Indeed that first being was also in highest knowledge, because it was created as My image, it was My equal in its nature, except that it was not from eternity, but it was created by Me, so My will and My urge of love let it arise at first. And this being envied My priority to be of eternity,
while itself had a beginning. And since it was not able to watch Me, it set itself up as master of all created beings, which also accepted it in large part as their Lord, in spite of brightest knowledge. And it lost all qualities, which (still) characterize it as a divine being, because it abused the characteristic of divinity, the free will, and because it was completely without any love. It sank into the darkness. And its condition was unblessed, it was without light and strength, and it remained in this unfortunate condition for eternities. But the will of the first created being and also of its following was not able to drive Me out, the eternal truth, the light of eternity. It was free will to refuse its recognition of Me, it could turn away from Me, but it could not destroy Me, blot Me out, or let Me pass away. I was and remained the power, that has control of all and to whom also the fallen spirits must be subordinated, if this is My will. But I let him have the freedom, I let the beings fall, where they self-willed, to the depth. But I too do not refuse the being, if it wants to rise out of the depth again, if it makes the way to Me again and wants to receive strength and light again from Me, I help it to make use of all means. And because they lack any cognition, because they are completely without any light and knowledge, I give it also the possibility once again, to obtain this light. I guide the beings into the state again after an endlessly long way of development, which they are able to recognize, if they are willing. And this is in the stage as man, where I send the truth to the being, to put it back into a state of bliss again, but where the free will has to choose again. What it once had, it must be acquired only now, but this will for truth is evaluated very highly, and then the being reaches a level of light which still exceeds the former level of light because it has not only become My creature now, but My child, who had the freedom to remain in the depth, but still strove for the height on its own initiative and is unspeakably blessed now because it stands in the light of truth again, because any darkness has left it, because all divine features fulfill the being in full measure and because it can not be pushed away from Me any more through My opponent, that first created being whose guilt is far greater because it separated itself from Me.”

**Why do we have to do Penance for Adam's Sin?**

BD No. 9006 of 07/02/1965 taken from book 94

God the Father is speaking: “All your questions will come to nothing as soon as you are offered the pure truth, for this is so easy to understand as long as it is offered to you in the right way. You know that the apostasy from Me took place in a state of brightest realization. Consequently, all beings were equally responsible for falling away from Me, they could not have been forced by the adversary's will to revolt against Me, instead the 'rejection of My strength of love' was every being's own affair. Free will made them become sinful which, at the time of the apostasy, had not been subject to My adversary, because they had the right of self-determination, it was still able to make a free decision and thus consciously chose the adversary. But now the latter had control over his followers, and this control was taken away from him by Me by letting Creation arise in order to induce the strength which, through the apostasy, had become incapable of any kind of activity, to become active again in different ways. Thus, the adversary gained nothing from his followers and was only allowed to exercise his power again once the being had regained it self-awareness in the stage as a human being. And I had to leave him this right, on account of which he was then able to tempt these beings. And so he did with all manner of cunning and trickery, he understood how to deprive the first human being of his faith in My Word again which promised them eternal life if they followed My easy commandment. In this human being, Adam, an extremely strong spirit was embodied, whose fall was easily achieved yet again by the adversary. So was it not obvious that no spirit would have been able to resist him who became subject to the
same artful temptations by My adversary? It is not about the fact that the descendants had to do penance for the first human beings' sin, but it is about the fact that I, had the first human being resisted these temptations for love of Me, would, for the sake of compassion, have done the same as Jesus, the human being, did at a later time: that He accomplished the act of atonement for the sake of love, that I would have been satisfied with the strength of resistance by the one person who handed himself over to Me and should have enabled My illumination again.

And for his will of love I would have written the guilt off, and the path across earth as a human being would merely have served everyone to kindle the love for Me into brightest fire. Instead, My adversary had proved his power over the first human beings and thus did not surrender the right to subsequently use his artful temptations on every person, which I cannot deny him due to the fact that the beings once voluntarily followed him into the abyss. Hence you cannot say that these people will now have to do penance for the sins of their ancestors but it has always been up to each person to prove himself during the temptations and he will also receive the strength from Me to do so, for I bless this determination and will never abandon such a person to My adversary. However, the first people could have helped their descendants to have an easier life on earth, but since they failed, it was not possible to protect the latter from the adversary's temptations, unless they appealed to Me for My protection and then their earthly path was indeed an easier one, which was also the case with those original spirits which were receptive to instructions from the world of light and over whom My adversary no longer had full control. Therefore, the fact that those people always had an easier earthly path, that they did not fall prey to My opponent's enticements, that he did not keep full authority over them, is a sign that I have helped and always will help every soul which starts earthly life less burdened and whose will is already devoted to Me, that I therefore do not indiscriminately give grace and strength to souls to accomplish their path of return. However, time and again I have to mention that the first human beings made the whole path of return more difficult because of their failure, it would have been far easier to navigate had the strongest, once fallen spirit resisted and followed My easy commandment, had he believed more in My Words which promised him eternal life, and through his resistance had broken the power, which then would have made it impossible for the adversary to use it on his followers, for this victory would have affected all fallen spiritual beings.”

**Question: What would have happened had Adam not failed?**

God the Father is speaking: “I want you to ask questions so that I can instruct you truthfully. For these questions, too, are placed by Me into your heart because I know what you still need, and I want to give you enlightenment. You humans will find it impossible to understand all spiritual correlations down to the last detail as long as you are not yet so perfected that I can completely permeate you with the light of My love which then will also guarantee you the brightest knowledge. Yet I can already inform you beforehand in relation to your intellectual capacity so that you need not fall prey to wrong thoughts and become receptive to misguided teachings: The guilt of the beings' which had fallen away from Me was immeasurably huge. However, it primarily consisted of the fact that they no longer wanted to acknowledge Me despite their state of light which clearly revealed their former origin to them. They sinned against Me in spite of better knowledge. Nevertheless, My love for them was so great that I made their return to Me dependent on their full acknowledgement of Myself and the admission of their
guilt of having sinned against Me as their God and Father. But it always has to be emphasized that due to their apostasy My adversary had taken possession of the beings and that they were too weak to release themselves from his power. Only love could give them the strength to free themselves from him. Love was the only means which rendered the adversary powerless, only love could conquer him. Yet the beings had voluntarily renounced love, they repelled My illumination of love and thereby were completely at My adversary’s mercy. I, however, gave the first human beings the opportunity to accept love from Me again. I endowed them with every gift and ability, and they had dominion over the whole earth. I offered them an infinite measure of love which they merely needed to reciprocate by fulfilling My not too difficult commandment. By reciprocating My love they, in turn, would have gained a measure of strength with which they could easily have resisted My adversary and released themselves from his bondage, and by fulfilling My will they would also have confessed their past sin, they would have entered into My will again and every being, living on earth as a human being after them, would have done the same.

And thus humanity repentantly would have returned to Me within a short time, for Adam’s inherent strength as a result of his right kind of love would have transferred itself onto all his descendants, the complete spiritualization of the once fallen beings would have proceeded swiftly, precisely because the first human beings would have recognized their immense original guilt and through heartfelt love for Me would soon have removed it. For a sin against love, a sin against Me Myself, could only be cancelled through love again. And truly, what I bestowed upon the first human beings when they took possession of the earth should have ignited their love into the brightest blaze. For I only demanded ‘love’ as an atonement, which was then, because Adam and the human generation had failed, shown to Me by the man Jesus to such an extent that he thereby redeemed the immense guilt. Only love was able to atone for this guilt. And the first human beings truly could have mustered love, for their surrounding creation offered them incomparable glories which, after the agonizing state of constraint, made them blissfully happy and this beatitude could also have triggered a divine love within themselves, a love which only ever had to give thanks and praise and could have inspired their deeply felt devotion for Me.

Yet for the sake of testing their will, which previously had been misused, I also had to grant My adversary the right to fight for his followers during their earthly life. And in order to reveal to the first human beings the great danger of a repeated offence against Me I only gave them an easy commandment which they were able to fulfill and had to fulfill if their love for Me was going to be able to reach this said degree which ensured their complete devotion to Me, which totally would have deprived the adversary of his power. He, too, tried everything to bring the first human beings to fall, and thus he opposed My easy commandment with a promise which, however, because he was My adversary, consisted of a lie and he impelled the human beings into the wrong kind of love. He promised them that they would be ‘like God’ if they transgressed My commandment, he portrayed Me as a liar, since I had announced their death if they disobeyed My commandment. And people believed him, not Me. And this was the repeated grave sin which also placed all descendants into a state of weakness so that they could no longer liberate themselves from the adversary on their own and which subsequently necessitated Jesus Christ’s act of Salvation, if people were to one day be delivered from utmost adversity.

Time after time I emphasize that only love was able to atone this immense guilt, that Adam would indeed have been able to demonstrate this love to Me but that due to his fall and after his fall no being was capable anymore to muster the kind of love which
would guarantee the redemption of the immense original sin, and that the loving act of redemption therefore had to be accomplished by Me Myself, Who manifested Himself in the human being Jesus.

Thus the human being Jesus had an abundance of divine love, and in His love He suffered the sacrificial death on the cross, because no human being would have been able to return to Me without this act of Salvation, because My adversary will not release any soul and on its own because it is too weak to liberate itself from him. And, because I have known since eternity that the first human being would fail, Jesus God’s only begotten Son, offered Himself for this act of Salvation, and He accomplished it because His love for Me and for all wretched souls was beyond measure.”

The World’s Rejection of God’s Grace
MV Notebook 1943: 63

Jesus is speaking: “When God created the first man, in addition to the life of matter, until then inanimate, He infused into him the life of the spirit as well. He could not otherwise have said that He had made you in his image and likeness.

None of you can image how perfect the first creature was. Only We, in the eternal present, which is our eternity, can see the perfection of the regal work of our creative Intelligence. The seed of Adam, if Adam had been able to remain a king as We had made him, with power over all things and depending on God alone—the dependence of a most beloved son—would have been a seed of perpetual perfection. But there was a defeated one who was watching to take revenge.

You, Maria, who say that from your heart thoughts of forgiveness could not emerge spontaneously because your human nature leads you to the spirit of vengeance and only out of regard for Me are you able to forgive—have you ever considered that it was the spirit of revenge that ruined you, the children of Adam, and sent Me, the Son of God, to the cross?

Lucifer—and He was the most beautiful of my beautiful creatures—from the abyss into which he had fallen, eternally ugly after the blasphemous revolt against his Creator, was thirsty for revenge. To the first sin, conceit, he thus added an endless series of crimes, avenging himself for ages and ages. And the first act of vengeance was upon my creatures, Adam and Eve. On the perfection of my creation his poisoned tooth left the mark of its bestiality, communicating to you his very own lust for lasciviousness, vengeance, and haughtiness. And since then your spirit has been dueling in you against the poisons of the hellish bite.

On some very rare occasions the spirit wins out over flesh and blood and gives earth and Heaven a new saint. Sometimes the spirit lives with difficulty, with slumps of lethargy in which it is as if dead and you live and act as creatures devoid of light, of my Light. At other times it is literally killed by the creature, who voluntarily forfeits the throne of a child of God and becomes worse than a beast—turning into a demon, the child of a demon.

In truth I tell you that over two thirds of the human race belongs to this category, which lives under the sign of the Beast. For this category I died in vain.

The law of those marked by the Beast is antithetical to my Law. In the former, the flesh dominates and generates works of flesh. In the latter, the spirit dominates and generates works of spirit. When the spirit dominates, the kingdom of God is there. When the flesh dominates, the kingdom of Satan is there.

The infinite Mercy animating the Triad has given your spirit all the aid to remain the ruler. It has given the sacrament removing the sign of the Beast on your flesh as children of Adam and impressing my Sign. It has given my Word of Life; it has given Me,
Master and Redeemer; it has given my Blood in the Eucharist and on the Cross; it has given the Paraclete: the Spirit of truth.

Whoever is able to remain in the Spirit generates works of the spirit. From the creature possessed by the Spirit there flow charity, gentleness, purity, science, and every good work joined to great humility. From the others there emerge, like hissing snakes, vices, deceptions, acts of lust, and crimes, for their heart is a nest of hellish snakes.

But where are those who are able to tend towards the life of the spirit and make themselves worthy to welcome in themselves the vital pouring of the Consoler, who comes with all his gifts, but wants a prompt spirit, desirous of Him, for his throne? No, the world does not want the Spirit, who makes you good. The world wants power at any price, wealth at any price, the satisfaction of senses at any price, all the joys of the earth at any price, and rejects and curses the Holy Spirit Trinity, but from the cave of Satan.

And this is not and shall not be forgiven. Ever! And you see that it is not forgiven. God withdraws into the height of his Heavens because man rejects his love and lives for and in the flesh. These are causes of your ruin and of our silence. From the depths there emerge the tentacles of Satan; on earth man proclaims himself to be a god and curses the true God; on high Heaven closes. And this is indeed mercy, for in closing it holds back the thunderbolt you deserve.

A new Pentecost would encounter hearts harder and fouler than a boulder that had sunk into a pool of mud. Remain, therefore, in the mud you wanted, waiting for a command, which admits no rebellion, to pull you out of it and separate the children of the spirit from the children of the flesh.”

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - A

God the Father is speaking: “You must always know that there is reason and purpose for your existence as human beings on earth. It was not the Creator’s whim that placed you into this world but spiritual events which formed the foundation of your creation, events which happened a very long time ago in the spiritual kingdom. The
beings, brought into existence by My will’s love, began to change. The law of order, in which all perfect things had to exist, was overturned. The externalized perfect beings changed themselves into the opposite; they trespassed the law of order and became imperfect. However, their nature changed of their own free will, i.e. the beings’ will rebelled against the existing order, it rebelled against Me Myself as their God and Creator, but whom they nonetheless recognized because they were enlightened. Consequently, this occurrence in the kingdom of the spirits is the reason for your existence as human beings on this earth.

For you are the fallen spirits who had parted from Me of your own free will, you are the beings who once came forth from Me in highest perfection and voluntarily changed their nature to the contrary, you are those fallen spirits. But eternities had passed between your apostasy from Me and your existence as human beings, an infinitely long time had passed wherein the fallen being had to go through a process of change, where it was exposed to incredible suffering and torment, where it gradually evolved from the abyss to the pinnacle again, always subject to My guidance because nothing that originates from Me remains eternally separated. And thus one day you will reach the level of development when you will live as human beings on earth in order to cover the last short distance to the end, in order to voluntarily achieve your return to your God and Father, from whom you once had distanced yourselves in wrongly directed will. If you look at your human existence in this light you will learn to understand how significant it is for you; you will no longer regard earthly life as an end in itself but as a means to an end, and you will live it consciously.

But it is difficult to make you believe that you are not just a whim of your God and Creator, because you have no proof of what I tell you. However, just for once you should seriously consider that you yourselves and everything around you are works of wonder which could not have originated arbitrarily, and after serious contemplation recognize a God and Creator and become convinced that there is nothing without purpose, and that your earthly life subsequently has to serve a purpose too. You should aim to make contact with the acknowledged creative power, which is always possible in thought, in prayer and by doing works of love, in unity with Me a light will soon shine for you, very soon you will perceive a glimpse of the knowledge which you once possessed in full measure.

And the light within you will shine consistently brighter the more you seek unity with Me and you will achieve the purpose of your life: you will accomplish the transformation of your own free will, the change of your nature into perfection, which was your condition from the start. You will kindle the tiny spark of love within you and turn it into a bright fire, which means as much as having entered the law of eternal order once again, where all perfect things have to exist. You will be able to end an infinitely long process of development with the result that you will have adopted My fundamental nature again, that you will have shaped yourselves into love and will once more be divine, perfect beings as you were in the beginning. This is the purpose of your earthly life, which should prompt you to live consciously so that the last stage of the infinitely long process of development will enable the entirely spiritualized being to leave this earth in perfection and enter the kingdom of light and bliss from whence it once originated.”

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - B

BD No. 7797 of 01/14/1961 taken from book 81

God the Father is speaking: “You have to know the purpose of your earthly life if your progress as a human being is to be successful and you want to reach the goal, if
you once again want to become what you had been in the beginning. You came forth from Me as supremely perfect beings, you were created in My image, endowed with all divine attributes, full of light and strength, and you were in constant contact with Me as your God and Creator, so that you were continuously able to receive light and strength from Me and thus were also indescribably happy. But your perfect nature also included free will or you could not have been called divine living creations. Consequently this free will had to open up two possibilities for you: to remain as perfect as I had created you, or to relinquish your perfection and change your nature into the opposite. Thus you were meant to prove your 'divinity' by keeping the direction of your will in line with Mine, so that it totally merged with My will although it was completely free. In that case, however, you also had to be capable of behaving to the contrary. You also had to be able to fall away from Me as a sign of free will, if this was opposed to Me and My will.

I required My 'created' living beings to make this decision of will in order to be able to grant them even greater delights. I required this decision of will of My first created being, the spirit of light, whom My greater than great love externalized and who, as My image, was intended to create and work with and beside Me in the spiritual kingdom. He had come forth from Me in supreme perfection, he was My image. Yet one thing set him apart from Me: he received his strength from Me, whereas I was the source of strength Myself. He certainly recognized this, for he possessed absolute realization. And so he was confronted by the test of will which required him to acknowledge Me as the source of strength from Which he constantly received his power. However, his will and My strength had brought countless beings into existence, all of whom were of highest perfection, endowed with all gifts and free will which demonstrated their divine nature. And the awareness of having been the creator of all these beings made this first-created spirit, the bearer of light, arrogant, and in his arrogance he rebelled against Me.

Hence he did not pass the test of will but he voluntarily caused a separation from Me which, admittedly, was impossible to happen, because all created spirits would have perished in view of the fact that they are unable to exist without Me and My flow of strength, but the bearer of light, Lucifer, deliberately turned away from Me, and therefore fell into the abyss, drawing with him a large number of beings which likewise were supposed to make a decision and deserted Me. This occurrence, which took place in the spiritual kingdom, forms the basis of the 'creation of the world', of the countless different kinds of creations which I brought into being as the 'path of return' for the spirits, in order to guide all fallen spirits back to their origin again, in order to guide them back to Me, because they can only be happy again when they are united with Me, whereas the distance from Me signifies a state of utter wretchedness. I Am now trying to make this information accessible to you humans, for you are these fallen spirits which are on the path of return to Me and are approaching the goal. You had changed your once perfect nature into the opposite and became imperfect.

Even as human beings you are still imperfect creatures, but you are able to perfect yourselves during your earthly life if only you fulfill My will, if you fit in with My law of divine order, if you live a life of love and completely change your nature into love again, as it was in the beginning. Love reunites you with Me, but you have to accept it from Me voluntarily again. You must not resist it when My love wants to illuminate you once more; you have to do your utmost in order to fulfill your task in earthly life, which solely consists of directing your will towards Me, of surrendering to Me and striving towards Me with love. Then profound knowledge will be revealed to you, the darkness within you will recede, you will achieve bright realization, understand all correlations and leave the state of wretchedness, you will enter into union with Me and in this unity find
the former bliss again which you once voluntarily relinquished but which belongs to every being that once originated from Me as a radiant image of Myself, and which it irrevocably will become again one day, because this has been and will remain the goal of My creation: to educate 'children' for Myself who can create and work with Me in supreme happiness.”

**Earthly Task: Volition - Wrong Endeavour**

BD No. 5557 of 12/15/1952 taken from book 61

God the Father is speaking: “You had to walk a difficult path before you reached the point when you were able to make the last test of will. Your soul, which had previously been dissolved into countless sparks of soul in order to endure a process of maturing in a constrained state, has assembled itself again. Once again you have attained your self-awareness and as individual beings you are about to make a free choice: to choose the Lord to whom you want to belong. This decision is the purpose and goal of your earthly life and this decision has to be made of your own free will. It cannot be made by someone on your behalf nor can it be delayed, it has to be made without fail by the end of your life, because this decision will determine your fate for eternity. Your attitude towards this task during your earthly life is therefore immensely serious, it can result in light and bliss but also in death and destruction, and you alone determine this through your will. But you are hardly bothered by it, even when you are informed of the reason for your earthly life, even when your eternal fate is described to you as either glorious or dreadful. Because you don’t believe that sooner or later you will have to be accountable for your will. However, you cannot be forced to believe it, consequently the belief is rarely found amongst humanity and people only rarely accomplish their goal of deciding for the right Lord. Yet disbelief has its price. People increasingly forget their task in life; their every consideration merely concerns the world regardless of the fact that they will soon have to leave it. They face again what they leave behind. The memory of their past course of suffering through the material forms was taken from them because they will have to make their decision with freedom of will and may not choose the right Lord out of fear. Hence there is an imminent danger that their decision will be detrimental to them, that they will devote all their senses to matter and by doing so also choose the lord of this world, to whom they will fall victim once more and return to the abyss due to their wrong decision. Because they should turn their eyes towards heaven, they should strive to ascend and turn away from the world. Then the right choice was made, then the course through the whole of creation was successful, then earthly life will result in the being’s culmination, then the soul has found the right Lord and will hasten to meet Him. Then the person has passed the test of will on earth and can discard the heavy earthly body and enter eternity as a pure spirit, and then the former long earthly progress on earth has not been in vain. The being has found its way back to its source; it has recognized the Father and surrendered itself to Him for all eternity.”

**The Guardian Angel Azariah speaks about Humanity**

MV - The Book of Azariah: 169-171

“This falling of Humanity was also Providence; this sinking into mire, to remind himself that he is mire animated by God, in itself only mire, by the will of God: spirit in mire, to sanctify him, to give him an imprint, a likeness to the Unknown, the Perfect, the Spirit, and the Eternal. This falling at the start of his day was Providence, so as to have a long expiation and be able to rise again the whole way, return to Heaven from the abyss,
go back with good will, with the help of the Savior, with the battle against Temptation, with the fortitude breaking the chains of concupiscence, with Faith, Hope, Charity, with holy Humility and holy Obedience, to come to be deservedly glorious and free with the glorious freedom of the children of God.

Too often man sterilely (failing to produce or incapable of producing offspring) curses the first sin and blasphemes against God as an imprudent Lord who has placed Man in temptation stronger than he is. But what would have happened if Man, instead of yielding to the Temptation leading him to believe that by eating the forbidden fruit he would become like God, if, without any tempter, he had come to believe himself to be God on his own, because he was sinless, without pain, without death?

Then there would not have been any redemption, because Man would have been a new Lucifer – rather, a numberless legion of Lucifer’s, for, in the course of the centuries, Mankind would have increased through all those begotten, and not one man and one woman, but all would have sinned by this sacrilegious heresy, and the whole race would have perished in an infernal punishment.

The Creator loved the most beautiful creature in creation. The one in whom the soul cast forth heavenly lights. And he wanted it in a condition to be saved still. So? Can man doubt that God could not have prevented Satan from entering Eden? No, do not think this. But believe that God’s act was good, like all his acts, and the cause of an infinitely good act, as was the Incarnation of the Word for the salvation of man.

‘We know that until now all creatures sigh and are in birth pangs.’

In fact, each one must give birth to himself, the eternal self, the one born to Heaven or Hell at the moment the first death removes the soil and breath, and the first call, before Him who cannot be deceived, takes place. From matter, like fruit from a flower - from the matter that the sacraments help to change (from a chain, a hindrance, a burden or sanctification to birth, Life as an immortal son of God, the blessed citizen inhabiting Heaven) - from matter, like fruit from the flower, the son of God, the brother of Christ, sharing in the divinity through the divine promise, we’ll be begotten, with tears in his whole life, with a burden of gestation throughout life.

‘You are gods’ is written in Scripture and in the letters of Paul. Nor did Jesus deny that man, in becoming holy with a constant effort towards perfection, because similar to God His Father, and the measure of a son towards the Father, of the creative spirit in relation to the Most Holy Uncreated Spirit.

But to arrive at this glorification it is necessary to sigh and suffer with patience and hope, with Faith and love, just like a mother who for long months suffers and hopes, and willingly confronts pain provided she can give birth to her child.

Do you see how good God is? He grants procreation to matter, almost being little creators. But He grants that all spirits may re-create themselves, for the soul, given by God, can recreate and super create itself, reaching the sublime dignity of children of God, sharing in the Father’s eternal glory.

And not just these, but we, too, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, sigh inwardly, awaiting adoption as children of God and the redemption of our bodies, in Jesus Christ Our Lord.

Possessing extraordinary gifts does not eliminate having to suffer to re-create oneself for Heaven. Indeed, in proportion to the joy coming to you from Heaven, you must be able to suffer to arrive at loftier degrees of spiritual perfection. And isn’t having the ‘word of God’ having the first fruits of the Spirit, soul of mine? Let your strength; therefore, be in proportion to this grace. Proceed, from your safe refuge, from the arms of your Father, who comforts you and your tribulation and gives you his consolations to compensate you for those which men deny you. Keep yourself in the Light so that your
eyes will be illuminated and you will never fall asleep in spiritual death - so that the one who is your enemy can never say, ‘I have defeated her!’ Consider that you must be wide awake, just, luminous, and wise, for both your soul and the Work of God, which even a slight defection of yours, would depreciate. Be holy to give joy to God, peace to your soul and eternal life, and not diminish God’s gift. Consider that you would play into the hands of your enemies. Crown your brow with thorns, be steadfast under flagellation, and go beneath the cross. But make those tormenting you have to say one day the words of the crucifiers on Calvary: ‘This was a just spirit,’ and beat their breasts, saying, ‘The sufferings we have occasioned her weigh upon our conscience and cry out to God, because we have oppressed an innocent one who served God. We have thus combated God.’

Come, come, soul of mine, ever more beloved soul. Come; rest on the breast of Him who does not betray his children. Rest upon the One who is given you as your Father.”

Matthew 7:15-22: False Prophet

Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep’s clothing, but underneath are ravenous wolves. By their fruits you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thorn bushes, or figs from thistles? Just so, every good tree bears good fruit, and every rotten tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a rotten tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. So by their fruits you will know them.

The roots of this parable began in the Garden of Eden. every good tree bears good fruit: The good tree refers to The Tree of Life that is encountered at the beginning of Genesis 2:9 and 3:22 and that is found again at the end of the Apocalypse of John 22:2,14 The good tree is a figure of the Incarnate Word - whose fruit, the Redemption, hung from the wood of the cross - of that Jesus Christ is the Bread of Life, the Fount of Living Water, Grace, and who has given you Life with His Death, and you can always eat and drink of Him in order to live the life of the just and have eternal Life. This tree represents Christ and can only produce good fruit.

Every rotten tree bears bad fruit: This tree refers to The Tree of Knowledge – good and evil. Our Lord forbids Adam and Eve from eating those useless ones from the Tree of Knowledge. Because an excess of knowledge would have awoken pride in man, who would then have believed himself to be equal to God on account of his newly acquired knowledge. And he would have foolishly believed himself capable of being able to possess it without danger, with the consequent rising of an abusive right of self-judgment of his own actions and of acting, consequently, by trampling on every duty of filial obedience towards His Creator - given that, at this point, he was similar to Him in knowledge - His Creator, who had lovingly showed him right and wrong, directly or by infused grace and knowledge.

The Tree of Knowledge, Satan’s tree, can only produce evil. It may seem good on the surface but underneath is great evil. Once a person eats from this tree he is then marked on the forehead and on the hand that expresses a total dependency on the part of those who are designated by this sign. The sign indicates him who is an enemy of Christ, that is to say, the sign of the Antichrist. In his mark, which is stamped, signifies the complete belonging of the person thus marked to the army of him who is opposed to Christ and to fight against his divine and royal dominion.

The forehead indicates the intellect, because the mind is the seat of the human reason. The hand expresses human activity, because it is with his hands that man acts
and works. Nevertheless it is the person who is marked with the mark of the Antichrist in his intellect and in his will. Every tree that does not bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

Adam and Eve, with their own free will, had chosen to eat from the Tree of Knowledge. This resulted in devastating consequences for both of them and their descendants. All life on earth was destroyed except for the remnant in the Ark of Noah which was a sign of God’s Mercy. This act of disobedience would not only affect Adam and Eve but will affect all mankind until the end of the world.

By their fruits you will know them.

Ref: Sermon_St_Seraphim.doc, 06-11-2001 Edited by Donald Shufran

"The enemy prompts man not to do any good deeds, or to do them good out of vanity, or merely for virtue's sake rather than for Christ's sake. The human will, prompts us to do everything to flatter our passions, or else it teaches us like the enemy, to do good for the sake of good and not care for the grace which is acquired by it. But God's all-saving will, consists in doing good solely to acquire the Holy Spirit, as an eternal, inexhaustible treasure which is priceless. The acquisition of the Holy Spirit is, in a manner of speaking, the oil, which the foolish virgins lacked. They were called foolish just because they had forgotten the necessary fruit of virtue, the grace of the Holy Spirit, without which no one is or can be saved, for: ‘Through the Holy Spirit every soul is quickened and through purification is exalted and illumined by the Triune Unity in a Holy mystery.’

The oil in the lamps of the wise virgins could burn brightly for a long time. So these virgins, with their bright lamps were able to meet the Bridegroom, who came at midnight. With Him, they could enter the bridal chamber of joy. But the foolish ones, though they went to market to buy more oil, when their lamps were going out, were unable to return in time, for the door was already shut. The market is our life; the door of the bridal chamber, which was shut and barred the way to the Bridegroom is human death; the wise and foolish virgins are Christian souls; the oil is not the good deeds, but the grace of the All-Holy Spirit of God which is obtained through good deeds and which changes souls from one state to another - such as, from a corruptible state to incorruptible state, from spiritual death to spiritual life, from darkness to light, from the stable of our being (where the passions are tied up like dumb animals and wild beasts) into a temple of the Divinity, the shining bridal chamber of eternal joy in Christ Jesus our Lord, the Creator, Redeemer and eternal Bridegroom of our souls.

How great is God's compassion on our misery, that is to say, our inattention to His care for us, when God says: "Behold, I stand at the door and knock" (Rev. 3:20), meaning by "door" the course of our life which has not yet been closed by death! Oh, how I wish, your Godliness, that in this life you may always be in the Spirit of God! ‘In whatsoever I find you, in that will I judge you,’ says the Lord.

Woes betide us if He finds us overcharged with the cares and sorrows of this life! For who will be able to bear His anger, who will bear the wrath of His countenance? That is why it has been said: ‘Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation’ (Mk. 14:38), that is, lest you be deprived of the Spirit of God, for watching and prayer brings us His grace.”

332
Chapter 5: Death Enters the World

Knowledge of Adam – The Earth was cursed because of Adams Sin - Was Adam the only Human Being Created by God? – The Devils Plan to destroy Humanity – Who was the “ancestor-prehuman-female”? Was Eve the mother of Cain? Cain and Abel the Sons of Adam – Consequences of Adams Sin - Descendants of Adam to Noah – The First Creation – Origin of the Nephilim Man –Man Experiments with Genetic Manipulation – Continental Drift – Creation was Subject to Futility – The Real Consequences of Original Sin – The Great Flood - Man Begins Again – The table of Nations – The Twelve Tribes of Israel - The Test of Abraham – The Descendants of Adam’s Children prefigures Abraham’s Children – The Genealogy of Jesus – The Number 14 and 42
Knowledge of Adam
Ref: Conchiglia –San Juan Diego July 28, 2014

The Holy Spirit is speaking: “I want to reveal to you things that relate to the “First Man, Adam and the Innocent Woman.”

I start by saying and reaffirming that if “the sons of God” although few are still living on Earth, it is thanks to the love and loyalty of the “Innocent Woman.” Repeat this to put it even more in evidence the most grave sin of the “First Man,” created in the Image and Likeness of God the Father and established as “Lord over the Earth,” was so filled with pride up to the point to believe to have the right to replace Him and to proceed without Him because of “self-awareness.”

Imagine only a small part of all the gifts that God the Father bestowed and infused onto His “Man created,” you must make a great mental effort that at the beginning will disturb you but then it will shine bright in your heart and in your mind and now you will make an extra mental effort to control your anger and your pain to learn about the plundering undergone on you and for which, you can not even understand the whys and wherefores when Jesus spoke to His sons and brothers, defined them Gods.

Reflect on this, even with its Women besides him even before the Original Sin, accomplishes the continuation, the “Project of God” in view of all the generations to follow that are Humanity? The “First Couple,” since before, did not have the material and spiritual examples of which you take advantage with a legacy of millennia and millennia if not more because you will lose count of the years. You, to know and learn about anything you need to avail yourself of teachers, of books, testimony of every kind and on any field the study of computer science has helped you much. But the “First Man and First Woman” by who have they learned? They had manifested the “infused knowledge in every field.” Manifest, once adults. They did not need to ask because they already knew everything.

The Man and the Woman, as adults, were able to achieve anything their mind conceived and to their advantage they had a long life line to bring any project to completion. So, they and their children, and their children’s children generation after generation, would constitute the marvelous Humanity to glorify God the Father, the Creator.

Think about this, turn your thinking, for example, to distinguished Scientist. You are well aware that even through you are physically alike, he is mentally superior. The comparison scares you, because you can barely remember what you have studied as a child while he is able to do extremely complicated calculations, to plan a trip into space. Now, this kind of man, imagine him in other fields of knowledge and practicality, for example in Medicine, in Sculpture, of Music and any other that comes to mind. Logic leads you to think and say, that every man is bright to do a specific job according to their own aptitudes and faculties. And yet, all men have a thinking brain to do calculations and all men have hands, to be able to do any form of art and more.

And in this last example, I bring you this daughter, Our Conchiglia; even you can take pen and paper and start to write what God tells your heart and mind. But enough with the examples, as of tomorrow resolve to do anything and in any area! Yes, it is a
provocation, because none of you can do all things and in all areas even though you have examples of examples, books about books and testimony of witnesses of countless generations before you, but finite in their time.

Every man who is born must learn from those who were born before him. If you follow this logic, every man should know everything that billions and billions of men over the generations, from the “First Man” have learned.

But no. You have never been as limited as in this generation and the material and spiritual decay is horrible in the Eyes of God the Father. Can you at least in small part realize that the “First Man” had every Gift, each feature and all wisdom and knowledge and that by the “sin of Hybridization” (by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) has messed up the Man that you are today? Do you realize how you should have been, because it was the Will of the Father and how you are limited instead? Do you realize the why, Lucifer did not accept the Man as he was created by God and the fact that it had to be, Lucifer, second being of Light only to God to bow down and worship Man as created in the Image and Likeness of God in everything? The rebellion against God took place in the whole awareness both in Heaven with Lucifer and on Earth with the “First Man” in the spiritual and material level, you are now “their sub-product” enslaved, never to evolve and that since fifty million years.

Adam who was filled with arrogance and rebellion against God gave life and started the ‘alien race’ and not the other way around as self-proclaimed scholars speculate. The evil alien race, you call them devils. The alien races that love Me, you call them angels. You have considered and still consider them, superior beings to you, most advanced but instead, in the beginning, ‘you are superior’, ‘pure children’, before hybridization. Because of wars and resulting catastrophes once again Planet Earth had to start again and almost all memory lost, and those who were ‘your younger siblings’ preserving the Love for Me have evolved and will appear as your older siblings. On Planet Earth now cohabits ‘good’ alien beings (Angels) and ‘evil’ alien beings (Demons), the good ones to defend and protect Planet Earth from yourselves and the wicked ones to manipulate and destroy your habitat to conform it to their biological nature. Meanwhile they experiment on you, the good ones to improve your DNA, the wicked ones to study and figure out how to manipulate you better and thus destroy the body and the Soul and so finally take possession of Planet Earth, the most beautiful garden of the Universe.

It is time to break this “satanic chain” but this chain has so many rings and each of you has a ring on hand. All together you have to decide to break the evil ring that you have in hand only like this will man regain his power, Gift of God, and still be able to start on the path traced by God and it is always the same, since the Beginning, namely the glorified Man in the Image and Likeness of God full of good physical and spiritual health and many years of life and no more death, cry or lament for the former things will have passed. Here, take a deep breathe and clam the heart and immediately start the True Life in God.”

Was Adam the only Human Being Created by God?

BD No. 8236 of 08/10/1962 taken from book 87

Genetic evidence doesn’t support the notion of all humans descending from one man and one woman, but rather from a population of individuals. Ref: Live Science By Tia Ghose October 30, 2014 10:19 AM

God the Father is speaking: “But now the question will arise in you how the whole earth came to be populated with people. This is a valid question, for there were many original spirits when the first original spirit Adam embodied himself, and all of these original spirits wanted to continue their course of development and engender themselves as souls in a human being because they knew that their final return to Me
could only take place in this way. And I also gave human covers to those original spirits who consciously wanted to take the path across earth. I created a large number of human beings, for only one thought by Me sufficed and every fully matured original spirit received its external form, and each form was physically created such that procreation would take place in accordance with My will. But I restricted the regions of the first forefathers. You should understand that I allocated the prepared land to the human beings.

Yet the first people, Adam and Eve, had to take the test of will, and as a result of their fall the whole human race became weakened. The disobedience against My divine commandment had, due to My adversary spirit Lucifer, likewise arisen in those original spirits, and the hereditary sin, which consisted of changing the pure, divine love into selfish love, was repeated in these human beings too, for My adversary tempted all people, and his enticement succeeded because people still had too little knowledge of him who wanted to cause them to fall again. And people spread across the entire earth, but Adam was and remained nevertheless the founder of the human race, and people were informed of the descendants of his house and the following generations were recorded until the birth of Jesus, Who descended to earth as a result of the inherited sin in order to redeem humanity.

Since Adam, after Lucifer, had been the first fallen original spirit, he was also the first to be embodied as a human being, and if he had observed My easy commandment he very quickly would have shed his external form, and all other original spirits would soon have given up their resistance as well, they unconditionally would have given themselves to Me, and their return to Me would have been guaranteed. Yet his disobedience was another opposition to Me, it was a repetition of the first sin of rebellion against Me. However, owing to Adam’s fall Lucifer had regained power, and he used it on each generation which, being as weak as Adam did not resist and remained weak until Jesus arrived in order to help them.

You humans should know that I populated the whole earth because many of the fully matured original spirits desired their last embodiment on earth and because every one of these original spirits was entitled to undertake the final test of will within the human being. There were a large number of them, and every one had many followers, original spirits which had followed him and time and again joined him again. And for all these I chose the living conditions which suited their various inclinations, and thus, having created its human external form, I placed every original spirit appropriately, consequently reproducing himself corresponding to My will and My natural law. The procreation method was the same everywhere, which is why I always joined the original spirit with a second spirit.

Thus the creative act of the first human being was repeated time and again in regions which were inaccessible for the individual human tribes, for My creation of the earth had been so comprehensive that the process of further development everywhere necessitated the original spirits to incarnate in the human being and for this I created the first prerequisites. And only after a long period of time had passed did the various tribes make contact with each other. Their spiritual development, however, had advanced entirely differently, all depending on the degree of love within each person. But they all can be instructed by Me Myself when their resistance diminishes and My commandments are heeded again, and the human souls will come to full maturity, for the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ accomplished the act of Salvation for all human beings, and the knowledge of it can also be brought to all human beings through people or through the working of My spirit. Nevertheless, Adam’s direct descendants will accept this knowledge more easily and hence belong to the human generation which will find
redemption while still on earth, so that the souls will be able to become free while still on earth if they accept Jesus Christ’s act of Salvation Who, apart from the original sin, also took Adam’s past sin upon Himself and thus purchased humanity’s salvation from My adversary through His death on the cross.”

**Note: Human Ancestor Discovery**

“It’s a discovery that rocked the archaeological world -- scientists working at Moropeng, the site outside Johannesburg known as the 'Cradle of Humankind,' discovered a mass underground cave housing the remains of hundreds of individuals that the researchers say belong to a new species of the human family. Researchers named the creature Homo naledi. That reflects the "Homo" evolutionary group, which includes modern people and our closest extinct relatives, and the word for "star" in a local language. The find was made in the Rising Star cave system.” Ref: Fox News 9/15/15

**The Earth was Cursed Because of Adam’s Sin**

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 235

“The world is populated; rather, it has been populated from the beginning by unreasonable creatures and by reasonable creatures. Populated not so there could be many of every species, but because many were the species of the unreasonable creatures, and above these, was the pair of the two creatures endowed with reason and with a spiritual and immortal soul, very different from the one which is called ‘living soul’ in Chapter 1:30 of Genesis and which was not but the breath for which in the Book, it is written of them who ‘had breath in their nostrils.’ And all things that had been made were ‘good’ to the judgment of the same God Creator who is absolute and perfect Goodness.

They were ‘very good.’ Of what goodness: Only that of serving as an aid to man in cultivating Eden, or as food, or as a delight? That is, of a passive goodness because that is what they had to do, or of a servile goodness towards man, a creature different from every other because of his erect position, the magnificence of his walk, the beauty of his face, the power of his actions and voice, for that dominion peculiar to a reasonable being which manifests itself in his secure will, in his decisive command, in his capacity of rewarding or punishing justly all things which command the inferior being to a natural subjection?

No. They were ‘very good’ because they were still lacking in savageness, and wickedness and cunning; and the lion dwelled with the young sheep, and the wolf with the lamb, and the leopard with the kid, and the young ones of the bear gazed with those of the mare, just as it transpires from verse 19 of the second chapter of Genesis, when it is said that Adam familiarly stays with all the animals of the earth and of the air, by giving a name to them all, without suffering an insult from the most ferocious ones amongst them, nor without striking fear in any of them since they were good and they felt instinctively that man, too, was “good’, who would not have punished them without having had a motive to do so; and so, too, as Isaiah predicts that it shall be, when “the knowledge of the Lord,” that is, the kingdom of the spirit will have truly filled the Earth. (Isaiah XI:6-9)

Then Adam sinned and the Earth was cursed because of him, and from amongst the many tribulations which she [the Earth] bore to the fallen man, because he made himself in subordinate to God, was that of the insubordination of the inferior creatures towards him. And he, besides drawing with toil his daily nourishment from the Earth that
had become cursed, had to struggle to defend himself from the animals that were no longer good, rebellious towards him as he towards the Creator, enemies amongst themselves because the disorder had by now established its kingdom, which will last until the coming of the day of the Lord and of his kingdom, and heaven and earth as they are now will disappear and there will be a new heaven and a new Earth, Apocalypse 21:1 and the suffering of creatures will end.

**Because the day and the eternal kingdom will truly have come for all the children of God who, until that day, will always have to struggle, sigh and groan, so as to generate the 'son of God' from themselves, born as such not 'of blood nor of the will of the flesh,' but for having received the divine Life, by having received the Word made Man, He of whom Isaiah writes, repeating the words of the eternal Word, ‘I have redeemed you and have called you by [your] name: you are mine, I am your Savior. All those who call my Name, I have created them for my glory, I have formed them, I have made them, and again, they are my people, children who will not deal falsely.’”

**Consequences of Adam’s Sin**

**MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 142-162**

“Beyond the immediate and personal condemnation and its immediate and personal consequences, the sin of Adam and the condemnation provoked by it has had consequences that will last until the end of time, weighing heavily upon Humanity. As the forefather of the human family, Adam has transmitted his infirmity to his descendants.

It is written, ‘By the work of man, sin entered into the world.’ And it is the truth. The Book of Wisdom, the Letters to the Hebrews and the Book of Psalms tell of this sorrow before Paul. It is always God who speaks through the mouth of His inspired ones.

This sorrow fills the world; it passes on from generation to generation, and will not end for as long as the world does not end. With its howl, it has filled the place where Adam, with effort, drew bread from the clods (a lump or mass, especially of earth or clay.) onto which his perspiration dripped. And it has spread throughout the Earth, and the horizons, gorges, forests and animals, shuddering, have felt it and have transmitted it to one another. And like a blinding light, it made Adam and Eve see the immensity of their sin, not only committed against God, but also towards their flesh and blood.

Until that moment, the verdict of God had not yet destroyed the rebellion of man, who with the natural adaptability of an animal - because man lacking in Grace is nothing more than the most perfect of all animals – had quickly adapted himself to his new destiny, no longer easy and blissful as it was before, but not lacking in human joys which compensated for human sorrow.

The passion of the sense satisfied itself in the companion’s flesh, not holy joined as God had wanted and as the innocent man, full of knowledge, had understood in Eden, to make himself one flesh only; the joy of creating by themselves – oh, persistent pride! – new creatures, fooling themselves in this way of being similar to God, the Creator; the dominion upon animals, the satisfaction of the harvests and of being self-sufficient without having to thank anyone; sensual joys, but nevertheless joys.

Oh, how much obscurity of the smoke of pride and of the mist of unrestrained concupiscence’s obstinately persisted in the arrogant two. Childbirth was obtained with pain, but the joy of children compensated that pain. Food was obtained with effort, but the stomach filled itself just the same and gluttony was satisfied, as the Earth was full of good things. Disease and health were distant, and perfectly –created bodies enjoyed
health and virility that made the arrogant two think that life was long-lived, even if not eternal. And fermenting pride provoked the deriding thought, ‘Where is therefore the punishment of God? We are happy even without Him.’

However, the green of the fields, one day, on which the multicolored flowers created by God blossomed, turned red with the first human blood shed upon the Earth, and the mother howled upon the dead body of sweet Abel and the father understood that it had not been a vain threat that promised, ‘You shall return to the ground from where you had been taken, for you are dust and into dust you shall return,’ and Adam died twice, for himself and for his son, since a father dies the death of his children seeing them dead, and Eve gave birth with torture, giving to the Earth the lifeless body of her beloved, and she understood what it was to give birth in sin.

However, equally in the same hour in which - and it was mercy again - the punishment of God struck, pride died and had given birth to repentance, the new life for which the Guilty two began the ascent on the path of Justice, and they merited after a long expiation and expectation, divine forgiveness through the merits of Christ.”

Cain and Abel – the resentfulness of Cain
Ref: Gen 4: 2-16

Abel became a keeper of flocks and Cain a tiller of the soil. In the course of time Cain brought an offering to the Lord from the fruit of the soil, while Abel, for his part, brought one of the best firstlings of his flock. The Lord looked with favor on Abel and his offering, but on Cain and his offering he did not. Cain greatly resented this and was crestfallen (downcast or humiliated). So the Lord said to Cain: “Why are you so resentful and crestfallen? If you do well, you can hold up your head; but if not, sin is a demon lurking at the door: his urge is towards you, yet you can be his master.”

Cain said to his brother Abel, “Let us go out in the field.” When they were in the field, Cain attacked his brother Abel and killed him. Then the Lord asked Cain, “Where is your brother Abel?” He answered, “I do not know. Am I my brother’s keeper?” The Lord then said: “What have you done! Listen: Your brother’s blood cries out to me from the soil! Therefore you shall be banned from the soil that opened its mouth to receive your brother’s blood from your hand. If you till the soil, it shall no longer give you its produce. You shall become a restless wanderer on the earth. Cain said to the Lord: “My punishment is too great to bear. Since you have now banished me from the soil, and I must avoid your presence and become a restless wanderer on the earth, anyone may kill me at sight.” “Not so! The Lord said to him. “If anyone kills Cain, Cain shall be avenged sevenfold.” So the Lord put a mark on Cain, lest anyone should kill him at sight. Cain then left the Lord’s presence and settled in the land of Nod east of Eden.

Cain, where is your Brother?

MV PMG1: 488

Jesus is speaking: “Cain envied Abel’s friendship with the Lord and he became the first killer. And the Lord said to Cain: ‘Where is your brother? What have you done with him? The voice of his blood is crying to Me. Now you shall be accursed on the Earth that has tasted human blood at the means of a brother who has opened the veins of his brother and that horrid thirst of the Earth for human blood will never cease. And
the Earth, poisoned by that blood, will be more sterile than a woman withered by age. And you shall be a fugitive seeking peace and bread. And you shall not find them. On account of your remorse, you shall see blood on every flower and blade of grass, on all waters and food. The sky will seem blood to you and the sea blood and from the sky, from the Earth and the sea three voices will reach you: the voice of God, of the Innocent, of the Demon. And you will kill yourself not to hear them.‘ Genesis does not say that: remarks Peter.

No. Genesis does not. But I do. And I am not mistaken. And I say so for the new Cain’s of the new Abel’s. For those who are not watching over themselves and the Enemy will become one thing with him.”

Adam’s Descendants
BD No. 8237 of 08/11/1962 taken from book 87
(Continuation of no. 8236)

You are most certainly working according to My will when you distribute the spiritual knowledge which is conveyed to you from above; For it is important to provide clarification to many more people who genuinely want to receive it. Time and again I tell you that people have considerably diverted from the truth but that they hold on to their wrong thinking because even a correct clarification does not seem acceptable to them. However, it is the time of the end, and the length of time from the start of a period of Salvation until now is too long that evidence could be produced regarding the events which took place when the first human beings took possession of the earth. Yet even the first people themselves lacked a correct realization, since they were burdened by the original sin, from which they could have liberated themselves had they passed their test of will. They were spiritually still unenlightened and unaware of the correlations between the spiritual and the earthly kingdom, since due to Lucifer’s temptation they changed their love when the pure spark of love from Me became clouded due to their fall into sin, otherwise it would have been impossible for people to descend ever further until the human race, Adam’s descendants, lost itself in unbelief, for the sin to get out of hand. They didn’t recognize the correlations and lived a purely earthly life. And although time and again beings of light embodied themselves on earth, too, in order to give people instructions and explain the purpose of existence to them their thinking nevertheless remained limited, and thus limited thinking was then also reproduced, the condition for profound wisdoms didn’t exist, which includes My reign and activity throughout the whole of Creation. But neither did people’s limited thinking allow for such clarifications relating to the broad scope of Creation, which can be noted on earth alone and which My might and wisdom, My love for all created beings always and forever animated with the apostatized spirits, which were to accomplish their return to Me on this said work of creation called Earth. And according to their narrow field of vision they also only described the narrow region which they themselves occupied. And an account was given of the earthly process of development since Adam and Eve, the ancestral parents which, however, does not mean that the same happened in other places on earth, since these were still so far apart for the first human beings and partly separated by large areas of water, that every territory was a world in itself where the once fallen spirits were able to mature and embody themselves in a human being.”
Note: As we start this description of the Nephilim Man, it’s important to note the distinction the Lord makes when He mentions “sons of heaven” are the children of God: the “daughters of man” are those of the flesh.

“Origin of the Nephilim: When men began to multiply on earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of heaven saw how beautiful the daughters of man were, and so they took for their wives as many of them as they chose. Then the Lord said: ‘My spirit shall not remain in man forever, since he is but flesh. His days shall comprise one hundred and twenty years.’

At that time the Nephilim appeared on earth (as well as later), after the sons of heaven had intercourse with the daughters of man, who bore them sons. They were the heroes of old, the men of renown.

Genesis 6:1-4:

[Note: The sacred author incorporates it here, not only in order to account for the prehistoric giants of Palestine, whom the Israelites called the Nephilim, but also to introduce the story of the flood with a moral orientation—the constantly increasing wickedness of mankind.

4,6. As well as later: According to Num13 when the Israelites invaded Palestine and found there the tall aboriginal Anakin, they likened them to the Nephilim; Dt2,10f. Perhaps the huge megalithic structures in Palestine were thought to have been built by a race of giants, whose superhuman strength was attributed to semi-divine origin. The heroes of old: the legendary worthies of ancient mythology.]

‘Do you understand?’ You are not the only one who does not understand. The learned and scientists do not understand, nor do believers or atheists. Pay attention to me. And start reading.

‘When men began to multiply on earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of heaven, O children of Seth, saw how beautiful the daughters of man [daughters of Cain] were, and so they took for their wives as many of them as they chose … At that time the Nephilim appeared on earth (as well as later), after sons of heaven had intercourse with the daughters of man, who bore them sons. They were the heroes of old, the men of renown.’ The men who, because of the strength of their skeletons, impress your scientists, who deduce that at the beginning of the age, man was taller and stronger than he now is, and from structure of their cranium they deduce that man derives from ape: The usual errors of men in the face of the mystery of creation.

You have not yet understood. I’ll explain more clearly. If disobedience to God’s order and its consequences were able to inject Evil into the innocent, with all its varied manifestations of lust, gluttony, wrath, envy, pride, and avarice, and this injection soon developed into fratricide (killing one’s own brother), provoked by pride, wrath, envy, and avarice, what deeper decadence and deeper dominion by Satan must have been provoked by this second sin?

Adam and Eve had sinned against the first of God’s commands for men. A command implied in the other one, obedience, given to the couple: ‘Eat everything, but not from this tree.’ Obedience is love. If they had obeyed without yielding to any pressure by Evil exerted upon their spirit, intellect, heart, and flesh, they would have loved God ‘with all their heart, with all their soul, and with all their strength,’ as was explicitly ordered by the Lord much later. They did not and were punished.
But they did not sin in the other branch of love - love for one’s neighbor. They did not curse even Cain, but wept over the one dead in the flesh and the one dead in spirit in equal measure, recognizing that the pain which God had permitted was just because they had created pain with their sin and had to be the first to experience it in all of its ramifications. They thus remained children of God, and, along with them, the descendants coming after this pain. Cain sinned against love for God and love for his neighbor. He violated love completely, and God cursed him, and Cain did not repent. He and his children were thus nothing but children of the animal called man.

If the first sin of Adam made man degenerate to such a degree, what measure of decadence must have been produced by the second, to whom God’s curse was joined? What must have been the source of sin in the heart of the animal-man and what power must they have reached after Cain had not only listened to the counsel of the Accursed One, but embraced him as his beloved master, killing as ordered by him? The descent of one branch, the one poisoned by satanic possession, knew no rest and took on a thousand faces. When Satan seizes, he corrupts in all ramifications. When Satan is king, the subject becomes a satan. A satan with all the unbridledness of Satan. A satan against divine and human law. A satan violating even the most elementary and instinctive norms of life among men endowed with a soul and becoming brutish with the foulest sins of bestial man.

Wherever God is not present, Satan is. Wherever man no longer has a living soul, he is the beast-man. The beast loves the beast. Carnal lust, more than carnal because it is seized and sharpened by Satan makes him avid for all unions. What is horrid and disturbing, like a nightmare, strikes him as beautiful and seductive. What is licit does not satisfy him. It is too little and too honest. He is mad with lust for what is illicit, degrading, and bestial.

Those who were no longer children of God, because, with their father and like their father; they had fled God to accept Satan, ventured precisely into what is illicit, degrading, and bestial. And they had monsters as sons and daughters. Those monsters, who now impress your scientists and lead them into error. Those monsters who, because of their powerful physique and savage beauty and ferocious boldness - result of union between Cain and the brutes-seduced the children of God - that is, the descendants of Seth through Enos, Cainan, Jared, Enoc of Jared (not to be confused with Enoch of Cain - Methuselelah, Lamech, and Noah, the father of Shem, Ham, and Japheth. It was then that God) to keep the branch of the children of God from being entirely corrupted by the branch of the children of man - sent the universal deluge to extinguish men’s lust under the weight of the waters and destroy the monsters begotten by lust of the godless, insatiable in sensuality because they were aroused by the fires of Satan.

And man, contemporary man, jabbers about semantic lines and zygomatic (relating to) angles and, in not wanting to admit a Creator, because he is too proud to acknowledge he has been made, he admits descent from the beast! In order to say to himself: ‘By ourselves we evolved from animals into men.’ He degrades himself, practices self-degradation, because he refuses to humble himself before God. And he is sinking. Oh, he is really sinking! In the times of the initial corruption his appearance was animal. Now his thought and heart are, and his soul, because of deeper and deeper union with evil, has taken on Satan’s visage in too many cases.”
The Devils Plan to Destroy Humanity
Ref: Conchiglia San Juan Diego November 30th, 2013 Ref:
Genesis 4:1 The Man had relations with his wife Eve, and she conceived and bore Cain, saying, “I have produced a man with the help of the Lord.”

“I AM the Father Conchiglia, and my glory is the Living Man. It is you I have chosen to glorify the Mother of My Son Jesus. It is you I have chosen to glorify My Church. Leave outside of you every voice that will break out against you because those empty of Me can neither understand nor comprehend. That which I am about to tell you will unleash even more the envy of Lucifer that will shake the earth as it has never done. It will be an overturn of everything and nothing will remain in place because his goal has always been to destroy Humanity, to destroy My children, to destroy Man whom I have created in My Image and Likeness. Oh Man! My Creation! My project on him was and still marvelous and for this reason Lucifer was and is still envious and jealous.

Conchiglia, moreover it is time to tell you things that I have not said because it was not time, and since it is to you that I have entrusted the “Secret of the King” it is within you that I have kept the “precious pearl” and the pearl is born from the conch. Listen daughter, Man’s creation began on Planet Earth the most beautiful Planet of the Universe, rich in everything that would worthily serve to receive Man created in My Image and Likeness. Yes, upon Planet Earth it all started. “Project Humanity” started then, it would spread through the earth. The First Man, Adam was created most intelligent with supernatural gifts unimaginable to you, precisely in My Image and Likeness. Yes, upon Planet Earth it all started. “Project Humanity” started then, it would spread throughout the Universe.

The First Man, Adam was created most intelligent with supernatural gifts unimaginable to you, precisely in My Image and Likeness. What I am going to say, takes place within “a space-time” that does not exist and that no one can link to years and seasons if not roughly and tentatively. The Adam and the Innocent Woman, the First Couple. The Adam and “ancestor-prehuman-female” conceived Cain, the first Hybrid. The Adam and the Innocent Woman conceived the “first genetically pure child” even to My Image and Likeness, Abel (a Child of God). After him, other children genetically pure, but also after Cain there were other hybrids. Both the “pure” and the “hybrid,” intelligent different, however, in their exteriority, and Death entered the World.

To simplify I will say, that Good and evil coexisted on the same grounds. Both have colonized the Planet Earth and have evolved in its own scope. One lived more, others less. Pure living longer, pure children had a longer gestation time, while the hybrids had a shorter gestation time, and so developed more in number. Both the pure and hybrids have progressed in science to the point of colonizing other Planets and bring their “different lives” onto other Planets, there to multiply, and so Man spread onto many Planets of the Universe in times to come.

The sin of pride and hybridization at Adam had by now proclaimed, and centuries and centuries succeeded with the First Man still alive because it was created with all the supernatural gifts necessary for him to live on the Earth and hence accomplish the ‘procreation-collaborative project.’ The rebellion and arrogance had exceeded all limits and degrees and now Adam was self-assured of himself, so he challenged Me and fathered, with his semen without the natural contact, and experimented to create other hybrid breeds; so many, with different characteristics.

These hybrid beings of many races were still very smart and over the turn of centuries have ventured across Planet Earth and other planets, colonizing. And so on other planets lived “pure children and hybrid children” each with its own characteristics.
Their goal was the conquest and power so wars after war succeeded on earth, and other planets in heaven. And wars still exist.

[NOTE: TRAVEL – In the time of Adam and on the new earth
Ref: Conchiglia – San Juan Diego May 11, 2000]

“Cars and autos will not be necessary, to travel you only need thought, if you want to go further, you will go in a minute, and you will be already there. Trains and planes will no longer work; I have always said ‘I change things.’”

Adam was the First Man created by Me, then became filled with arrogance and rebelled and gave life and started the “alien extraterrestrial race” and not the other way around as self-proclaimed scholars speculate. **The evil alien races, you call them devils. The alien race that love me, call them angels.** You have defined them ‘gods’ ‘your creators’ and they behave so that you believed it to better subjugate and enslave you. You have considered and still consider them, superior beings to you, most advanced but instead, in the beginning “you are superior,” “pure children” before hybridization.

Because of wars and resulting catastrophes once again Planet Earth had to start again and almost all memory lost, and those who were “younger siblings” preserving the Love for Me have evolved and will appear as your older siblings. Planet Earth now cohabits, “good” alien beings and “evil” alien beings; The good ones to defend and protect Planet Earth from yourselves and the wicked ones to manipulate and destroy your habitat to conform it to their biological nature.”

Who was the “ancestor-prehuman-female” that Conceived Cain?

Our Lord has already mentioned that He populated the whole earth because many of the fully matured original spirits desired their last embodiment on earth and because every one of these original spirits was entitled to undertake the final test of will within the human being. There were a large number of them, and every one had many followers. And for all these Our Lord chose the living conditions which suited their various inclinations, and thus, having created its human external form, He placed every original spirit appropriately, consequently reproducing himself corresponding to His will and His natural law. The procreation method was the same everywhere, which is why Our Lord always joined the original spirit with a second spirit.

The reason why the “ancestor–prehuman-female” is called “prehuman” is because she is not from the direct line of Adam and Eve. God gave human covers to those original spirits who consciously wanted to take the path across earth. The “ancestor-prehuman-female” was one of those spirits. It was through the blessing that God gave to Adam, that Eve was created and gave birth to the “first genetically pure child” who was in the Image and Likeness of God, Abel (a Child of God).

Since there is no name mentioned for the “ancestor-prehuman-female” that gave birth to Cain, the first hybrid, you could easily have called her “Hagar” after the Egyptian slave woman that Abraham had relations with, and caused the descendants of their son Ishmael to be born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai (Abraham’s wife). Ishmael was also a hybrid because he was not from the direct line of Abraham and Sarah. Ishmael’s descendents were called the “children of the flesh” just like Cain. It was only after Abraham received the blessing from God that Isaac was born and thus became the “child of the promise.”

Adam received the blessing from God, which took place many years after the birth of Cain, when Eve was created from the rib of Adam and gave birth to Abel. Abel, who was a child of God, was overcome by the evil of his brother, Cain, and became the first pure child of God to be martyred. Cain, no longer a child of God had fled God to accept Satan, just like Ishmael, and became just like his father, and like his father, he
ventured precisely into what was illicit, degrading, and bestial. This evil became so corrupt that it brought down God’s wrath on mankind because evil had contaminated almost all of God’s children.

It is the free will of man that decides the future and eternal destiny. As it was through Adam’s will that made him fall, as it was through Cain’s will in becoming a fratricide and fugitive by giving origin to the children of the flesh, that is, to those who have come out of every law, moral as well.

From Adam on, everything has been corrupted by those who have followed suit. Remember that “Cain was the fruit of Adam” and the first to kill “a Son of God,” Abel. And from then until now because of Original Sin the killers can no longer be counted.

However, Adam’s direct descendants from Eve and Abraham’s direct descendants from Sarah, will accept divine knowledge more easily and hence belong to the human generation which will find redemption while still on earth, so that the soul will be able to become free while still on earth if they accept Jesus Christ’s act of Salvation Who, apart from the original sin, also took Adam’s past sin upon Himself and thus purchased humanity’s salvation from His adversary through His death on the Cross.

**Man Experiments with Genetic Manipulation**

Ref: Conchiglia (July 12, 2014) Movimento D’Amore San Juan Diego

God the Father is speaking: “The wolf and the lamb shall forge means that the wolf will eat grass like the lamb. It also means that at the beginning of Creation all animals were peaceful and friends of man and fed on grass as I had established, in the perfection of what I had created.

The evil beings, descendants of Cain, have put in place many types of hybridization (to generate a new form of animal or plant by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) on animals that they might kill each other and kill man. Experiments and achievements became disastrous and unfortunately are still carried out.

Know that man existed before the dinosaurs. These huge animals have not been created by Me but are the results of genetic manipulation exerted on harmless animals. The extent of these alien manipulations was to create ferocious animals to destroy ‘men sons of God.’
The first experiments, led to create by means of hybridization huge herbivorous dinosaurs but, perfected only after the abomination (death of Abel) and so followed the carnivorous and exterminator dinosaurs. The same experiments were also performed on the birds, some became huge and killers of other species and men and the same thing happened to the fish. Insects are not My Creation.

What is repugnant comes not from Me anything that damages Man and Nature does not belong to me. Think about the little things in order to understand the big things. Some might say that the birds feed on insects, and I tell you that they were established for the grain, the same which fed the birds that you hold in a cage. Some might say that it is natural that the big fish eats the small one and I tell you that for both the plankton was established.

How many of you have a dog that I have established as man’s friend? Look at them; puppies are all alike, tender and affectionate. But if man makes sense and loves animals My creatures, does not train them to be ferocious that brings them to kill, yet trains them to be good company and to help man in many areas because he knows that animals are generous and faithful.

From Adam on, everything has been corrupted by those who have followed suit. Remember that ‘Cain hybrid (children of the flesh) fruit of Adam,’ was the first to kill ‘a Son of God, Abel.’ And from then until now because of Original Sin the killers can no longer be counted.

Planet Earth is now invaded by hybrids spiritually vilest is soaked with the blood of billions upon billions of men.”

**Genetic Engineering 2018 – following the same footsteps of Adam**

Ref: Woolly Mammoths will roam new Jurassic Park-style theme park with cave lions and extinct horses in ten years, Russian scientists say - By Patrick Knox and Will Stewart | The Sun

Russia: Investment sought for 5.9 million cloning center to bring back mammoths and other extinct species

“Long extinct cave lions may be about to rise from their icy graves and prowl once more alongside woolly mammoths and ancient horses in a real-life Jurassic Park.

In less than 10 years, it is hoped the fearsome big cats will be released from an underground lab as part of a remarkable plan to populate a remote spot in Russia with Ice Age animals cloned from preserved DNA.

Experiments are already underway to create the lions and also extinct ancient horses found in Yakutia, Siberia, seen as a prelude to restoring the mammoth.
Regional leader Aisen Nikolaev forecast that cooperation between Russian, South Korean and Japanese scientists will see the “miracle” return of woolly mammoths inside 10 years.

He said: ‘The prospect was no longer fantastical. Today, technology is developing at an explosive pace, and what yesterday seemed to be scientific nonsense, today is an absolutely clear prospect for scientists.’

Mr. Nikolaev claimed the remarkable return of the extinct beasts will be possible because of DNA material of the giants found in the permafrost in Yakutia, also called Sakha Republic.

He said: ‘We are actively working with South Korea. Thanks to cooperation with Korean and Japanese scientists, in my opinion, this [cloning a mammoth] will happen in the next decade.’

In 2014 he first proposed ‘an Ice Age Park with mammoths’ to act as home for them to roam, he said. Further details of the incredible plans for the new ‘world class paleo-genetic scientific center’ will be unveiled next month when Vladimir Putin hosts a major investment forum.

The cloning laboratories – some sunk deep in the permafrost soil – aim to extend research by Russian scientists who are already working closely with South Korean specialists hoping to restore extinct species.

Yakutsk is capital of diamond-rich Sakha Republic, also known as Yakutia, where 80 percent of Pleistocene and Holocene animals with preserved soft tissues have been found.

The theme of the new center will be unveiled at the 4th Eastern Economic Forum hosted by Putin opening on Sept. 11 in Vladivostok. It will ‘aim to study extinct animals from living cells — and to restore such creatures as the woolly mammoth, woolly rhinoceros, cave lion and breeds of long-gone horses’, reported The Siberian Times.

The cloning scientists are already using DNA from the ancient animals has been preserved in remains encased in frozen soil – or permafrost – for tens of thousands of years.

The center will be based at Russia’s Northern-Eastern Federal University (NEFU) which is seeking further investment for the extraordinary project. Expert Dr. Lena Grigorieva – who drafted plans for the center – said: ‘There is no such unique material anywhere else in the world.’ But scientists would also explore ways of helping fight human diseases, she said. ‘We study not only Pleistocene animals — another line is the study of the history of settlement of the North-East of Russia,’ she said. ‘Northern ethnic groups have a unique ancient genetic structure. Such studies will help in the study of rare genetic diseases, their diagnosis, and prevention.’

The university has an existing close cooperation with South Korean SOOAM Biotech Research Foundation, led by cloning expert Professor Hwang Woo-Suk.

There are also links between Russian scientists and trailblazing Harvard University geneticist Professor George Church who plans to inset woolly mammoth genes into an Asian elephant embryo by 2020.

Prof. Church has revealed to Sun Online how a cloning project was on the verge of being able to grow a baby mammoth in a lab. His team of leading Harvard scientists have been using DNA recovered from a woolly mammoth found perfectly preserved in ice in Siberia after dying 42,000 years ago. By merging genes from the mammals with
that of elephants their species may be resurrected. The team is set to publish in the coming weeks scientific papers laying out in detail their revolutionary technique in creating and implanting mammalian embryos.

Speaking to exclusively to Sun Online, Prof. Church said: ‘We have already revived dozens of genes and are testing them in elephant cells. We are focusing on a reviving mammoth genes and making a mammoth/elephant hybrid and help them spread to vast wild, arctic climates.’

Using a genetic engineering technique called CRISPR-Cas9 gene-editing, his team of scientists can ‘cut and paste’ strands of DNA into elephant stem cells with a precision not seen before, paving the way for a woolly mammoth embryo.

Prof. Church said he wants to then grow a hybrid woolly mammoth/elephant hybrid within an artificial womb rather than using a female elephant as a surrogate mum. It is estimated this will take at least 22 months. The professor believes this will allow woolly mammoths herds to begin once more plodding about the arctic and while doing so save the world.

Along with other measures, it’s hoped the woolly mammoths will create an environment which could stop Siberia’s permafrost melting and then releasing billions of tons of greenhouse gases.

The doomsday scenario has been dubbed as the ‘methane bomb’ because if it happened it would dramatically worsen climate change, melting the ice cap and flooding countries across the world. And there is clear evidence that this is already happening. Bubble like mounds have been popping up like a geological plague and some have already burst and spewed out toxic gas which damages the atmosphere; but the worst of this ticking time bomb has yet to happen. Much of the methane is still trapped underneath by the permafrost layer which is fast disappearing and threatens to release the gas at any moment.

An area where this is starting to happen is the Yamal Peninsula.

Shocking aerial footage has revealed thousands of methane-filled craters — which threaten to happen across Russia’s frozen far north. Ironically, melting ice here revealed preserved woolly mammoths that are now being used in the cloning attempts. And if the huge furry mammoths/elephant hybrids were to be brought into being, Prof. Church said they could repopulate these freezing wastelands and help lock in the lethal fumes. He said: ‘Cold-resistant elephants would flatten the insulating snow and supporting trees in winter and favor the highly heat reflective grass in summer. ‘They would also help capture new carbon by enhancing the photosynthetic capacity of the vegetation.’

Should Prof. Church and his Harvard unit team successfully clone woolly mammoths they would be taken to an extraordinary Ice Age safari park currently being developed by Russian scientists called the Pleistocene Park; the 20,000 hectare zone is the furthest stretches of remote Siberia that has been created in a bid to recreate an Ice-Age ecosystem.

Experts believe grazing woolly mammoths would also compact the snow in the winter and grass in the summer all of which lowers the permafrost temperature.

This story originally appeared in The Sun.”

From Adam on, everything has been corrupted by those who have followed suit.
The results of going down the same path as Adam and Cain will bring down God’s wrath when He sees the greatness of man’s wickedness on earth.
The World Became Highly Civilized Before the Flood

People became civilized, but they were out of the presence of the Lord. Just because our nation is termed, civilized, is no sign that we are pleasing the Lord.

In the time before the flood, people built cities but they forgot the God that made them. The descendants of Cain had cattle, riches, and farms, but they had no approval of God upon their lives. They were rich in goods, but they were barren and poor as far as God’s power was concerned.

The evil beings, descendants of Cain, have put in place many types of hybridization (to generate a new form of animal or plant by combining the genes of two different species or subspecies) on animals that they might kill each other and kill the men. Experiments and achievements became disastrous and unfortunately are still carried out.

The descendants of Cain also invented many kinds of instruments. They had all kinds of music, but the Spirit of God was not in that music. They were artist in wood and stone. They were skillful with iron and brass, but they had failed God and cared nothing about serving Him.

The children of Cain followed in the footsteps of their father. They also became murderers. He had set the example before them and they followed that example. The judgment of God multiplied ten times.

"And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zillah, Hear my voice; ye wives of Lamech, harken unto my speech: for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. If Cain shall be avenged seven fold, truly Lamech seventy and seven fold,” Gen. 4:23-24.

We have come through some dark ages. Civilization has advanced in this generation, but people have departed from the faith, as Paul predicted that they would.

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils,” I Tim. 4:1.

As people modernize their cities, houses, land, highways, and church houses, they also try to modernize the old-time religion. They tried to streamline their church services, but instead, they moved towards the darkness.

Men build cities but they forget Christ. We have more cattle, lands, property and money than ever before, but the men are dried up in their souls.

Men today have better musical instruments, very beautiful, polished and expensive. They can play beautiful music on these instruments. This is wonderful if they would use those instruments for God and the church. As in the days before the flood they use these instruments for the devil.

In the days before the flood man made his own religion to suit himself. In the days before the flood people strayed away from the Lord. They prospered and made good wages. They had a high standard of living, but they were too busy to hear Noah preach the message of judgment. They thought a message of judgment was old and out of date. They were busy; but being so busy caused them to lose their souls. They were drunken on the cares of this world.

It is strange that people usually leave God when all is going well.

In our day people are prospering as never before. Men and women spend their lifetime eating and drinking, it seems that all they are living for is to fill their stomach.

All the time men are building more and more fine restaurants. They build more and more fine homes.

All the time people are working shorter hours. They are getting more and more of the luxuries of life. But instead of spending that leisure time reading the Bible, praying or
going to church. The average person spends their leisure time on themselves, to satisfy the lust of the flesh.

The places of amusement are full day and night. People are drunk on the pleasures of the world.

People today have time to travel and go on vacations. But they have no time for God. They would rather hear a man-made sermon, which has no warnings of judgment. They go to ball games, wrestling matches, carnivals, circuses, roadhouses, and nosedives of the devil, but they don’t go to church. If they go to church it is on Sunday morning a few minutes to hear a sermon that tells them they are fine people.

Prosperity does not prove that a nation is religious. Prosperity makes many people forget God.

Violence increased in the earth in the days before the flood. The whole earth was filled with violence, Gen. 6:1. The people grew weaker and wiser. They were full of hatred, envy, lust and pride.

The men forgot God and became as wicked as men could be. They robbed and killed until God had to do something, or the whole world would have been affected by this wickedness.

When a farmer sees that his orchard is being affected with the blight, he at once begins to prevent it before it spreads to every tree in the orchard. When God saw that the whole earth was filled with violence, He immediately began to do something about it, before the corruption spread to all men of the earth.

In our day crime has increased as never before. It has increased several hundred percent in our generation. The world is coming about as it was in the days before the flood. We have millions of murder cases yet unsolved. Each second that goes by there is a major crime committed. The national news is filled with holdups, robberies, and murders. Look at the newspapers and you will see that prophecy is being fulfilled right before your eyes.

Morals reached a low before the flood. Men and women were filled with passion and pride. They married and gave in marriage. They were loose and low in morals. They were sex perverts. It reached a startling climax, until God had to do something about it. He had to destroy them and start over again.

Today supermen are popular. The children are taught to look for a superman who can do supernatural things. They are going to find one. People in general are looking for some man who can perform signs and wonders; one who will not tell them to stop their wicked ways. The stage is being set for that superman who can bring fire down from heaven. Jesus said He came in His Father's name and they rejected Him; but another would come in his own name, him they would accept, John 5:43.

In the days before the flood the imagination of men's hearts were evil continually, Gen. 6:5. The devil took control of men's minds and hearts. He caused them to imagine almost everything. The devil actually took over men and possessed them. They were so taken up with evil spirits that God's Spirit ceased to deal with them anymore. God said, "My Spirit shall not remain in man forever, since he is but flesh." Gen. 6:3.

The devil had taken the people over completely. They sold out to Satan. It seemed that they had no more control over themselves.

Men went into apostasy before the flood. They had a satanic religion. They were controlled by the wrong spirit. It was because they refused to give up sin. They communed with evil spirits. They talked to the dead. They are not ashamed to come out in the open with it. Many of them do it now in the name of the church.

They claim to call up the dead relatives. It is not dead relatives (or familiar spirits) that they hear talking. It is demon voices.
They are being deceived. They are traveling a dangerous road. "Some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils in the last days," I Tim. 4:1.

Now there were religious people on earth before the flood, and don’t forget it. We also have people today who are being led by the Spirit of God. Enoch prophesied to the wicked of this day. He told us that Jesus was coming with thousands of His saints to recompense judgment on the ungodly sinners, Jude 14. Well, we have a group of people today who are warning the world as Enoch did, that the Lord is coming with ten thousand of His saints. As it was in the days before the flood it is the same today. Some hear us and some don’t.

Warning of the Flood
Ref: Genesis 6:5-8, 11,12

When the Lord saw how great was man’s wickedness on earth, and how no desire that his heart conceived was ever anything but evil, he regretted that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was grieved.

So the Lord said: “I will wipe out from the earth the men whom I have created, and not only whom I have created, but also the beast and the creeping things and the birds of the air, for I am sorry that I made them.” But Noah found favor with God.

In the eyes of God the earth was corrupt and full of lawlessness. When God saw how corrupt the earth had become, since all mortals led depraved lives on earth, he said to Noah: “I have decided to put an end to all mortals on earth; the earth is full of lawlessness because of them. So I will destroy them and all life on earth.

Jesus is speaking: “Man compelled God to be severe. The fact that mankind still exists is the proof of what I say. Adam’s very punishment is blended with mercy. God could have burnt them to ashes in their sin. He granted them expiation. And He made a Woman a cause of good, shining in the eyes of the woman, the cause of all evil, depressed for being the cause of evil. And He granted both of them children and the knowledge of existence. To Cain, the killer, together with justice He granted the mark, which was mercy, so that he might not be killed. And He granted Noah to mankind corrupted, that he might save man in the ark and He then promised the eternal covenant of peace: No more, fierce deluge. Justice was subdued by Mercy.” Ref: MV-1:764
The Great Flood

Ref: Gen7:11-13, 17-23

The flood continued upon the earth for forty days. As the waters increased, they lifted the ark, so that it rose above the earth. The swelling waters increased greatly, but the ark floated on the surface of the waters. Higher and higher above the earth rose the waters, until all the highest mountains everywhere were submerged, the crest rising fifteen cubits higher than the submerged mountains. All creatures that stirred on the earth perished: birds, cattle, wild animals, and all that swarmed on the earth, as well as all mankind. Everything on dry land with the faintest breath of life in its nostrils died out. The Lord wiped out everything living thing on earth: man and cattle, the creeping things and the birds of the air; all were wiped out from the earth. Only Noah and those with him in the ark were left.

The waters maintained their crest over the earth for one hundred and fifty days, and then God remembered Noah and all the animals, wild and tame, that were with him in the ark. So God made a wind sweep over the earth, and the waters began to subside. The fountain of the abyss and the floodgates of the sky were closed, and the downpour from the sky was held back. Gradually the waters receded from the earth. At the end of one hundred and fifty days, the waters had so diminished that, in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month, the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat.

The Great Flood - Comments

Jesus continues to speak: MV V-5:466

“But for the day and the exact hour, nobody knows them, not even the angels of the Lord, only the Father knows them. As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be when the Son of Man comes. In the days before the Flood, men were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, without worrying about the sign, right up to the day Noah went into the ark and the cataracts of heaven were opened and the Flood swept all living beings and things away. It will be like this also for the coming of the Son of Man.”

In this passage Jesus uses the title Son of Man when He is speaking to the Jews because in Daniel 7:13,14 it refers to the Son of Man as the coming of the Messiah. In essence, Jesus is telling the Jews, that He is the Messiah.

“Man” in capitals refers to the sons of heaven who reflect God’s law and love within themselves while “man” in small letters refers to men of the flesh – godless and worldly [they]. They (the godless) are the ones who are referred to in the verse: In those days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day that Noah (the sons of heaven) entered the ark. They, who represent the godless, were too busy with the ways of the world to pay attention to the warnings of Noah. They did not know until the flood came and carried them all away. So will it be also at the coming of the Son of Man.

It’s important to note that although no one will know the exact day or hour for the Son of Man’s return, God prepares His people well in advance of any pending chastisement. The Lord uses the time of Noah as an example of how God found favor
with Noah and his family who were instructed by God to build an ark because of the pending flood that would wipeout mankind. His people (the sons of heaven) were prepared and they were the ones to enter the ark. The others (sons of the flesh) who did not listen to Noah, over the one-hundred years it took to build the ark, did not repent and change their ways. They were not prepared when the flood came. After the ark was complete, Noah was told by God, seven days in advance, of the pending flood that was about to take place. (Gen 7:4) The Lord will prepare His people well in advance of His return. Stay awake!

Noah was six hundred years old when the flood waters came upon the earth. All of mankind perished, except for Noah, his family, (8 in all) and the animals in the ark. This massive upheaval would tear apart and bury forever the pre-flood world, which would wipe out all traces of the Garden of Eden.

Noah was in the ark for almost a year. (Genesis 8:14). The Bible clearly teaches that all flesh died, every man (Genesis 7:21). Genesis 9:1 confirms that only Noah and his family were saved. The world’s entire population of air-breathing, land-animals died, except for those that were taken into the ark. After the flood waters had been going down for 4 months, the dove could still not find suitable ground to nest in (Geneses 8:9). This does not seem to fit the circumstances for a local flood.

God destroyed the world that existed at that time because of man’s wickedness. When we look at nature, with its testimonies to the flood, we are viewing the consequences of sin and the acceptance of the Beast. It is also a reminder that God will save those who have faith in Him. God promised that He would never again destroy the world with water, but that a future judgment would take place.

For over a hundred years, Noah pleaded with the people of his day to have faith in God. They would not listen and the door to the ark was closed by God himself.

“I will establish my covenant with you, that never again shall all bodily creatures be destroyed by the waters of a flood; there shall not be another flood to devastate the earth.” Ref: Gen 9: 11
Creation was Subjected to Futility

MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul to the Romans: 231

Jesus is speaking: “I have explained how the immeasurable vanity of wanting to be like God was that which caused the Sin and its consequences. All of creation, through the fault of the foolish vanity of man, who was the masterpiece of creation, became acquainted with the ugliness of the Sin and of sins against God and against one’s neighbor. And more than any other inferior creature of the creation, man was acquainted with it, the superior creature, being the sole creature with a reasoning nature, free, intellectual, capable not only of physical and even intellectual development, in the human sense of the word, but of spiritual development, being he, man, according to the just opinions of the great theologian (St. Augustine): one infinite in power, a power which only God can fill.

It is truly like this. And it has been like this from the moment man has existed, nor could the Sin, though strongly invalidating this power, have deprived man of these two qualities which God had placed in him when creating him.

In the same primigenial couple, after a sorrow for the death of Abel dissipated the foolish fumes of pride which up to that moment that had kept man enslaved to the suggestion of the eternal Rebel, this unconscious power was reawakened under the impact of the sin and of the punishment. And man, lifting up his gaze towards Heaven [which he had] lost, searching for He who had justly driven him out, felt once again that only God could comfort his sorrow, fill his desire of love, and sustain his moral strengths with eternal hopes and with the promise which had descended into Adam together with the condemnation, that his seducer would have been conquered and that the freedom from his infamous anguish, that is, the restitution of the state of Grace, and therefore, of the inheritance of the Kingdom of Heaven, would have come by means of the Woman, who being the Virgin, would have given birth to the Emmanuel, the Savior and Redeemer.

And so, therefore, the creation, subjected to futility and one could say, impeded to progress towards its final perfection: that of the spirit always more triumphant upon matter, resumed its walk towards the light, towards on high, towards God, its End to whom it had turned its back by descending down the slope which did not only bring from the terrestrial paradise to Earth, but from it towards the kingdom of darkness and sin. It is true, Grace was missing, sun of the soul which because of her [Grace], she [the soul] sees distinctly, which because of her [Grace], virtues germinate and grow in perfection; however, the conscience and its voice remained: the paternal call of God to Himself and to the ultimate end; that is, there remained in man, all one with the spiritual soul and joined to it, that sufficient minimum enabling him to aim towards his end, that terrain fit to receive, up to the re-integration of Grace, those lights which God had always generously given to every man no matter how guilty he may be, and enabling him to keep that knowledge and love of God alive, which man had received from the Same together with life and that were innate in him.

Paul writes - and it is a misunderstood phrase either due to incapacity to understand or wanting to misunderstand with the purpose of discouraging men from pursuing the Good in order to enjoy Heaven since there is no salvation for man with a sinful tendency; a heretical theory born from the branches that separated themselves from the trunk of the mystical Vine, from the rebellious members who have detached themselves from the mystical Body; a profession against the divine Love who created by predestinating to Grace and to Glory, and not for damnation, and which the teaching Church justly condemns - Paul writes, ‘Subjected to futility not through her own will, but
of He who subjected it with the hope that she too can be freed from the servitude of corruption in order to take part in the glorious liberty of the children of God.’

Now many, sacrilegious, heretics, deniers of the most important attribute of God, satans because they are haters of love and of truth, take this phrase as a basis for their own pseudo-religion and say, ‘Do you see who wanted your fall, your weaknesses, your ruin?, Him, the one whom you call ‘father.’ No. To this horrendous blaspheme (To speak of (God or a sacred entity) in an irreverent, impious manner), to this insinuation of the most subtle diabolical astuteness, I reply. And I reply thus.

God put man to the test in order to confirm him in Grace. And this was for those who knew how to be just men even after one or more momentary fall, purified by a sincere repentance and by ardent charity. While for the rebellious Angels whose angelical nature was superior to that of humans - so much that it is said of Christ, ‘You have made him a little lower than the angels’ - there was neither a promise of forgiveness for them, nor immutability of however much was fit in them to be brought back to their original beatific condition through perfect contrition and perfect love, for man, there was all this and even more: the voices of the Patriarchs and Prophets reconfirming the promise of the Redeemer contained in the Book of Genesis, the revelations of God through His manifestations and inspirations to the Patriarchs, to Moses - the liberator and legislator of the Hebrew people - to Joshua, to the Prophets, and culminating in a prodigy of the donation, teachings and immolations of the Son of God.

Never did God take away the predestination of Grace for all men. Never. Because God is not fickle in His wills, and that which He wills once, He wills forever, for however much depends on His will. Never, for as far as God did not act as He had acted by ‘hoping’ as it is inappropriately written, but by ‘knowing,’ God ignores nothing. Therefore, hoping is denied to Him. Whoever ignores the future of everything and of individuals, hopes. Not one who, like God, ignores nothing and knows everything, from His Eternity to the destiny of everyone.

Therefore, it is to be said and believed that God subjected creation to the test, in its most perfect creature, fully knowing that it would have sinned with pride and rebellion due to the vanity of wanting to become like God, yet wanting to give it the measureless measure of His love for men.

Before the creation of man, and therefore of the trial, God had already established the Means with which man would have been free at the start from the servitude of corruption and then given the joy of the glorious liberty of the children of God, having attained his share of the inheritance in the celestial Kingdom. Therefore, God did not want your fall, or your weakness, or your ruin. But by wanting to give to Himself a population of children, He created you, and knowing that you would not have persevered in Grace, even before creating you, He preordained the most Holy Means, none holier and more powerful, in order to save you and give you your share in His Kingdom. Therefore, even here, one can say that the infinite and insatiable Love of God for men, His adopted children, shines in all its truth.”

**The Real Consequences of Original Sin**

MV - Epistle of St Paul to the Romans: 132-135

Jesus speaks: “To fully understand the words of Paul, one needs to take Original Sin well into consideration.

A lesson that has been given many times, but that is never given enough because the sorrowful reality of that sin and the sorrowful, real consequences of it are often denied or are placed in doubt by many, by too many. And amongst these, there are
plenty of those who more than anyone else should be convinced of the reality of original sin and of its consequences on account of the studies carried out, and above all, through their ministerial experience which continuously place before their wise eyes the decadence of man, who from a perfect creature has mutated into a weak and imperfect creature against the assaults of Satan, and of what is around and within man, the marvelous creation enviously disturbed by the Enemy of God because of original sin.

Someone will say, ‘A lesson which repeats itself, and therefore, a useless lesson.’ It is always useful, for when it is required, you never know enough, neither for yourselves nor for others.

It matters too much to Satan that you not know it! And for this reason, he creates blurs in you to darken your correct knowledge of this episode which has had no end or limit since the day in which he saw it and in those who committed it, but that, as through the seed and through blood all men have inherited life (existence) from Adam and Eve – and in the last man to be born on Earth, there will still be the descendancy of the two First Humans – thus, out of a fatal inheritance, it propagates itself from Adam, the first generator, from progeny to progeny, to all the children of man until the last one to be generated.

To thoroughly understand the confession of Paul, the desolate voice of all men who in wanting to do good perfectly feel incapable of executing it with the desired perfection, one needs to contemplate the fruit of the Sin first, and therefore, also of the first Sin, so as not to find condemnation and the consequences unjust.

Paul confesses, ‘I am carnal, sold and subject to sin.’ And he continues, ‘I do not know what I do; for I do not the good which I will, but the evil which I hate. Even if then I do what I will not, I acknowledge just the same that the law is good (in prohibiting or commanding what it prohibits and commands), however, (when I do the evil which I hate with my better part, whereas I do not the good that I would like to do) I am not, in these moments, I who act, but sin that lives in me. Good does not live in my flesh. The will to do it is present in me, but I cannot find the way of accomplishing it. When I have a will to do good, according to the inward man, but I see in my members another law which opposes itself to the law of my mind and it makes me a captive to the law of sin that is in my members.

‘I am carnal.’ Even Adam was formed of flesh besides the spirit. But he wasn’t carnal since the spirit and reason ruled above matter. And the innocent spirit, full of Grace had an admirable resemblance with His Creator, intelligent enough to comprehend how much he surpasses all natural things. The elevation of man to the supernatural order, that is, to the progeny of God by means of Grace, had elevated the intelligence of man, already very vast on account of the preternatural gift of innate knowledge and ability, therefore, of understanding all natural things, to the supernatural intelligence of being able to comprehend what is incomprehensible to one who is not predisposed by supernatural gift: of being able to comprehend God, and to a lesser extent, of being able to be a faithful image from every humiliating restriction.

Splendid freedom of man full of grace! A freedom respected by God Himself, a freedom not under minded by exterior forces or by internal stimuli. The sublime regality of the deified man, a son of God and heir to Heaven, a dominating regality upon all creatures and upon the one who is often now your tyrant: the I in which the poisons of the great wound ferment unceasingly within you.

When one says, ‘man, king of the sensible creation, was created with the power of dominion upon all creatures,’ one needs to reflect that he, because of Grace, and for the other gifts received from the first moment of his being, was made to be king even of himself and of his instincts, out of knowledge of his ultimate purpose, for the love that
made him supernaturally tend towards it, and for the dominion over matter and the senses existing in it. Joined to the Order and love of the Love, he was created to know how to give to God what He is due and what is lawful to give to the ‘I’ without debaucheries or instinctual dissoluteness. The spirit, intellect, and matter constituted a total harmony in him, and this harmony was present from the first moment of his being, not in successive phases as some want to believe.”

**Advanced Civilizations between the time period of Adam and Noah**

**Celestial and Mathematical Precision in Ancient Architecture**

by MELISSA HIEBERT – http://old.worldmysteries.com/alignments/mpl_al1.htm#CELESTIAL

“Many ancient ruins demonstrate that the people who constructed them had not only a special regard for celestial bodies and mathematics, but also a spot-on accuracy. From Egypt to Mexico, there is no doubt that past civilizations were involved in incredibly complex space calculations, mathematics and architectural endeavors. Although many historians and archaeologists debate exactly what these civilizations did intentionally and what they did by mere chance, here are a few examples of how ancient architecture was created with mathematics and the cosmos in mind.

In Giza there are many examples of attention to spatial coordinates. For instance, the Great Pyramid’s faces are aligned with the four cardinal directions almost perfectly. In fact, they are less than 0.2 of a degree off. The pyramid is very precise, with the corners as little as two seconds of a degree (with 60 seconds in a minute of a degree, and 60 minutes in a degree) off of a 90-degree angle. In addition to this (although contested), the pyramids at Giza seem to match the stars of Orion’s belt with a certain precision.

The Site of Teotihuacan, “The Pyramid of the Sun,” as it has been dubbed, demonstrates advanced math. The pyramid’s base has a perimeter of 2932.8 feet, while the pyramid has a height of about 233.5 feet. If we take the ratio of base to height, we get about 12.56, or rather, 4p. Although to some this is thought to be a coincidence, the pyramid’s actual ratio is less than 0.05 per cent off of the true value for 4p.

The ancient Mayan site of Chichen Itza exemplifies the culture’s celestial orientation. The huge step pyramid (the pyramid of Kukulcan) that is the focus of the site has 91 steps on each of its sides, which add up to 364 steps. Adding the platform on top, there are 365 steps in total — the number of days in a year. Also, on the vernal and autumnal equinoxes (the first day of spring and fall, when day and night are the same
length of time), the sunlight works to create a shadow of a giant serpent on the staircase that faces north.

A building called the Caracol, believed to have served as an observatory, is also found at the site of Chichen Itza. The windows are set up to align with certain points of interest. Although the top is damaged, remaining windows point to the northern- and southern-most positions of Venus, the position of sunset on the Equinoxes, and the corners of the building itself point to the sunrises and sets of the solstices.

The Mayans had a sophisticated calendar, losing only one day in 6000 years. Their predictions of solar and lunar eclipses were incredibly accurate. As many have heard, they predicted a date that they believed would be the end of the world. This date, translated to our calendar, is on December 23, 2012. Although unlikely, the world is predicted to suddenly end in about seven years (if we have just translated the meaning of their calendar correctly).

The Mayans did have some rationale behind this number. This date marks the time in the processional cycle of the earth that we will move out of the constellation of Pisces and on to the age of Aquarius.

What is global precession? I’m glad you asked. Everyone knows that the earth spins on its axis while it revolves around the sun. Most remember from grade 10 science class that the earth’s axis is not perfectly vertical, but rather tilted about 23.5 degrees. However, the axis is not always this way, as it slowly varies from about 24.5 degrees to 22.1 degrees, making a complete cycle every 41,000 years.

While it is moving in this way, due to varying gravitational forces, the axis wobbles (processes) in a clockwise circle. Just imagine the way the axis of a top spins as it begins to fall. So, the angle of the earth stays the same (or somewhere within its three degree variance), but the direction in which it points changes. For example, our current North Star is Polaris (or Ursae Minoris), as the North Pole points towards this star. However, approximately 13,000 years ago, the North Pole would have pointed towards the star Vega, as it will do again in about another 13,000 years. It takes about 25,776 years to complete one processional cycle.

Anyone ever heard of the song “Age of Aquarius”? Well, this is in reference to the earth’s processional cycle. Presently we are in the age of Pisces, which means that when the sun rises on the vernal equinox it rises in the direction that the constellation of Pisces is in the sky. However, due to precession, every 2160 years on the vernal equinox the sun rises in a different constellation. As mentioned above, we will be moving out of the age of Pisces and into the age of Aquarius around the end of 2012.

So, the Mayans figured there was something important to the changing of ages, hence their predicted death date. However, they are not the only ones who seem to have taken certain numbers into account. The perimeter of the Great Pyramid at Giza is approximately 3,023 feet and the height is 481 feet. In addition to exemplifying a ratio of exactly 2p, its measurements are said to possibly represent the Northern Hemisphere of the earth, on a scale of 1 : 43,200. Though controversial, some interpret this number as exactly 20 times the processional number of 2160, representing the precession of the earth through 20 different zodiac constellations or ‘ages.’

These examples of processional numbers, mathematics and celestial orientations found in ancient structures by no means scratch the surface of all of the occurrences (or at least, proposed occurrences) present at various historical sites, and even in cultural songs and myths. Whether or not various theories or speculations concerning these spectacular constructions are true or not (and we may never know), the meticulous precision that was put into planning, calculating and building them is hard to ignore, not to mention awe-inspiring. And we think we’re advanced..."
The Prehistoric Alignment of World Wonders
Ref: By JIM ALISON - http://home.hiwaay.net/~jalison/index.html

"Did you know that ancient sites like Easter Island, Nazca, Ollantaytambo, Paratoari, Tassili n’Ajjer and the Pyramids of Giza are all aligned on a single great circle? There is a mind-boggling connection among ancient structures that is indicative of a far greater meaning than we were aware of.

There have been numerous theories that ancient structures around the globe were specifically positioned by its ancient builder’s thousands of years ago. Perhaps one of the best examples –according to many— is the Great Pyramid of Giza and its curious position on Earth. For those of you who didn’t know, the Great Pyramid of Giza is the most accurately aligned structure in existence and faces true north with only 3/60th of a degree of error. Furthermore, the weight of the pyramid is estimated at 5,955,000 tons. Multiplied by 10^8 gives a reasonable estimate of the earth’s mass. As you can see, ancient structures were built with a mind-boggling precision.

But the Pyramids at the Giza plateau do not stand solitary on Earth. In fact, there are countless other sites that seem to be connected somehow. If you take a look at other ancient sites like the Nazca Lines, Machu Picchu, Easter Island, Mohenjo Daro, and Tassili n’Ajjer among others and draw down their position on a map, you will notice a connection that points perhaps towards an ancient ‘code’ embedded within these structures.

As is noted by world-mysteries.com, ancient sites like Giza, Siwa, Tassili n’Ajjer, Paratoari, Ollantaytambo, Machupicchu, Nazca, Easter Island, Aneityum Island, Preah Vihear, Sukhothai, Pyay, Khajuraho, Mohenjo Daro, Persepolis, Ur, Petra are shown clockwise from Giza on the equal azimuthal projection. The projection is centered on the axis point in southeastern Alaska. Distances to any location from the center of an equal azimuthal projection are equally scaled. Since all of the sites on the great circle alignment are equally distant from the axis point at one-quarter of the circumference of the earth, the alignment forms a perfect circle halfway between the center and the outer edge of the projection.

Furthermore, the alignment of these sites is easily observable on a globe of the Earth with a horizon ring. If you line up any two of these sites on the horizon ring, all of the sites will be right on the horizon ring:

Start on the Equator, at the mouth of the Amazon River, at 49° 17′ West Longitude; go to 30° 18′ North Latitude, 40° 43′ East Longitude, in the Middle East, which is the maximum latitude the line touches; then go to the Equator at 130° 43′ East Longitude, near the Northwest tip of New Guinea; then to 30° 18′ South Latitude, 139° 17′ West Longitude, in the South Pacific; and then back to 49° 17′ West Longitude, at the Equator.

As you can see, there seems to be a connection among all of the above structures that form –to the surprise of many— a massive circle encompassing all major archaeological sites on planet Earth. How this is possible remains a profound enigma.

Were the ancient’s trying to tell future generations something? “
Man Begins Again

“Prior to recorded history many millennia ago there once existed an extremely advanced civilization on the face of the earth. Global in scale, it was highly evolved in science and technology, and also spirituality.

As time passed though, due to corruption, war, and celestial catastrophe, this ancient civilization was all but wiped out. Only a remnant remained, mostly composed of the unlettered and the uncultured, as the ancient Greek philosopher Plato recorded. Civilization had thus to begin all over again.”

The Ark of Noah
MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul:104

“The ark of Noah did not save all men but those amongst whom God found to be just in His presence.

*I will set my rainbow amongst the clouds ... and I will remember my covenant.*

Even in the present hour, an hour that rises and which has to pass, and the more it advances, the more it shall be darkened by the storm clouds, the Ark of God will not be able to save all men, but because men, many men, will not want to be saved by finding salvation by means of the Ark of God.

The rainbow after the flood was seen only by the few just ones who had remained alive on Earth. In the present hour instead, Mary, the rainbow, the sign of peace for a super abounding of mercy, will be seen by many who are not just. Her voice, Her perfume and Her prodigies will be noticed by the just and by sinners, and blessed those amongst these last ones who, as for the Rainbow of God the wrath of God is not unleashed, so too, to justice, to faith in Jesus in whom is salvation, will they turn?”

The Table of Nations - Genesis 10

Chapter 10 of Genesis talks about the Table of the Nations, which stem from the descendants of Noah’s sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, to whom sons were born after the flood. It was from the line of Shem that Abram, the father of Judaism, came into the world.

After the Flood, Noah’s family moved to the plain of Shinar (Samaria/Babylonia) which is where we find the rivers called Tigris and Euphrates. These are clearly not the same rivers that were destroyed in the Flood. The original rivers would have been buried under Flood-deposited layers of rock and debris several thousand feet deep containing billions of things killed by the Flood. These rivers were probably named after the original pre-Flood rivers, just as the early settlers from the British Isles to America applied familiar names to many places in their “New World.”

Scripture tells us that one river split into four (Gen 2:10). This is not what is found in the Middle East today. The Garden was destroyed by the Flood and its actual location on the globe can never be established.

Noah lived three hundred and fifty years after the flood. The whole lifetime of Noah was nine hundred and fifty years; then he died.

*When you follow the line from Shem you will discover that when Terah was seventy years old, he became the father of Abram. He also had two other sons called*
Nahor and Haran, and Haran became the father of Lot. Haran died before his father Terah, in his native land, in Ur of the Chaldeans. Abram and Nahor took wives; the name of Abram's wife was Sarai, and the name of Nahor's wife was Milcah, daughter of Haran, the father of Milcah and Iscah. Sarai was barren; she had no children.

Terah took his son Abram, his grandson Lot, son of Haran, and his daughter-in-law Sarai, the wife of his son Abram, and brought them out of Ur of the Chaldeans, to go to the land of Canaan. But when they reached Haran, they settled there.

The lifetime of Terah was two hundred and five years; then Terah died in Haran.

Descendants of Adam to Noah - Genesis 5

Adam to Noah Timeline

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Year</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adam</td>
<td>930</td>
<td>930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seth</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>1040</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enosh</td>
<td>367</td>
<td>1140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kenan</td>
<td>325</td>
<td>1235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mahalalel</td>
<td>695</td>
<td>1290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jared</td>
<td>660</td>
<td>1422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enoch</td>
<td>967</td>
<td>1657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methusaleh</td>
<td>687</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lamech</td>
<td>974</td>
<td>1651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noah</td>
<td>1056</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shem, Ham, Japheth</td>
<td>1536</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We do not want to add to Scripture what God does not tell us, but it is possible that the account of creation and the fall of man could have been recounted to Noah by several people, including his father, who could have heard about it first hand from Adam.

Again, the Bible doesn't tell us this, but it does help us understand how Noah would have been able to know and teach about it after the Flood.

Satan Splits and Divides - the Continent

Ref: Conchiglia - San Juan Diego July 10, 2014

God the Father is speaking: "God creates and combines Satan divides and seeks to destroy what God creates. So he did and does since the beginning of his "non serviam." In the Beginning Planet Earth was configured from a single land mass surrounded and embraced by the water and life proliferated in every sense and language spread common to all. Then, the continents took shape, because of the wickedness of beings servants of Satan divided one from the other, now distant from the other, the continents were surrounded by water and a large part of Humanity perished. They were
lost their knowledge as well, other languages were invented and men no longer understand each other. In this terrible phase, Satan does not realize immediately that he contributed to eliminate from the face of the Earth most of Hybridized Humanity as it was in the Project of God.

However, every nation has a different idea about its origin, its emergence and its concept of God. And neither does it lack teachers which descend from above, so that people also perceive their earthly task to strive towards an as yet unknown Deity, to call upon it and to endeavor to live in a good and righteous way. And as soon as they develop divine love, unselfish neighborly love, within themselves, their thinking will also come close to the truth. Yet time and again it has to be emphasized that all nations endorse different schools of thought but that the knowledge about Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation has to be taken to every single nation so that their liberation from the body can still be completed on earth. And although the various schools of thought and religions do not match each other, the teaching of love in each one will nevertheless be the decisive factor, and maturity will be attained by the one who lives up to love, and the disposition for this is indeed inherent in every nation. But people will intensify and deepen their contact with each other around the world and that also means that they can all be informed of Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation, so that He can be acknowledged and the dedication to Him can follow, which then will also lead to unity with Me, to the return to Me, and that release from the physical form will be guaranteed, so that the once fallen original spirit reaches its goal and returns home again into its Father’s house to be blissfully happy, as it was in the beginning.”

**Jurassic**

Intense and widespread rifting activity causes the mid-ocean-ridges to swell, which in turn displaces much of the ocean’s waters onto the continents. With much of the land flooded there is little source for terrestrial sediments, instead plankton deposit extensive chalks over much of the continental shelves. The North Atlantic begins to open just west of Britain.

Ref: [http://www.discoveringfossils.co.uk/how_britain_formed.htm](http://www.discoveringfossils.co.uk/how_britain_formed.htm)

**Satan Splits and Divides – the language of man**

Genesis 11:1-9 – Message from Conchiglia to Pope Benedict XVI Dec 29th, 2011

The Tower of Babel: The whole world spoke the same language, using the same words. While men were migrating in the east, they came upon a valley in the land of Shinar and settled there. They said to one another, “Come, let us mold bricks and harden them with fire.” They use bricks for stone, and bitumen for mortar. Then they said, “Come, let us build ourselves a city and a tower with its top in the sky, and so make a name for ourselves: otherwise we shall be scattered all over the earth.”
The Lord came down to see the city and the tower that the men had built. Then the Lord said: “If now, while they are one people, all speaking the same language, they have started to do this, nothing will later stop them from doing whatever they presume to do. Let us then go down and there confuse their language, so that one will not understand what another says.” Thus the Lord scattered them from there all over the earth, and they stopped building the city. That is why it was called Babel, because there the Lord confused the speech of all the world. It was from that place that he scattered them all over the earth.

Conchiglia message: “Meditating on the Revelation that I have received and confronting it with chapter of Genesis, I find that the interpretation in the Bible is mistaken, in the notes it is written: collective fault, arrogance’s fault. “The Lord that came down to see the city,” it is not God, like implied, but Satan. (The Lord of the Earth is Satan because God’s Kingdom is not of this earth.) I suggest seeing the original text of the Sacred Writings and the subsequent translations again. Only a false god, Satan, had been able to punish those men that only wanted to be given a name for not being dispersed on the whole earth.

It is written that those men migrated, when you migrate it is to escape from one's own country. Those men have migrated since they were in danger or they were experiencing serious difficulties to live, for example: wars, epidemics, food shortages etc. thus, they have migrated to find another place where to live and survive.

Indeed it is written that those men migrated and they found a plain and they settled down. Their intention therefore was just not being dispersed, to be united among them, to build a city and a tower. The city served them to be organized and to be protected since the union makes force, and the tower served them to sight the enemies from the high, the same ones that have forced them to migrate. Successively the tower would also have been good to sight to eventually other thieves.

“Come let us confuse their language so they will not understand each other” The Lord God, doesn’t want the confusion and create division between his children but the unit and the concord (peaceful treaty) among them. Satan is the one that divides. Indeed after the Lord came down to see the city, and it confused the language of the whole earth, the union of the languages will only be restored in Christ the Savior with the miracle of languages mentioned on Pentecost, Act 2:5-12, and this is in accordance with Revelation.”

The Mystery of the Tower of Babel - Solved
Ref: Message from Conchiglia to Pope Benedict XVI Dec 29th, 2011

Jesus is speaking: “The language comes from the Word that is a gift from God to man. It is one of Humanity’s bigger misfortunes. The many languages have caused division among all the men of Planet Earth. The many languages have been and are the cause of Humanity’s involvion (making something complicated) and the slowness of the diffusion of scientific involvion and historical discoveries.

Because of the many languages even I, Jesus, have not been known to all men of Planet Earth. Only imagine in how many languages the Sacred Book is published. However, the Sacred Book has not been translated for all the peoples of Earth. Satan has worked very well to divide People and Nations.

Just imagine how communication had been to any part of the World through the current media. Even the current “frequencies” to your disposition are primitive with regard to those that the Potent of the World use and to which you are not allowed to accede (to attain an important and powerful position). The scientific and historical...
knowledge and discoveries have reached a more advanced state than what has been said. They hide from you everything to maintain your ignorance since they are afraid of losing their privileges acquired through their power.

For a long time you had been able to reach a much more advanced age before “the end of life” on Earth. You had been able to enjoy many benefits in each social environment. You had been able to work less and there was work for all. You had been able to have so much free time to be devoted to Me, to yourselves and your family. You had been able to study and learn and to be surrounded by the most useful and more beautiful things.

On the other hand look at yourself and then look around! The desolation surrounds you on each side, and all the benefits are used by the potent ones that use you as workers for their personal interests. You are only work meat for them. You still are slaves of a system that they still want to improve by imposing a system with more and more sophisticated control so that you can’t ever escape to the most minimum control. They have stolen your freedom and still they will steal you more so they can steal your life and mainly you’re Soul.

My children and brothers many times I have said it, don’t allow them to steal your Soul for life, remember your Soul is Eternal.”

NOTE: The language of man comes from the Word that is a gift from God to man. The reference of God in the scriptural verse is not the God of Heaven but the god of the earth “Lucifer.” It’s out of Lucifer’s evil that the confusion of tongues began. This confusion gives rise to the ancient practice of master masons conversing with symbols without the use of languages. The evil was not in the building of the tower, but in the confusing of the languages and speech. It is one of Humanity’s bigger misfortunes. The many languages have caused division among all the men of Planet Earth. This division of language was Satins plan to create a great Masonic enterprise that would begin the introduction of secret symbols into religion that would lead to todays formation of the “One World Religion of Man” that is not from God.

**Abraham’s Call and Migration - Genesis 12**

Abram was called by God and the Lord said to Abram: “Go forth from the land of your kinsfolk and from your father’s house to a land that I will show you.”

I will make of you a great nation (Israel), and I will bless you; I will make your name great, so that you will be a blessing.

*I will bless those who bless you and curse those who curse you.* All the communities of the earth shall find blessings in you.

After Abram and Lot departed, the Lord said to Abram: “Look about you, and from where you are, gaze to the north and south, east and west; all the land that you see I will give to you and your descendants forever. I will make your descendants like the dust of the earth; if anyone could count the dust of the earth, your descendants too might be counted. Set forth and walk about in the land, through its length and breadth, for to you I will give it.” Abram moved his tents and went on to settle near the terebinth of Mamre, which is at Hebron. There he built an altar to the Lord.
Abraham’s Covenant with God - Genesis 16, 17, & 19

A depiction of Hagar, the Egyptian, and Ishmael in the desert by François-Joseph Navez

The future troops that will do battle for Good or Evil is being set in place with the covenant that God makes with Abraham.

Abram’s wife Sarai had born him no children. She had, however, an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar. Sarai said to Abram: “The Lord has kept me from bearing children. Have intercourse, then, with my maid; perhaps I shall have sons through her.” Abram heeded Sarai’s request. When she became aware of her pregnancy, she looked on her mistress with disdain. So Sarai said to Abram: “You are responsible for this outrage against me. I myself gave my maid to your embrace, but ever since she became aware of her pregnancy, she has been looking on me with disdain. May the Lord decide between you and me!” Abram told Sarai: “Your maid is in your power. Do to her whatever you please.” Sarai then abused her so much that Hagar ran away from her.

The Lord’s messenger found her by a spring in the wilderness, the spring on the road to Shur, and asked, “Hagar, maid of Sarai, where have you come from and where are you going?” She answered, “I am running away from my mistress, Sarai.” But the Lord’s messenger told her: “Go back to your mistress and submit to her abusive treatment. I will make your descendants so numerous,” added the Lord’s messenger, “that they will be too many to count.” Besides, the Lord’s messenger said to her: “You are now pregnant and shall bear a son; you shall name him Ishmael, For the Lord has heard you. He will be a wild ass of a man, his hand against everyone, and everyone’s hand against him; In opposition to all his kin shall he encamp.”

Hagar bore Abram a son and Abram named the son whom Hagar bore him Ishmael. Abram was eighty-six years old when Hagar bore him Ishmael.

When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the Lord appeared to him and said: “I am God the Almighty. Walk in my presence and be blameless. Between you and me I will establish my covenant, and I will multiply you exceedingly.”

When Abram prostrated himself, God continued to speak to him: “My covenant with you is this: you are to become the father of a host of nations. No longer shall you be called Abram; your name shall be Abraham, for I am making you the father of a host of nations. I will render you exceedingly fertile; I will make nations of you; kings shall stem from you. I will maintain my covenant with you and your descendants after you throughout the ages as an everlasting pact, to be your God and the God of your descendants after you. I will give to you and to your descendants after you the land in which you are now staying, the whole land of Canaan, as a permanent possession; and I will be their God.”

God further said to Abraham: “As for your wife Sarai, do not call her Sarai; her name shall be Sarah. I will bless her, and I will give you a son by her. Him also will I bless; he shall give rise to nations, and rulers of peoples shall issue from him. Abraham prostrated himself and laughed as he said to himself, “Can a child be born to man who is a hundred years old? Or can Sarah give birth at ninety?”

Then Abraham said to God, “Let but Ishmael live on by your favor!” [Ishmael was Abraham’s son born from an Egyptian maidservant named Hagar] God replied: As for Ishmael (the new Cain), I will make him fertile and will multiply him exceedingly. He shall become the father of twelve chieftains, and I will make of him a great nation. (Arab Nations) “Nevertheless, your wife Sarah is to bear you a son and you shall call him Isaac.
I will maintain my covenant with him as an everlasting pact, to be his God and the God of his descendants after him.

Then the Lord said: “The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great, and their sin so grave, that I must go down and see whether or not their actions fully correspond to the cry against them that comes to me. I mean to find out.”

Then Abraham, knowing that his nephew Lot was living in Sodom, drew nearer to the Lord and said: “Will you sweep away the innocent with the guilty? Suppose there were fifty innocent people in the city; would you wipe out the place, rather than spare it for the sake of the fifty innocent people within it?” The Lord replied, “If I find fifty innocent people in the city of Sodom, I will spare the whole place for their sake.” Abraham continued to argue with the Lord and reduced the number to ten innocent people.

The Lord departed as soon as he had finished speaking with Abraham, and Abraham returned home.

Then the Lord said: “The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great, and their sin so grave, that I must go down and see whether or not their actions fully correspond to the cry against them that comes to me. I mean to find out.”

Then Abraham, knowing that his nephew Lot was living in Sodom, drew nearer to the Lord and said: “Will you sweep away the innocent with the guilty? Suppose there were fifty innocent people in the city; would you wipe out the place, rather than spare it for the sake of the fifty innocent people within it?” The Lord replied, “If I find fifty innocent people in the city of Sodom, I will spare the whole place for their sake.” Abraham continued to argue with the Lord and reduced the number to ten innocent people.

The Lord departed as soon as he had finished speaking with Abraham, and Abraham returned home.

Meanwhile, Lot who lived in the town of Sodom was visited by two angels. The angel said to Lot, “Who else belongs to you here? Your sons [sons-in-law] and your daughters and all who belong to you in the city-take them away from it! We are about to destroy this place, for the outcry reaching the Lord against those in the city is so great that he has sent us to destroy it.” So Lot went out and spoke to his sons-in-law, who had contracted marriage with his daughters. “Get up and leave this place,” he told them; “the Lord is about to destroy the city.” But his sons-in-law thought he was joking.

As dawn was breaking, the angels urged Lot on, saying, “On your way! Take with you your wife and your two daughters who are here, or you will be swept away in the punishment of the city.” When he hesitated, the men, by the Lord’s mercy, seized his hand and the hands of his wife and his two daughters and led them to safety outside the city. As soon as they had been brought outside, he was told: “Flee for your life! Don’t look back or stop anywhere on the Plain. Get off to the hills at once, or you will be swept away.”

MESSAGE FROM OUR LORD TO HIS BELOVED DAUGHTER
LUZ DE MARIA JANUARY 26, 2018
To be a believer it is not enough to say, “Lord, Lord!” (Mt 7,21). I have called you to obedience and you mock My Requests. Some who do not know Sacred Scripture do not know that only one family was freed from the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah: the family of Lot, a man who was pleasing in the eyes of My Father, being righteous (cf. II Peter 2,6-8). The obedience was imposed on him that no member of his family should look back, but his wife looked back and she herself stayed in her disobedience (cf. Gen 19:26).
The sun was just rising over the earth as Lot arrived in Zoar; at the same time the Lord rained down sulfurous fire upon Sodom and Gomorrah [from the Lord out of heaven]. He overthrew those cities and the whole Plain, together with the inhabitants of the cities and the produce of the soil. But Lot’s wife looked back, and she was turned into a pillar of salt. Early the next morning Abraham went to the place where he had stood in the Lord’s presence. As he looked down towards Sodom and Gomorrah and the whole region of the Plain, he saw dense smoke over the land rising like fumes from a furnace.

Thus it came to pass: when God destroyed the Cities of the Plain, he was mindful of Abraham by sending Lot away from the upheaval by which God overthrew the cities where Lot had been living.” Sodom & Gomorrah (Gen 18:19)

When Abram was ninety-nine years old, the Lord appeared to him and said: “I am God the Almighty. Walk in my presence and be blameless. Between you and me I will establish my covenant, and I will multiply you exceedingly.” Abram has now receives God’s mercy. “My covenant with you is this: you are to become the father of a host of nations. No longer shall you be called Abram; your name shall be Abraham, for I am making you the father of a host of nations.

God also said to Abraham: “As for your wife Sarai, do not call her Sarai; her name shall be Sarah. I will bless her, and I will give you a son by her. Him also will I bless; he shall give rise to nations, and rulers of peoples shall issue from him and you shall call him Isaac.

The Arab nations track their roots to Abraham’s first son Ishmael. However, as Abraham, his first son is called Isaac not Ishmael! Ishmael was born when Abraham was called Abram, which took place before Abraham received God’s mercy and blessing. Thus, the descendants of Ishmael (the Arab Nations) were born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai, Abram’s wife. Ishmael’s father was called Abram. It was only after God changed Abram’s name to Abraham that the blessing and promise was given to Abraham and passed to his son Isaac. Isaac fathers name is Abraham. Thus the children of the promise are from the line of Abraham and Sarah - Isaac, and Jacob which does not include the line of Ishmael the hybrid.

When God put his church in motion, he changed Simons name to Peter, when God called Saul into action to serve the Lord, he changed Saul’s name to Paul, and when God called Abram into action, He changed Abram’s name to Abraham.

The Test of Abraham: Genesis 22:1-19

Some time after these events, God put Abraham to the test. He called to him, “Abraham?” “Ready!” he replied. Then God said: “Take your son, Isaac, your only one, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah. There you shall offer him up as a holocaust on a height that I will point out to you.” Early the next morning Abraham saddled his donkey, took with him his son, Isaac, and two of his servants as well, with wood that he had cut for the holocaust, set out for the place of which God had told him.

On the third day Abraham got sight of the place from afar. Then he said to his servants: “Both of you stay here with the donkey, while the boy and I go on over yonder. We will worship and then come back to you.” Thereupon Abraham took the wood for the holocaust and laid it on his son Isaac’s shoulders, while he himself carried the fire and the knife. As the two walked on together, Isaac spoke to his father Abraham: “Father!” he said, “Yes,
son,” he replied. Isaac continued, “Here are the fire and wood, but where is the sheep for the holocaust?” “Son,” Abraham answered, “God himself will provide the sheep for the holocaust.” Then the two continued going forward.

When they came to the place of which God had told him, Abraham built an altar there and arranged the wood on it. Next he tied up his son Isaac, and put him on top of the wood on the altar. Then he reached out and took the knife to slaughter his son. But the Lord’s messenger called to him from heaven, “Abraham, Abraham!” “Yes, Lord,” he answered. “Do not lay your hand on the boy,” said the messenger. “Do not do the least thing to him. I know now how devoted you are to God, since you did not withhold from me your own beloved son.” As Abraham looked about, he spied a ram caught by its horns in the thicket. So he went and took the ram and offered it up as a holocaust in place of his son. Abraham named the site Yahweh-yireh; hence people now say, “On the mountain the Lord will see.”

Again the Lord’s messenger called to Abraham from heaven and said: “I swear by myself, declares the Lord, that because you acted as you did in not withholding from me your beloved son, I will bless you abundantly and make your descendants as countless as the stars of the sky and the sands of the seashore; your descendants shall take possession of the gates of their enemies, and in your descendants all nations of the earth shall find blessings – all this because you obeyed my command.”

Abraham then returned to his servants and they set out together for Beer-sheba, where Abraham made his home.

In this verse, you can see the similarities between Isaac and Jesus. In other words, Isaac was a prophetic representation of Jesus. This is why Jesus said, “Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw it and was glad,” (John 8:56). Abraham had, in a very real sense, seen the gospel presentation in the offering of his son, his "only beloved son." So, we see here that the term "only beloved son" is in reference to the unique son of God and Isaac was acting out the sacrifice of Christ, prophetically.

Jacobs Struggle with an Angel: Genesis 32:28

In the book of Genesis, chapter 32, Abrahams grandson Jacob (who’s father is Isaac), struggles with a man all night long until he is blessed. The man asks Jacob’s name, then tells him that his name is no longer Jacob, but Israel, because he has striven with God and with man. (Genesis 32:28) Jacob’s sons are the fathers of the 12 Hebrew tribes – referred to as the twelve tribes of Israel.

Therefore, we can definitively say that the word 'Israel', based on the Bible, means "He has striven with God."

Jacob moved the Hebrews to Egypt but then returned. Jacob’s son Joseph is sold to Egypt and it is there where Moses is born. ~1300 B.C.

The Descendants of Adam’s Children prefigures Abraham’s Children

Understanding the events of Cain and Abel will help us to understand what will follow from the sons of Abraham - Ishmael and Isaac. The descendants of Isaac who
believe in Jesus Christ, His teachings, and are part of the Mystical Body of Christ are considered children of the promise and heirs of the Kingdom.

Jesus is speaking: “Not all those who come from Israel are Israelites nor those born from the lineage of Abraham are all (his) children, but through Isaac shall your descendants be named. Therefore, the children of the flesh are not considered as children of the promise who are accounted as the descendants of Abraham.

There. It is again the free will of man that decides the future and eternal destiny. As it was through Adam’s will that made him fall, as it was through Cain’s will in becoming a fratricide and fugitive by giving origin to the children of the flesh, that is, to those who have come out of every law, moral as well. And so it was also the ill will of Ishmael that expelled him from the tribe of Abraham and into a generator of the children of the flesh rather than of God’s, because he had become joined to a woman from Egypt, that is, an idolatress.” Ref: MV - Epistle of St. Paul: 253

The descendants of Ishmael are all hybrids (the Arab Nations) and were born into slavery because they were descendants from Hagar, the Egyptian slave of Sarai, Abram’s wife. However, God showed mercy on Abram and his wife, blessed them, and changed their names to Abraham and Sarah who gave birth to Isaac. In order to deliver the descendants of Ishmael (the children of the flesh) from slavery, God sent his mercy, just like He did with Cain; in this example, God’s mercy was His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ. But just like Cain, the descendants of Ishmael rejected God’s mercy and refused to accept Christ. Instead, they embraced Satan just like Cain. As a consequence, they established their own religion which denies the Divinity of Christ and justifies the killing of anyone that believes that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Placing themselves above Christ, they formed their own religion which is called Islam, and was established in the year 666 AD.

Jesus continues to speak: “Even in the present hour, an hour that rises and which has to pass, and the more it advances, the more it shall be darkened by the storm clouds, the Ark of God will not be able to save all men, but because men, many men, will not want to be saved by finding salvation by means of the Ark of God.

The rainbow after the flood was seen only by the few just ones who had remained alive on Earth. In the present hour instead, Mary, the rainbow, the sign of peace for a super abounding of mercy, will be seen by many who are not just. Her voice, Her perfume, and Her prodigies will be noticed by the just and by sinners, and blessed those amongst these last ones who, as for the Rainbow of God, the wrath of God is not unleashed, so too, to justice, to faith in Jesus in whom is salvation, will they turn?” MV - Lessons on the Epistles of St Paul:104

Jesus is speaking: “The end will be like the beginning. The circle is coming together, grafting the two murky unfinished works to one another. The new flood, in other words God’s wrath, will come in another form. But it will still be wrath. Faithful to My word, I will not send the flood anymore. But I will let the satanic forces send the flood of satanic cruelties.” Ref: MVET: 134

The World’s Hatred

In the book of John 15:18-27, 16:1-4 Jesus warns us about the pending darkness, an hour that rises and has to pass, that will take place between the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac: Whoever hates me also hates my Father. If I had not done works among them that no one else ever did, they would not have sin; but as it is, they have seen and hated both me and my Father. But in order that the word written in the law might be fulfilled, “They hated me without cause.” that’s because they have not known either the Father
or me. I have told you this so that when their hour comes you may remember that I told you. They will expel you from the synagogues; in fact, the hour is coming when everyone who kills you will think he is offering worship to God. They will do this because they have not known either the Father or Me. I have told you this so that when their hour comes you may remember that I told you.

Do Not Throw This Freedom Away - Galatians 4:8-31

Jesus also says: You, my brothers, are children of the promise, as Isaac was. But just as in those days the son born in nature’s course persecuted the one whose birth was in the realm of spirit, so do we find it now. What does Scripture say on this point? “Cast out slave girl and son together; for the slave girl’s son shall never be an air on equal terms with the son” of the one born free.

Therefore, my brothers, we are not children of a slave girl but of a mother who is free. It was for liberty that Christ freed us.

The events that took place between Cain and Abel pre-figure the events that will take place in our times between the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac – the children of the promise. Cain, who was led by Satan to kill his brother, will be the same, magnified in time, for the descendants of Ishmael – the children of the flesh who have refused God’s Mercy. They will be led by the Antichrist and Satan to wage war against the One True Church of Christ and will persecute the children of God throughout the world. It will be the time of the Antichrist, combined with the horrible abomination and desolation of the Blessed Sacrament that brings God’s wrath to destroy all evil. The time of the Antichrist will be so intense that only a small remnant of God’s children will remain faithful to Christ and His Church. Jesus is speaking: “It will be just like it was in the time of Noah, to keep the branch of the children of God from being entirely corrupted by the branch of the children of man – God sent the universal deluge to extinguish men’s lust under the weight of the waters and destroy the monsters begotten by lust of the godless, insatiable in sensuality because they were aroused by the fires of Satan. Only this time, God will withdraw his graces, and man filled with satanic cruelties, will destroy himself.” Only the faithful remnant, the children of God that are marked with the sign of Christ and survive this battle, will hear the voice of the Lord calling them to enter into the Eternal Jerusalem.

The Genealogy of Jesus - Matthew 1:1-17

In the book of Matthew (Matt. 1) it lists the genealogy of Jesus, and as you can see, it took generations of people and time before the Redemptive period could take place. Some had a big role others had a small role but they all had a part in preparing the way for the coming of the Lord. The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham is as follows:

Abraham became the father of Isaac, Isaac the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Judah and his brothers. Judah became the father of Perez and Zerah, whose mother was Tamar. Perez became the father of Hezron, Hezron the father of Amminadab. Amminadab became the father of Nahshon, Nahshon the father of Salmon, Salmon the father of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab. Boaz became the father of Obed, whose mother was Ruth. Obed became the father of Jesse, Jesse the father of David the king.

David became the father of Solomon, whose mother had been the wife of Uriah, Solomon became the father of Rehoboam, Rehoboam the father of Abijah, Abijah the father of Asaph. Asaph became the father of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat the father of Joram, Joram the father of Uzziah, Uzziah became the father of Jotham, Jotham the
father of Ahaz, Ahaz the father Hezekiah. Hezekiah became the father of Manasseh, Manasseh the father of Amos, Amos the father of Josiah. Josiah became the father of Jechoniah and his brothers at the time of the Babylonian exile.

After the Babylonian exile, Jechoniah became the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel the father of Zerubbabel, Zerubbabel the father of Abiud. Abiud became the father of Eliakim, Eliakim the father of Azor, Azor the father of Zadok. Zadok became the father of Achim, Achim the father of Eliud, Eliud the father of Eleazar. Eleazar became the father of Matthan, Matthan the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Joseph, the husband of Mary. Of her was born Jesus who is called the Messiah.

Thus the total number of generations from Abraham to David is fourteen generations; from David to the Babylonian exile, fourteen generations; from the Babylonian exile to the Messiah, fourteen generations. (42 in all)

The Numbers 14 and 42

[Note: When Matthew describes the Genealogy of Jesus he mentions the number fourteen - three times. This number equates to forty-two; there is a hidden meaning within these numbers. Within the number fourteen, there are two sevens. Seven represents perfection and completion as mentioned in the seventh day of creation. The seventh day completes the first creation. The eighth day begins the new creation which represents the second seven. Thus, the work of creation culminates in the great work of redemption. The first creation finds its meaning and its summit in the new creation, in Christ, the splendor of which surpasses that of the first creation. Since fourteen is mentioned three times, you would end up with six sevens. The seventh seven represents to us that a new day has dawned, the day of Christ’s Resurrection, and His victory over death.

The number forty-two represents the forty-two month (1260 days) reign of the Antichrist. Jesus has come to destroy the Antichrist and all evil on earth before the Kingdom of the Spirit, The Kingdom of God, can descend from Heaven and enter into the hearts of the Elect that are saved.]

However, there is still one question that needs to be answered. How did God’s plan take place if we are all descendants of Adam and Eve, and born with original sin? How was it possible for Mary, the Mother of Jesus, to be conceived without the stain of original sin? The Lord could not enter the womb of Mary if the Devil had already contaminated her with the scar of original sin. The answer to this question is revealed in the next chapter where the Lord will share with the Church the mystery of the “Immaculate Conception of Mary” and the beginning of: The Messianic Cycle - Vol. 2

Mystery of Noah’s Ark

When God created the animals, he created them whole as male and female which were commissioned to go and populate the earth. The question is: Why did God ask Noah to go and build an Ark, which took about a hundred years, so He could save two species of each animal type that would be used to populate the earth after the flood? What was so special about these animals that warranted them to be spared from the flood when God could have just created new animals when the water subsided?
The Blessed Mother is speaking: “Beloved sons, in silence and in prayer, spend with me the final hours of this year which is about to end. Do not spend them in dissipation and entertainment, as so many of my children do.

This year has been particularly important for my plan. You are now entering into my times. For this, I have traced out for you a light-filled way, along which all of you must walk, in order to live the consecration which you have made to my Immaculate Heart.

All has been revealed to you: my plan has been prophetically announced to you at Fatima, and during these years, I have been carrying it out through my Marian Movement of Priests. This has been revealed to you in its gradual preparation.

This century of yours, which is about to end, has been placed under the sign of a strong power conceded to my Adversary. Thus, humanity has been led astray by the error of theoretical and practical atheism; in the place of God, idols have been built, which everyone adores: pleasures, money, amusement, power, pride, and impurity.

Truly Satan, with the cup of lust, has succeeded in seducing all the nations of the earth. He has replaced love with hatred; communion with division; justice with many injustices; peace with continuous war. In fact, this entire century has been spent under the sign of cruel and bloody wars, which have claimed millions of innocent victims.

So then, the Most Holy Trinity has decreed that your century be placed under the sign of my powerful, maternal and extraordinary presence. Thus, at Fatima I pointed out the way along which humanity must journey for its return to the Lord: that of conversion, prayer, and penance. And as a safe refuge, I offered you my Immaculate Heart.

All has been revealed to you: my plan has been pointed out to you even in its painful realization. Humanity has fallen under the domination of Satan and of his great power, exercised with the satanic and Masonic forces; my Church has become obscured by his smoke, which has penetrated into it. Errors are being taught and propagated, causing many to lose true faith in Christ and in his Gospel; the holy Law of God is openly violated; sin is committed, divine presence is lost; unity is deeply split apart by a strong contestation directed against the Magisterium, and especially against the Pope; and the wound caused by painful lacerations becomes ever wider.

In order to give the suffering and crucified Church of your time my motherly help, and a safe refuge, I have brought the Marian Movement of Priests into being and have spread it through every part of the world by means of my book, which traces out for you
the road along which you must journey in order to spread my light. With this book, I teach you to live the consecration to my Immaculate Heart with the simplicity of children, in a spirit of humility, of poverty, of trust, and of filial abandonment.

I have now been guiding you for twenty-five years, with the words which I have spoken to the heart of this, my little son, whom I have chosen as an instrument for the realization of my maternal plan. During these years I myself have carried him several times to every part of the world, and he has allowed himself to be led with docility, small and fearful, but totally abandoned to me, like a little baby in the arms of his mother.

As of now, all that I had to say to you has been said, because all has been revealed to you. Therefore, on this night, there comes to an end, the public messages which I have been giving you for twenty-five years; now you must meditate on them, live them and put them into practice. Then the words which I have caused to come down from my Immaculate Heart, as drops of heavenly dew upon the desert of your life, so threatened by snares, will produce fruits of grace and holiness.

All has been revealed to you: my plan has been foretold to you especially in its wonderful and victorious fulfillment. I have announced to you the triumph of my Immaculate Heart in the world. In the end my Immaculate Heart will triumph.

This will come about in the greatest triumph of Jesus, who will bring into the world his glorious reign of love, of justice, and of peace, and will make all things new.”
Mary’s Call to Repentance

- Be reconciled with the Lord: go to confession at least once a month
- Attend mass as often as possible: at least every Sunday
- Say the Rosary and the Chaplet of Divine Mercy daily
- Fast twice a weak on Wednesday and Friday
- Spend time with Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament
- Read the Scripture daily
- Perform acts of Charity and Mercy daily
- Consecrate your life to Jesus through Mary

Our Lady of Fatima Message

“I want you to continue saying the Rosary every day. (October 13, 1917).”

Our Lady requests the recitation of the Rosary because it is a prayer that can daily draw us nearer to God—a prayer directed to the Blessed Trinity, which is not only Marian but Biblical and Eucharistic as well.

For in the course of each decade, we say the “Glory be to the Father and to the Son and to the Holy Ghost,” the “Our Father,” which Christ taught us as the prayer to be directed with confidence to the Eternal Father, and the “Hail Mary,” which is a prayer that both praises God and pleads with Him through Mary’s intercession. “Hail Mary full of grace, the Lord is with thee. Blessed art thou among women and blessed is the fruit of thy womb, Jesus.” Thus we salute Mary in the context of the mystery of our Redemption wrought in her by God—the mystery by which she became the Mother of God, Mother of the Church and Mother of men.

Finally, Mary was the first tabernacle wherein the Eternal Father enclosed His Word—the first monstrance and the first altar whereon Our Lord is forever exposed to our loving adoration.

At the Hour of Your Death

Ref. MMP:481

“How many times, as you recite the holy rosary, have you repeated this prayer to me: ‘Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners, now and at the hour of our death!’ This is an invocation which I listen to with great joy, and it is always heard by me. If, as Mother, I am close to each one of my children at the hour of death, I am especially close to you who, through your consecration, have always lived in the secure refuge of my Immaculate Heart.

At the hour of your death, I am close to you, with the splendor of my glorified body; I receive your souls into my motherly arms, and I bring them before my Son, Jesus, for his particular judgment.

Think of how joyful must be the meeting of Jesus with those souls who are presented to Him by his very own Mother! This is because I cover them with my beauty; I give them the perfume of my holiness, the innocence of my purity, the white robe of my charity; and where there remains some stain, I run my motherly hand over it to wipe it away and to give you that brightness which makes it possible for you to enter into the eternal happiness of paradise.

Blessed are those who die close to your heavenly Mother. Yes, blessed, because they die in the Lord, they will find rest from their labors, and their good deeds will follow them.

My beloved ones and children consecrated to my Immaculate Heart, today I invite you to enter into a great intimacy with me during your life, if you wish to experience the great joy of seeing me close to you and of welcoming your souls into my motherly arms, at the hour of your death.”
An act of Consecration to Jesus through Mary

According to: Saint Louis Marie de Montfort

Eternal and incarnate Wisdom, most lovable and adorable Jesus, true God and true man, only Son of the eternal Father and of Mary always Virgin, I adore you profoundly, dwelling in the splendor of your Father from all eternity, and in the virginal womb of Mary, you’re most worthy Mother, at the time of your Incarnation.

I thank you for having emptied yourself in assuming the condition of a slave to set me free from the cruel slavery of the evil one.

I praise and glorify you for having willingly chosen to obey Mary, your holy Mother, in all things, so that through her I may be your faithful slave of love.

But I must confess that I have not kept the vows and promises which I made to you so solemnly at my baptism. I have not fulfilled my obligations, and I do not deserve to be called your child or even your slave.

Since I cannot lay claim to anything except what merits your rejection and displeasure, I dare no longer approach the holiness of your majesty on my own. That is why I turn to the intercession and the mercy of your holy Mother, whom you yourself have given me to mediate with you. Through her I hope to obtain from you contrition and pardon for my sins, and that Wisdom, whom I desire, to dwell in me always.

I turn to you, then, Mary immaculate, living tabernacle of God, in whom Eternal Wisdom willed to receive the adoration of both men and angels. I greet you as Queen of Heaven and Earth, for all this is under God has been made subject to your sovereignty. I called upon you, the unfailing refuge of sinners, confident in your mercy that has never forsaken anyone.

Grant my desire for divine Wisdom and, in support of my petition, accept the promises and the offering of myself which I now make, conscious of my unworthiness.

I ____________________ (your name) an unfaithful sinner, renew and ratify today __________ (date) through you my baptismal promises. I renounce forever Satan, his empty promises, and his evil designs, and I give myself completely to Jesus Christ, the incarnate Wisdom, to carry my cross after him for the rest of my life, and to be more faithful to him than I have been till now.

This day, the whole court of heaven as witness, I choose you, Mary, as my Mother and Queen. I surrender and consecrate myself to you, body and soul, as your slave, with all that I possess, both spiritual and material, even including the value of all my good actions, past, present, and to come. I give you the full right to dispose of me and all that belongs to me, without any reservations, in whatever way you please, for the greater glory of God in time and throughout eternity.

Accept, gracious Virgin, this little offering of my slavery to honor and imitate the obedience which Eternal Wisdom willingly chose to have towards you, his Mother. I wish to acknowledge the authority which both of you have over this pitiful sinner. By it, I wish also to thank God for the privileges bestowed on you by the Blessed Trinity. I declared that for the future, I will try to honor and obey you in all things, as your true slave of love.

O admirable Mother, present me to your dear Son as his slave, now and for always, so that he who redeemed me through you, will now receive me through you.

Mother of Mercy, grant me the favor of obtaining the true wisdom of God, and so make me one of those whom you love, teach and guide, whom you nourish and protect as your children and slaves.

Virgin most faithful, make me in everything so committed a disciple, imitator, and slave of Jesus, your Son, incarnate Wisdom, that I may become, through your intercession and example, fully mature with the fullness which Jesus possessed on earth, and with the fullness of his glory in heaven. Amen.

Note: Once you have made this consecration, always try to remember the date so that you can renew the consecration each year on your anniversary. It is also recommended to use a feast day of our Lady which falls on: Feb 2nd, March 25th, April 28th, May 31st, Aug 15th, Dec 8th.
Reference Material

Reference Key
MV - Maria Valtorta
MV PMG – Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God
MV N 1943, 1944, 1945-50 – Maria Valtorta Note Books
MV ET – Maria Valtorta, End Times
MV ESP – Maria Valtorta, Lessons on the Epistle of St Paul to the Romans
MV Vol. 1-5 Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God
MMP (chapter) – Marian Movement of Priest, Rev Don Stefano Gobbi
MVVS – Maria Valtorta, Victim Souls
MDM - Maria of Divine Mercy
TLIG – True Life in God, Vassula Ryden
BD – Bertha Dudde
LDM – Luz De Maria
HFJ – Lily of the Holy Face of Jesus

Reference Books
• David Carlin, The Decline & Fall of the Catholic Church in America, Sophia Institute Press 2003
• David Michael Lindsey, The Woman and the Dragon Apparitions of Mary, Pelican Publishing Company 2000
• Francis Johnston, Fatima The Great Sign, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc.1980
• James P. Mahoney, D.D. Vicar General, NY, The Liturgy of the Hours, Catholic Book Publication 1975
• Little Pebble – visionary, www.littlepebble.org
• Luz De Maria – visionary http://www.revelacionesmarianas.com/english.htm
• Maria Valtorta, The Book of Azariah, Centro Editoriale Valtortiano srl., 1993
• Maria Valtorta, The End Times, Editions Paulines 1994
• Maria Valtorta, Lessons on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans, Centro Editoriale Valtortiano 2007
• Maria Valtorta, The Poem of the Man God Vol 1-5, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl, 1986
• Maria Valtorta, Note books 1943,1944,1945-1950, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl. 1985
• Rev. Don Stefano Gobbi, To The Priests, Our lady’s Beloved Sons, The Marian Movement of Priests 1998
• Rev. Gabriel M. Roschini, O.S.M., The Virgin Mary in the Writings of Maria Valtorta, Kolbe’s Publications Inc. (Canada) and Centro Editorials Valtortiano Srl. (Italy) 1989, 1990
• Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, Now is the Time for Mercy, Marian Press 2005
• Rev. J.L. Menezes, The Life and Religion of Mohammed, Roman Catholic Books, Harrison, NY. 1912
• Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, Now is the Time for Mercy, Marian Press 2005
• Roy H. Schoeman, Salvation is from The Jews, Roy Schoeman 2003
• Saint Louis-Marie Grignion DeMontfort, *True Devotion To Mary*, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc. 1985
• Saint Maria Faustina, *Divine Mercy in My Soul Diary*, Congregation of Marians 1987

Reference Web-Sites
www.tlig.org True Life in God, Vassula Ryden
www.thedivinemercy.org Divine Mercy HQ
www.mmp-usa.net Marian Movement of Priest USA HQ
www.fathercorapi.com Father John Corapi SOLT Catholic teachings/letters
www.christinagallagher.org Christine Gallagher messages
www.medjugorje.com Medjugorje activity center and messages
www.vatican.va Vatican web-site for Catholic information
www.michaeljournal.org Michael published news letters - signs of the times
www.garabandal.org End time secrets will be revealed in Garabandal
www.circleofprayer.com God the Father Devotions
www.divinewill.org Lucia Piccarreta Divine Will messages and teachings
www.johnleary.com Warnings and Prophecies
www.thewarningsecondcoming.com Maria Divine Mercy
www.wordsfromjesus.com Jennifer
http://en.bertha-dudde.org The Word of God
www.littlepebble.org Little Pobble
www.conchiglia.us/UK/UK_C_lettere/UK_Conchiglia_VATICANO.htm Conchiglia
www.revelacionesmariantas.com/english.htm Revelaciones Marianas
www.jesusmariasite.org Lily of the Holy Face of Jesus Giglio del Santo Voito

Reference DVD Movies
Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed - hosted by Ben Stein
The Passion of the Christ by Mel Gibson
The Universe -The History Channel - Secrets of the Sun, Mars the red planet, The end of the earth, Deep space threats, Jupiter the giant planet, The Moon, Spaceship earth, The inner planets, Saturn Alien galaxies, Life and death of a Star, The outer planets, The most dangerous place in the universe, Beyond the Big Bang
BBC presentation: The Planets, Different Worlds & terra Firma, Giants and Moons, Stars & Atmosphere, Life beyond the Sun and Destiny
BBC video Planet Earth & The Blue Planet
How the Earth was Made, Earth and A special Planet, The History Channel presentation
Seven Wonders of the Ancient World Atlantic Productions, London Dist. by Questar, Inc.
Background images were taken from the Hubble telescope
Jesus is speaking: “And I say to you: ‘Take,’ do take this work and ‘do not seal it’ but read it and have it read ‘because the time is close’ and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: ‘Come, Lord Jesus.’

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me.” MV Vol5: 951

JMJ